BIOGRAPHY

MAJOR GENERAL GRENVILLE M. DODGE

FROM 1831 TO 1871.

Written and Compiled by Himself
At Different Times

And

COMPLETED IN 1914.

IN 5 - Typewritten Volume.



Personal Biography of Major General GRENVILLE MELLEN DODGE.

I was born at Danvers, Essex County, Massachusetts, April 12, 1831; son of Sylvanus and Julia Theresa (Phillips) Dodge; grandson of Capt. Solomon and Mary (Dresser) Dodge of Rowley, Mass., and of Nathan and Lydia (Pingree) Phillips also of Rowley Massachusetts.

The house in which I was born was in North Danvers and was owned by Elias Putnam, he living in one part and my father in the other. It was a historical place, nearly two centuries old and originally occupied by the Porters, a distinguished family. The original house was burned but the house I was born in was at least a century old. Elias Putnam was born in the house and had eleven children, two of whom, Arthur and A. A. Putnam were boys of my age and the boyhood acquaintance -a kept up between us until both of them died. A. A. was a celebrated Unitereau Divine and has  $\sim$ been very prominent, active friend of mine during all my life. He has written a great deal about me and I have had a great deal of correspondence with him, all of which was . very beneficial and interesting to me. It was often remarked the they were a distinguished family, furnishing many strong influential men who have scattered all over the country. This neightborhood was afterwards called Putnamville.

Following the Porters, the Putnams occupied this house, many of whom were distinguished people and in 1788 the descendants of these Porters and Putnams moved West. They struck the Ohio River near Pittsburg, following it down and landed and established the town of Marietta.

During my boyhood days, my father lived in Salem, Lynn, Tapleyville, and South Danvers, afterwards known as Peabody.

I attended the common schools and I can remember the names of many of my teachers. Sarah Osgood, Hanah Pedrick, Susan Putnam, Jane De Merritt and Elmer Valentine.

On the paternal side I am ninth in descent from John Dodge of Middlechinnock Parish, South Somerset, England whose will was dated October 15, 1635; eighth in descent from Richard Dodge, who emigrated from England in 1629, with his brother, William, on the "Lion's Whelp", one of the ships of the Plymouth Colony, and settled in Essex County, Mass; seventh in descent from John Dodge (b. 1631 d. in Berkeley, October 11, 1711); sixth in descent from Phinease Dodge (b.May 23, 1688, d. in Wenham, July 19, 1703) Fifth in descent from John Dodge (b. in Wenham, February 25, 1714; drowned in Cape Ann Harbor in 1762) who married Bertha Conant, who died February 26, 1802, at the old Dodge home in Rowley, on the Georgetown road; fourth in descent from Phinease Dodge (b. Sept. 8, 1744; d. February 15, 1824; and third in descent from Solomon Dodge (b. May 3, 1776; d. June 20, 1860) my paternal grandfather. On the maternal side, I am descended from: James Phillips (b. in England about 1700), who subsequently emigrated to American and settled at Ipswich, Mass; James Phillips, son of James of Ipswich (b. February 1729) who resided at Rowley Mass; and Nathan Phillips, third son of James of Rowley (b. February 7, 1768) and of Lydie Pingree of Rowley, my maternal grand parent.

My father (b. 1801 D. 1871) a native of Massachusetts, was a merchant, and, for about ten years, postmaster of South Danvers; my mother (b. 1802 D. 1888) was a native of Massachusetts. My parents were married at New Rowley (now Georgetown,) Mass., in 1827. Grenville Mellen was the second child and second son of a family of four children, three of whom were sons.

My father was a man with much natural talent, a ready talker, an original thinker, generous almost to a fault, filling many positions of honor and trust. My mother was a beautiful woman, brilliant and very quick at repartee; had a very kind heart, very energetic and very tenacious of her opinion, very

active and almost always accomplished whatever she undertook.

My grandfather, Captain Solomers Dodge, was truly a public benefactor, always ready to help the poor and needy and to aid in every charitable work. He was a miller and market man and could truly claim the honor of driving the first market wagon in Salem as all produce had been carried previously in carts and saddle bags.

My great Uncle, William B. Dodge was born at the old home in Rowley and settled in Salem, spending many years in that city, teaching the first colored school, which he established at the commencement of the Anti-slavery movement and continued in that sphere of usefulness until he moved with his family to Illinois, where he founded the town of Avon, in Lake Co., where he became their father, minister, lawyer and judge. At one time in New England, in his native town, the churches were closed against him, as it was considered a descecration to their pulpit to plead the cause of the slave, although every where he was considered a Christian gentaeman of the old Puritanic School of Orthodox, very popular in all his ideas, except in his sympathy for the poor and oppressed.

My early educational opportunities were limited; I worked from the time I was eight years of age; first aiding my father in his business as butcher and afterwards performing similar duties for Mr. Fairfield of South Danvers. From 1846 to 1848, I had charge of the fruit, vegetables and milk on the celebrated farm of Mrs. Edward Lander, which products I marketed in Salem, and occupied my evenings and leisure hours in fitting myself for college.

While at Mrs. Landers, her son, Frederick Landera former cadet at Norwich University and a Civil Engineer, who was engaged in his profession, returned home on a visit. His brother, Charles Lander, who was then purchasing old meeting houses and moving them to Wenham Lake and turning them into was also at home. It is ice houses, Frederick W Lander laid out forthis brother a

short railroad from the Eastern Railroad to the ice houses and in the survey I took part. Frederick W. Lander was a tall, fine built man. I have seen him take a hundred foot steel measuring chain and throw it out its full length without touching the ground, a feat that very few could perform. It was my association with Frederick W. Lander that encouraged me to become a Civil Engineer and also to obtain a military education. During the Civil War, Frederick W. Lander was a Brigadier General and was killed in Battle in West Virginia.

In 1845 and 1846, I aided my father in conducting a book store, and also served as clerk in Lambert and Merrill's Grocery store. During the winter of 1847-8, I attneded the Wurham (.N. H.) Academy, and in September 1848 entered Norwich University of Vermont, a military college, graduating therefrom in 1850, with the degrees of Bachelor of Arts and Civil Engineering. In July 1851, I graduated as civil engineer from Capt. Partridge's military school, taking one season's practical course in the field, and was also graduated in the scientific course at that institution.

At this time, Norwich University was the only military college in the North. There was a similar college in Virginia and while a small college, its history is equal to almost any college in the United States. In the Civil War, it placed in the Armies and Navies, something like six hundred officers of which there were six Major Generals, 9 Brigadier Generals, 14 Brevet Brigadier Generals, 35 Colonels, Lt. Colonels, 34, 24 Majors, 135 Captains making a total of 467. In the Navy, 1 Admiral, 3 Rear Admirals, 6 Commodores, 4 Captains, 4 Commanders, 8 Lts., making a total of 60 officers. It also furnished engineers and prominent officials on the railroads.

While at Norwich University, I boarded with Mrs. Truman B. Ransom, whose husband was a former President of Norwich University and Colonel of the New England Regiment in the Mexican War and was killed while leading that regiment upon the attack upon Chepultepec, Mexico. Her family consisted of three sons, T. E. G., Dunbar R., Eugene and one daughter,

Kate. It was a noted family. T. E. G. Ransom died at the head of the 16th Army Corps, which I commanded during the Atlanta Campaing, he following to the command of it after I was wounded at Atlanta. Dunbar R. distinguished himself in the regular army during the Civil War and the younger son, wassalt. in one of the regiments. The daughter married Major O'Hara, an army officer.

ightharpoonup The Adjutant of the college was S. N. Fifield, who had lost one arm, and who was a very close friend of mine. After my graduation in July from Capt. Partridge's class for field practice, I started west to join the two Ransom Boys who were with their uncle, George W. Gilson in Peru, Illinois, and enroute, I visited S. N. Fifield, at Niagra Falls. They had with them a Miss Woodbury, the niece of Chief Justice Woodbury of New Hampshire. This Miss Woodbury was enroute to visit some relatives in Ohio, and they placed her under my charge, as I was going through Cleveland. After my visit to Niagra, we proceeded to Buffalo, where we took the steamer Bay State for Cleveland. It was a very stormy night. The steamer had a very large number of passengers aboard and when we got out into the lake, her upper works parted in the centre, some two or three feet, causing great consternation; her hull, however, seemed to be perfect and sound and while all the passengers were greatly alarmed, Miss Woodbury was very cool and took matters very sensibly. We were seated in a vis a vis lounge, when a lurch of the ship, slid us across the saloon and it was such a funny incidento that Miss Woodbury laughed over it, so that some of the people nearby heard her and one of them campe up and asked her how she could laugh under such circumstances while everyone else was crying and praying and looking forward to their death. She made answer that she did not know but what, under such circumstances, it was just as sensible to laugh as it was to cry and she thought such things ought to be faced with courage.

Marly in the morning, we arrived off-Cleveland. The gale was still strong and we tried to make the inlet. There

was a break-water at Cleveland that protected the harbor. The vessel seemed to be unable to make it and they put out a boat with a hawser. The boat capsized and the people in it were lost. Finally we made the harbor and I put Miss Woodbury on the cars and whe went to her relatives in Ohio.

ee From Cleveland, I took another steamer and went to Detroit and from there by a strap-rail railroad across Michigan to Michigan City. At Michigan City, I took the steamer Baltimore for Chicago. The boat was loaded with passengers and I was given a mattress on top of the dining table to sleep upon. I did not wake up in the morning until pretty late and found that the Baltimore had sunk at the dock and there was about two feet of water in the cabin. I got on shore as soon as possible and with what little baggage I had, made my way to the canal running from Chicago to La Salle and went aboard of what was called a passenger packet, which was commanded by Captain Wheeler, who afterwards became the Superintendent of the sleeping cars on the Rock Island Railroad. There was a curious crowd aboard this packet and as we passed through Joliet nearly all the passengers were up on deck, shooting at the Bull snakes that lay on the shelving rocks through which the canal had been cut. The shooting was very bad; it was very seldom they hit a snake. Being a pretty good shot myself, I thought I would try my hand and went down into the cabin and got my pistol. At the first shot, I laid out a snake and that my repulation on that boat from there to La Salle. If I remember rightly, we were a day and a night making the trip to La Salle. When I got off of the boat, I found that Peru, the place I was destined for, was and mile below there. I stepped up to Captain Wheeler to ask him how I could get there. He was talking quite excitedly to a man, when another man stepped up and shot the man who was talking to Capt. Wheeler. It did not seem to create much excitement, although a small crowd gathered around. I was anxious to get away from there and got an

omnibus that in those days ran from La Salle to Peru. When I got to Mr. Gilson's office, which was on the levee facing the river, I looked down upon the Illinois River and saw a party pulling a man dressed into soldier's uniform, out of the river. I walked down and looked at him, then went up and went into Mr. Gilson's office. He was at his desk writing. What I had seen in the last hour was so astonishing to me that I spoke to Mr. Gilson about it and said to him that there was a dead soldier being pulled out of the river. He kept on writing and answered, "Is there?" and I wondered to myself what kind of a country I had struck that no one took any interest in a dead man. In my home town, such an incidence

would have called out the whole town.

I joined the two Ransom's boys here at Peru and  $ec{\mathsf{V}}$  started in surveying with Mr. George W. Gilson, who was then a Senator in the State Legislature, a very prominent man in that part of the State and a great friend of Stephen A. Douglas and a land agent and surveyor by profression. He was one of the projectors of the Rock Itland Railroad, a fine man, possessing indomitable perseverance, thoroughly and practically educated, of fine perspective faculties, a fluent speaker, a ready and able debator, with a frank and manly countenance which does not belie him, for hewas whole sould and generous to a fault, was very active and full of business, throwing all his energies into whatever he undertook. With these qualties, Mr. Gilson very naturally exercised a large influence, and hewas one of the principle men, if not the head and main lever of the city, had grown up with it, and had the entire confidence of the people, was well known throughout the State, helds the offices of State Senator, Alderman, City Surveyor, railroad director and land agent, which latter officer occupied much of his attention. Large numbers of the land warrants have already and are being located in this section of the State, and many are located in Iowa. Prairie lands ten miles from here which two years ago were worth from one to three dollars, now readily sell for from five to ten dollars per

in town; now there is comparatively any number completed and many are being built. We went immediately to work surveying lands and lots. One evening when we came home, the prairie was on fire in several places, and a more grand and terrific sight I think I never saw; sweeping over acres like lightning, firs ten miles off looked like a torch light procession its fitful flashes waving backward and forward like a moving mass. At this time of the year, farmers have to keep close watch of their barns and hay stacks so that they may not lose them by prairie fires. When they see one coming, they set a back fire or ployded around their improvements, but they often get caught napping and lose sometimes all their hay and grain, as has been the case of a Mrs. Brown, whose stacks were all burned a short time ago.

Private shin-plaster banks have been rising up like mush-rooms. These are a kind of honorable bank, and those who put them forth consider the same as notes, while the chartered banks are the same as Eastern ones gotten up to issue currency, receive deposits and often failed and cheated their depositors out of their hard earnings. I am sorry to see the Democracy debase their principles for the sake of a little pecuniary aid, but so it is with all. They will sell their honor and party of the petty dollar.

I entered Mr. Wheeler's, of Salem, Mass., engineering party who were on the Illinois Central Railroad and were running a line from La Salle to Dixon. The chief of the party, Wheeler, saw that I could run a transit and immediately gave me the position of transitman in the party, although the only experience I had had was that obtained from the field practise at Norwich University. It was a cold winter and Wheeler, instead of attending to his duty in the field, let me run the line while he stayed in the house that we stopped at working up the notes; inever going into the field to look at the line. I became satisfied that our line would not be accepted by the division engineer, Mr. Blackstone, and had not confidence in my own ability to run

a railroad line, as this was my first experience. I concluded that as soon as we returned to La Salle, I would leave the party. We reached Dixon and returned to La Salle. The party then did some work on the Illinois River Bridge. When that was completed, I went into Mr. Blacksone's office and told him that I was going to leave. He looked atme with astonishment but made no answer that I remember of, and I was paid off and left the party. A few years after, I became well acquainted with Mr. Blackstone. I sold him some land that I had entered for some friends in the East, I think it is the land that the town of Mendota is upon; any how, it was at the crossing of two railroads. Afterwain my official dutues, I often met him and he used to tell this story about my leaving the party. He said that the line I had run was a good one and that he had learned that Wheeler had left me in charge of the party and that he intended when our work was completed to give me charge of the party; that my leaving astonished him and he said it was one case where a young engineer was too previous.

I wrote a letter on the coal and lime rocks of Illinois to Robert Rantoul, who was an attorney for the Illinois Central, and a great friend of my father and who had given me letters to Mr. Mason, Chief Engineer of the Illinois Central Road. The letter is as follows:-

Peru, Ill., November, 1851.

When in Boston, on the eve of my starting for the West, I called at your office with my father, and you expressed a desire for me to write what information I might obtain in relation to the minerals of Illinois, more especially its coal and limestone.

I have gathered some little information upon the subject, partly from my own observations and partly from men engaged in the business and from the more distant parts of the State, from papers, etc. If you should find this of any benefit to you, I shall be amply paid, and what other information I may get in relation to the subject shall be happy to communicate. My own observations do not extend beyond La Salle county but in this county are some of the richest and heaviest deposits of coal in the State, especially along the banks of the Little and Big Vermillion Rivers. These I have examined and can say that their banks are one continuous bed of limestone and coal, the best which is known anywhere in this vicinity. These mines will probably be worked first on account of being accessible with very little expense and of being within a few miles of a good market; viz; La Salle and Peru, which are situated at the head of navigation on the Illinois River and at the terminus of the canal; also this will be the junction of the

ļ ŧ

Central and Rock Island Railroads. The demand for this coal is greater for home consumption than can be supplied, and when they are extensively worke, d which they will be in a short time, the facilities and demand for export will give employment to a large number of laborers and the profitable investment of a great capital.

The central road follows the Vermillion for several miles, passing through some of the richest deposits, hence this will afford a great advantage to these mine as it will save teaming two or three miles. It will also be a source of great profit to the road, but I think the principal part of the coal from this quester intended for the distant cities will be freighted by the river and canal, which form a junction within a few miles of some of the principal beds. The river boats would consume a large amount if they could procure it but there seems to be a scarcity of miners and capitalists to work the mines. Those mines that are now worked pay an enormous profit, as they obtain 6 cts. per basket whereas the cost is nominally save one or two cents. Quite recently the out-crops of the third stratum has been discovered on the canal about one mile above La Salle. This mine will be soon opened on account of its being by means of the canal, easily conveyed to a market. It will also be a great help to the canal, giving it a vast amount of freight, which it has heretofore been entirely destitute of, and this year it will pay 21 per cent on the canal loan besides the real six months interest. This speaks well for the general prosperity of the State and of a speedily restored credit.

Between Coal Creek and Willow there are many rich veins of evcellent bituminous coal and which are being worked at very The State good profit but supply none but a home market. conta ins three distinct coal formations, one above the other at irregular distances. The lowest is the best in quality, the second next and the first the most inferior. In most places where the mines are worked for fuel, the first and second stratum are only worked, the third stratum is only worked at Pekin, near Kingston, and on the bluff near St. Louis, The coal obtained at these places is considered much better than that taken from the first and second stratums and demands a higher price. Thus far coal has been obtained by drifting, excepting at Kingston, Pekin and near St. Louis, where it is made a regular business of and a few shafts have been sunk. Farmers who have found coal beds on their land have obtained it by drifting where they did not have to dig very depp, and there is every reason to believe that the third stratum of Illinois coal will equal in quality the Erie when mining shall be carried on by sinking of shafts at a distance from the outcrops, which has not been done yet, and the out-crops are not fair samples.

The whole state is underlaid by these formations- at some points they approach nearer the surface than others. Some 50 miles south of Chicago, the first croppings are found and from that point to Cairo, the entire country between the Wabash and Mississippi will yaeld any amount of coal with more or less expense of mining and it is evident that this must be the State's most profitable mineral, though rich in lead, iron and fine ores. The coal diggings are comparatively dry, of course, agreat benefit will arise because the deepest are the best, and as they can and will be worked deeper, they will furnish a coal as good and ere long better than the Pennsylvania coal.

Adjoining the great unworked deposits which stretches across our State from Central Iowa to Northern Kentucky, manufacturing cities will rise as if by magic as busy perhaps as Pittsburg and as smoky, and coal more andmore valuable for manufacturing purposes, for solidity, density and heat-giving will be brought up as the progress of our north-wester manufacturing towns make a demand for it turing towns make a demand for it.

This state will generally be depended uponto her coal beds for fuel, especially the northern part of it, which is scarcely wooded, except along the banks of the creeks and rivers;

and bottom wood is generally poor, seldom worked into lumber, and never used for fuel when it can be avoided. We are dependent upon Michigan and Wisconsin forests for our lumber, which brings about \$20 a thousand, and I suppose they will furnish an inexhaustible supply. The southern part of the State has a better supply of timber, especially along the banks of the Wabash, yet they use coal when it can be easily procured.

The Limestone of the State I will speak of in another letter,

having taken up all my sheet in speaking of the coal."

After leaving the Illinois Central, I went back to Mr. Gilson and spent part of the next summer in surveying and working upon one of his farms on the south side of the Illinois River. [I saw a great opportunity in entering Government land and wrote home urging my father to obtain money for this purpose. I entered for myself and others, several pieces that were sold soon afterwards at a great profit. 7

There had been numerous rumors of projects to build a railroad from Chicago to the Illinois River at Peru and the following letter gives my views on the matter:-

Sept. 14, 1851.

My dear Father:-

I closed my last letter with saying there was good news from New York, that it has been saluted. A telegraphic despatch was received here, with the important intelligence that the Rock Island railroad, two hundred miles long-separate from the Great Illinois Central was to build, and that it had been contracted to Messrs. Farnam and Sheffield. So you perceive we shall have plenty of railroads to build, for a short time. The Illinois Central engineers and directors are now in New York, letting out contracts on that road, consequently all the parties connected with it are now lying still, but the Rock Island folks will beging operations immediately.

Peru is situated a hundred miles from Chicago and three hundred miles from St. Louis at the head of the Illinois River and at the terminus of the Illinois and the Michigan Canal. The principal part of the town is located on a bluff, 148 feet above the river. The forwarding and river trade is done under the bluff at the levee, which is very handy to the city. The present population of the place is put down at two thousand and it is rapidly increasing; the Yankees and New Yorkers are actually flocking in here. This is bound to be a great city and when the various railroads under contract and contemplation shall be completed, it will be the center of this part of the state giving dire ct communication by the Rock Island road with Iowa and Oregon, for this is the true Pacific road and will be built soon to Council Bluffs, where a road from St. Louis will mett it, then from Council Bluffs to San Francisco, this being the shortest and most feasible route. In the eastern direction the road connects at Chicago with the Michigan Southernroad which is neCarly completed and will give us a through railroad to New York and Boston, Illinois Central railroad starting from this place, branches to Chicago and Galena, and runs south, passing through the entire length of the State through a part of Kentucky and Tennessee and the length of Alabama terminating on the Gulf at the head of Mobile Bay. Thus you see that Illinois will be the center of the United States and part of Mexico. There are other railroads being built which I am not so well posted upon. The Illinois River runs through a rich and fertile country, is bounded on both sides by Bluffs a hundred or more feet hing, leaving, however, a sufficient interval on the brink of the river for all necessary purposes. These bluffs are one continuous bed of coal and limestone which from appearances can never be exhausted. Back of the bluffs are the prairies of vast extent, perfectly level, well wooded and watered and as rich and productive and more lasting than gold mines. They are fast being settled and the day is not far distant when instead of the hum of the grouse and the silent footsteps of the der, will be head the din of cities, towns and villages. An excellent road is being built back in the country for a hundred or more miles, making this a depot for a great amount of grain and other farm produce. In good weather one can now scarce get through the principle business streets they are so full of country teams. The river at the same time is filled with steamers and canal boats receiving the products of the prairie a hundred miles around and the noise and chatter of the market men and produce dealers reminds me of Commercial Street Boston.

The lead mines of Galena, the copper of Wisconsin, the grain

The lead mines of Galena, the copper of Wisconsin, the grain of Iowa, the furs of the western territory, the sugar, rice and cotton of the south, the manufacturies of the east, the gold of California and the pure bohea from China will soon be seen passing north, south, east and wes t from the Grand central receiving and forwarding depot, Illinois! They are only projects but they are sure to be accomplished and when those already laid out shall be completed and in operation, Illinois will rank among the first states of the Union."

During my work with Mr. Gilson, I became acquainted with Mr. Samuel Robbins, also an engineer. He was a man over six feet tall, very finely built and very fond of athletic sports. Some years afterwards, he served under me as Assistant Engineer and in the Indian Campaign as a Lieutenant in the 1st Colorado Cavalry.

I was a fine boxer and fencer. These two sports had been taught us at the University. I used to practise with him when I had an opportunity. We would either fence or box. As long as I could keep out of his reach, I could defeat him, as he was not as expert as I, but when he could reach me, he was so much stronger, that he could out-box me, but could not out-fence me.

While at Peru, the two Ransoms and myself organized an Artillery Company, obtained two guns and the equipment and had a well drilled section of artillery. (At a riot at Vermillionville, we were called out and went there. Dunbar R. Ransom was our Captain. He planted the guns where the men were congregated and gave them so many minutes to surrender and they came down without further opposition. This was the only service we performed while I was with the company.

Mr. Robbins left us and went to work under Mr. Peter A.

Dey on the Rock Island Railroad at Tiskilwa and an the fall of 1852, Mr. Dey gave me a position in Robbans' party on contruction on the Rock Island railroad from Tiskilwa to Sheffield, where I remained until March 1853, when Mr. Dey asked me if I could organize a surveying party and ration it. I said "Yes" and when

I had gottem the party together, I asked him whom I should turn it over to. Mr. Dey looked at me with some astonishment and asked me if I did not think I could run the party and I said I thought I could, at least would be very glad to try. I made the surveys and location of the railroad from Bureau Valley Junction to Peoria, Illinois. Upon completing that survey. Messrs. Farnam and Sheffield, who were the contractors building the Rock Island Railroad, organized the Mississippi & Missouri Railroad for the purpose of extending the Rock Island across the State of Iowa. Mr. Peter A. Dey was made Chief Engineer of the road and took me with him to Iowa as his principle assistant. We crossed the Mississippi river at Rock Island on May 17, 1853 and commenced our survey. / The location of the bridge across the Mississippi River determined the point where we should commence and the topography of the country was such that the line I laid passed immediately through the premises of Antoine LeClare, a very noted citizen of Davenport, who had been engaged in the Indian trade of that country for many years. He was greatly disturbed to see a railroad line passing through his orcaprd. His residence was on the side hill and he called me up there and protested very strongly and tried to get me to change my line. He argued the question with me and offered every inducement, except money, to have me try to find another route, but I told him the location of the bridge controlled the line through Davenport and that he had better make arrangements to move. He appealed over my head to Mr. Dey, but Mr. Dey only sustained the location. | We ran the first preliminary line crossing the Cedar River at Moscow and reached Iowa City on May 26, distance, 54 miles. On this survey, I became acquainted with John F. Dillon, who was then studying law with John P. Cook of the firm of Cook % Sargeht and he was sent out by them to obtain the right of way on my line. During the running and location of the line, we had to make a good many trial lines, and we obtained right of way on more than one line in order to bring them in competition. One of the settlers had told me that Mr. Dill on criticized my line very much, which, being a young engineer, I took great exception to and I wrote Cook & Sargent that they had better have Dillon tend to his duty of right

of way agent and I would tend to the location of the line. Mr. Dillon was notified of this and he immediately wrote me a letter in which he insisted that he had attended strictly to his duties, and I acknowledge it and from that time on, we became great friends. He became not only a distinguished lawyer but a distinguished judge and at the present time, 1911, is one of the most noted lawyers in New York City, and one of my valued friends.

On August 13, 1853, Mr. Henry W. Farnam sent for me to go to Chicago, and on arriving there I found he wanted me to make a recon noissance through from Milwaukee to Galena, Illinois, for a railroad line. On August 15th, I started for Milwauke and traveled across the country passing along the Lakes, through Madison, Dodgeville, Mineral Point to Galena. When I reached Dodgeville or Mineral Point, I don't remember which, I stopped at a hotel. The arrival of an engineer making a reconnoissance, in that day, was a notable event and all the people knew it. Senator Henry W. Dodge, who lived at that place, heard of my being there and called upon me. It was the first time I had ever met him. I really did not know anything about him although he was of the same name and of the same branch of the family. After reaching Galena, I went to Dubuque and returned to Iowa City, passing through Cedar Rapids, and reached Iowa City on the 20th of August. On September 2, 1884, on Le Claire's ground in Davenport, we broke the first ground for the Mississippi & Missouri railroad?)

On September 4, 1853, I started the line west of Iowa City to the Missouri River. The names of the men composing my party were as follows: J. E. House, Transitman, George House, Leveller, Carpenter, Daily, Irish, Wilson, Dunham Drake, Thompson, Edwards, 2 waqons Stephenson, Sinew, and Perrin, Six horses and 2 dogs. We ran up Old Man's Creek at the head of which was a well-to-do farmer by the name of Williamson, who had a large family, three or four daughters, one of whom afterwards married my leveler, George House and who is living today in that vicinity on a farm.

I crossed from the head of Old Man's Creek into the Iowa Valley passing through Marengo, following up Bear Creek to its head, crossing the divide where Grinnell now stands, and dropped into the

Skunk Valley, following it out, passing through Newton. I continued West and run down Four-mile Creek into the Des Moines Valley and . reached Des Moines, then a very small place. I selected forty acres of land for the depot grounds, just where the present station of the Rock Island stands. Thiry acres of the land werd afterwards released leaving only ten acres for the road and that ten acres was in a large corn field. From Des Moines we ran the line up on the north side of Raccoon River for 12 miles to Daniel Boone's (a relative of the Kentucky Boones.). The long summer's work in the field and in the rank vegetation, had given many of my party the fever and ague and I was short chands. As we ran up to Boone's place, October, 6, 1853, a young, robust boy, Wiley Lane, about sixteen years of age, was watching our surveying and seemed to be taking quite an interest in it, and I asked him how he would like to join the party? He said he would if his mother was willing, and, being anxious to have his services, I went to see his mother and she consented to his going and he joined the party and was a very valuable man. He was a strong axeman, well up in all woodcraft and a bee-hunter. He could follow a bee to the tree its hive was in and kept us in honey all the way to the Missouri River. He was with use two or three years and lives now, 1911, some four or five miles west of Des Moines. While camped at Boone's house, I went out early one morning to look the line ahead. Right at Boone's house, the river cuts a steep bluff and Boone had built a log foot-path around this bluff. It was just about day-light when I started out, and as I stepped on to the log, to walk around the bluff, coming down the path, about half way down, was a panther. I always carried my rifle with me to obtain game for the party. I hesitated, not knowing what to do. The animal looked at me so savage like that I was sure if I turned around he would come after me. I therefore drew near him and fired and he fell over into the creek. The boys in the camo, hearing the shot, ran out and pulled the panther out of the river.

We followed up the Coon to the mouth of Beaver and up the Beaver to its head, crossed the head of Middle and Troublesome Rivers and passed on to the East Nishnabotna, which we crossed some miles north of where Exira now stands. From here we rose out of

Botna and struck the head of Indian Creek, followed it down to the forks and up the West fork, crossing the divide between it and the West Nishnabotna at Cuppy's Grove. The party was encamped at Indian Grove on Indian Creek. They were out of meat, and as I rode up towards Cuppy's Grove, I was looking for a deer. I thought I saw one in the brush on the outskirts of the timber and drew my rifle to shoot, when a man rose up out of the brush with a rifte in his hand and a read bandanna handkerchief on his head. He said, "For God's sake, don't shoot me." I was as much surprised as he was. He was Ad Cuppy. He had just settled in the grove. The only other party in the grove was a Methodist Preacher by the name of Johnson. I found that Cuppy was pretty well acquainted with that country and utilized his information. We pushed on the line to the West Botna and camped there.

Mr. Peter A. Dey, the chief engineer, had started out with a young man by the name of Bacon, a grandate of Yale, the son of the Rev. Dr. Bacon, a celebrated Divine, and they had driven to Indian Creek, following our trail. They had a team and a box wagon and had provisions and mail for us. They had a good deal of trouble crossing the streams, there being no bridges, and Mr. Dey not finding us where he expected, we having made much greater progress than he had counted upon, took the horses out of his wagon at once of the crossings of the Creek, put the blankets upon them and he and Bacon rode them, reaching the forks of the Indian Creek, where they camped over night at our old camp. Bacon, not being used to riding a horse, was very sore and lame in the morning and did not feel like coming on with Mr. Dey, who was anxious to reach our camp. Mr. Dey gave him instructions to be sure to follow the wagon tracks or the stakes of our line. Mr. Dey reached our camp on November 6th. I wasout ahead of the party reconnoitering for the proper place to run the line and did not return to the camp until evening. I found Mr. Dey very much worried because Bacon had not reported and I told him that as soon as I got my supper, I would ride back to Indian Creek to find him. I rode back during the evening and at every ravine and at every crossing of the stream, I hollowed at the top of my voice for him and just as I reached

Indian Creek, I struck a band of Otos Indians who had been south into Missouri stealing hogs and they had their ponies loaded with the meat and were making north to their country as fast as possible. was greatly frightened when I met them and they were also frightened because they thought I was a Missourian after them and we both got Creek
I went on to the Indian, Grove but found or heard nothing of Bacon. I was convinced then that he was lost and that we must got into a systematic search for him. I went back to my camp, divided up my party in severl small parties and placed them on the streams and on the divides between Indian creek and the Nishnabotna with instructions to follow them south and not to leave them, and as soon as they found Bacon to put out a signal in the shapre of a fire, making a smoke, on some high point. The second day out, I found Bacon's horse. Instead of going directly West as he should have done, he followed down Indian Creek. The Creek being miry, he was unable to get his horse across and so he tied him to some bushes and crossed the river himself and kept on south and the 3rd day Mr. Thompson, one of our teamsters, discovered him some twenty miles south of our line traveling in the prairie and staggering. When we rode up to him, he gave him something to eat and drink and as soon as Bacon came to, so he could talk, he said, "Are you Thompson" and when Thompson said he was, Bacon pulled a watch out of his pocket and gave it to him. It appears that Thompson, when we left Iowa City, had left his watch to be reparied and Mr. Dey was to bring it out. Mr. Dey had given it to Bacon and it shows that this duty of delivering the watch was on Bacon's mind all the time. They took Bacon back to the Indian Grove. There had been a kettle of rice turned out there, the boys in cooking it having burned it, but it had not been touched. Bacon had not had anything to eat for three days and nights. When he came back to the grove, I asked him where he had slept the first night out and I found it was very near the place where I had passed in going to the Indian Grove and I asked him if he did not hear me hollowing. He said he had heard a noise and could not tell whether it was a man's voice or an animals and did not answer because he did not think it was possible for anyone

to be out there that time of night. While we were sitting in the grove, I told one of the boys to take my horse down to the river for a drink. This horse's name was Commissary, he having been ridden by the Commissary of the Northern Boundary Commission. Bacon brightened up and said, "That is a good name for a horse that came after a starving man." I also asked Bacon why he did not follow the trail we had made as instructed by Mr. Dey and he said that he did not think it was necessary as he thought he could find our camp. Bacon was a correspondent of the New York Tribune and gave in that paper tic account of his experience. He said that in the night when he was sleeping, he always dreamed of a long table filled with all the best eatables but that it was impossible for him to reach them. He stayed with us during the survey. We lost him again in the Missouri River Valley but he evidently was not fitted for that kind of work and he returned to the East and became a noted lawyer, settled in Rochester, and I think is now dead.

The next day Mr. Dey and myself rode out towards the head of Pigeon Creek. We visited a camp of the Otoe's who had just returned from a fight with the Sioux. We rode on to the head of Pawnee Creek and on November 17th moved our camp to Pigeon Creek near a deserted Mormon house. Continusing our survey down the Pigeon, we struck the Missouri Valley and run down that valley making a connection with ""winter quarters" coossing the Missouri river at what is now known as Florence. November 22, 1863, we reached Kanesville, its > name just having been changed to Council Bluffs. We were very coridally received by the citizens. They were greatly pleased at the possibility of a railroad coming to them and ours being the first survey made considerable excitement in the place. They entertained us by giving us a ball. On December 1st, an engineering party under the supervision of Col. S. R. Curtis arrived in the Bluffs making a survey for the road known as the Lyons Air line which started at the Mississippi River at Lyons and crossed the State. Instead of following the streams to the Missouri River valley, they ran straight across the Bluffs, an impossible line.

Sp

Ton December 3rd, the Air-line interests held a publis meeting

in the Bluffs, which was largely attended by the citizens. Judge S. R. Riddle, Col. S. R. Curtis and Mr. Peter A. Dey spoke.

While at the Bluffs, I stopped at a hotel known as the Robinson House located near where the Ogden now stands. When I came out from my breakfast, Mr. G. A. Robinson, who was the proprietor of the house, stepped from behind the counter and took the hat off of a man's head, and stepping back put it on a shelf behind the counter. The man objected and wanted to know what that was done for and Robinson replied that he could have his hat when he paid for his breakfast. This was a new way to force a payment of a debt. was anxious to obtain one of the mountain breed, ponies and Robinson told me that they had one that had just come in from the plains; that he had the distempher but thought he was a fine pony. I looked at the pony. He was very large for a pony and I bought him paying \$50. He became a very valuable horse. I rode him for several years, crossing the State and plains with him many times. He was a horse of good speed and great endurance, sure footed and his name was Rocky Mountains.

While we were camped here, Mr. Dey received instructions to examine the country between the Missouri Rirver and the Platte Valley to determine at what point on the Missouri River a railroad coming from the East should strike the river, with a view of connecting with a Pacific Railroad that would run up the Platte Valley. We crossed the River where the town of Omaha now stands and taking Saddle Creek, we run up that Creek until we reached the Divide. We followed the divide north-west making towards the Platte Valley. Mr. Dey remained with the party and I rode on to examine the country for some twenty-five miles west, reaching the Elkhorn Valley about noon of the next day. I had been up most of the night before and was very tired. I rode into a ravine opening out on to the Elkhorn River and lariated my horse, took his saddle off, placed my rifle under it and laid down for a rest and soon fell asleep. 'I was awakened by the neighing of the horse and I lookedout toward the mouth of the ravine and saw an Indian leading my horse towards the Elkhorn River. I was greatly fightened and hardly knew what to do but I grabbed my rifle and started after the Indian hollering at

the top of my voice. The horse was evidently frightened at the Indian and was pulling back, the Indian urging him along as rapidly as possible. The Indian saw that I was gaining on him and dropped the horse and ran to the river and swam across. I was greatly pleased to obtain the horse and immediately saddled up and started towards my party. This Indian afterwards was an enlisted man in an Indian Battalion, commanded by Major North, which I raised in the spring of 1865 during the Indian campaign and he told Major North that the reason he dropped my horse was because I hollered so that it scared him.

I found my party camped on the Big Pappillion Creek at the Mormon crossing and the camp full of Indians—the cook feeding them. I immediately saw that if this was not stopped, they would soon eat up all our provisions and I told the party that we must get the Indians out of camp and for them to get their arms. The only Indian word I knew was "Puckachee" which means get out and I said this to them very firmly. They did not seem disposed to obey at first but they saw that I was in earnest and left. I found that they had interfered with the survey, robbing the wagons and stealing anything they could put their hands on. They did not seem disposed to hurt anyone. Indianant camp except them for the survey and party for the same alternative and throughout the first party and the survey and party for the same alternative and throughout any after years after a same alternative and throughout any after years after a same a same after a same after a same a same after a same a same a same after a same a same a same a same and a same a sam

After running our line through to the Elkhorn, down Valnut Creek, twhich afterwards was my father's farm, the party returned to Ciuncil Bluffs. Mr. Dey and myself rode down the Pappillion Creek to PeterA Bellevue, which was then a Mission, and where Sarpey had his trading post and which was the winter quarters of the Omaha Indians. We crossed the river at Bellevue and joined the party at Council Bluffs. We returned to Iowa City and spent the winter making examinations west of Iowa City up Clear Creek and other Creeks.

On February 13, 1854, my father arrived at Iowa City with Mr. S.N.Fifield. He had come out to go to Nebraska for the purpose of mak ingsclaims. They bought a team at Iowa City, paying \$250 for it, and travelled acrossthe State crossing the Missouri River and made claims near where the town of Calhoun is now located, then returned to the East. During the spring and summer of 1854, I finished the location of the Mississipi & Missouri Py. to Des Moines arriving time from April 19, 1854. The distance to the Missovriver was 178. miles from

Des Moines to Iowa City was 119.3 miles and the distance from Iowa City to Davenport was 1254 miles, Davenport to Conneil Bluffs 322.6 miles.

On returning to lowa City from this survey, I obtained a leave of absence and returned East to visit my father and mother in Peabody, Massachusetts and while there, on May 28th, was married to Annie Brown of Peru, Illinois, at Salem, Mass, by the Rev. Ellis, a Universalist Minister.

On June 1st, I visited Norwich University in Vermont and met there Dunbar R. Ransom. I stopped at Mrs. Ransoms. Saw the cadets drill and attended one of their dances. I returned to Iowa City by the way of New York, by the Hudson River and Lake Shore Railroads arriving at Peru, Illinois, on June 27th, and Iowa City on July 16th

During the month of July, 1864, Mr. Frederick W. Lander whom I knew as a boy and who had been on Lieut. Steven's Government survey for a Pacific Railroad from Minneapolis to Po tland, Oregon, had returned by the way of the Snake and Platte rivers and reported that route as far superior to the one that was run by Stevens and which we afterwards found to be correct.

On August 26, 1854, Mr. J. B. Grinnell arrived at Iowa City from the Fast. He came out for the purpose of locating a colony and had letters from Mr. Henry Farnam to Mr. Dey. Mr. Dey turned him over to me and I recommended him to go to the divide between the Iowa River and the Skunk where the town of Grinnell now stands. In my survey, I had left a tall flag pole with a flag upon it on this summit and marked the place definitely as a controlling point in our survey. This country through there was then unsettled and was mostly school lands. I gave Mr. Grinnell maps of that country and he went out there and was well pleased and located his colony, settling up nearly all those school lands. He started the Grinnell College and afterwards became member of Congress from that district. We were always warm friends and the longer he lived, the more he approved of the location of th town.

The panic of 1854 stopped all ra lroading in Iowaand all our engineering parties were discharged. Mr. Fifield and his wife, Celeste arrived in Iowa City on Sept. 15th. My brother, who had been out in the engineerin party was discharged with the

rest and returned to the East. (I had made up my mind that I would settle on the Missouri River at Council Bluffs or in Nebraska and

Grinnes of the state of the sta

Fifield had come to Iowa City to accompany me across the State to go to our claims in Nebraska. I fitted up a camping outfit to use as we crossed the State and we pitched our camp on the Iowa River.

Mr. Peter A. Dey sent two bottles of champaigne to the camp. Mr.

Dey came down and Mr. Fifield and his wife and myself and wife had a jolly party, with Mr. Dey dividing his champaign. I was receiving at this time considerable money and land warrants from the East to enter land and as I moved across the State, I examined the lands along our line pretty thoroughly, selecting the most favorable for future entry. We reached Council Bluffs on November 11th, 1854, and on November 13th, I moved into a little brick house, formerly used as a land office.

On November 20th, we crossed the Missouri River. The ice was running heavy. We went up to winter quarters, now Florence and to Ft. Calhoun, where my father and Mr. Fifield had made their claims. We found that both the claims had been jumped. I then made up my mind to go to the Elkhorn River and make claims there. I crossed the country from the Missouri River to the Elkhorn and made claims for Fifield, my father, my brother and myself, all of which we afterwards entered. They were located just north of the ferry crossing and where the military road was afterwards built on the Elkhon, and near the railroad line run by me the year before.

No December 7th, Mr. Hadley from Salem, Mass. arrived and we also made a claim for him. On December 10th, I started for Bellevue of and met the Omaha Indians coming in from a battle with the Pawnees. The Pawnees had killed two Omaha squaws. I crossed the river at Bellevue and went to Council Bluffs. I soon returned to the Elkhorn with supplies. We were engaged all winter in building our cabins. There had a settlement come out from Quincy, Illinois, settled north of us on the Elkhorn and called their town Fontanelle. They had an organization and at the election we all went up there and voted. I remember I voted for Mr. Hollister as Delegate to Congress. We spent the entire winter in building houses for myself and Fifield.

On January 24, 1855, the bill passed the Legislature at Omaha making Omaha the capital.

On February 1, 1855, I moved my household goods and family out to the Elkhorn River. Mrs. Fifield also moved out. The settlers called a meeting as soon as our wives arrived and voted to give each a claim of 320 acres.

I had to return to Council Bluffs in February by request of the Railroad company and sounded the Missouri River from Florence to Bellevue. II spent the time while at the Elkhorn running out claims, reconnoissances for the railroad and obtaining what information I could of the country from the Missouri River to the Pacific Ocean. From this information I made a map of the country, basing it upon the maps made by Fremont, Warren and others who had explored it and from the information I had obtained from the Mormons and emigrants. I gave an itinerary on it showing each camping place all the way through to California, giving the fords, where water and wood could be found, etc. This map was published by the citizens of Council Bluffs for the purpose of controlling emigration and as it was the first map of the country giving such information, it had a great influence in concentrating a large portion of the Oregon and California emigration at Council Bluffs. When gold was discovered at Denver, Mr. Crofutt, whom I knew, took this map and cut it in two on a meridian running through Denver and changed the route of the emigration so as to turn it through Denver by way of the South Platte instead of by the North Platte as shown by the original map. Mr. Crofutt sent me the half of the map that he had used and I have it framed and hanging in my office.

On March 25th, I went out to Loup Fork at the Ferry crossing and laid out the town of Pawnee, afterwards known as Columbus. I had with me Messrs. Oakes, Shinn, Burch, Woolword, and Reynolds. At the crossing of one of the streams this side of the Loop Fork, the Indians followed the example of the emigrants who built bridges over small streams and charged toll for crossing. When we reached there, a band of Pawnee Indians who had taken charge of one of these bridges, demanded toll of us. The chief came up to Shinn who was driving the leading wagon and told him he was a big chief and that they could not cross until they paid. Shinn got out of the wagon, struck his breast with his hand and told him that he was also a big

The may

ratio

On Sunday, May 6, 1855, two Pawnee Indians called at our cabins and crossed the ferry to their village on the Platte River and reported that we were hiding some Indians in our cabin. The Pawnees made up a war party of about 50 braves, painted and decked out with feathers, mounted on ponies, with guns and bows and arrows, and led by a chief, crossed the valley, fording the Elkhorn River above Walnut Creek, came rushing down the road toward our cabin. It was soon after dinner and the men were still about the cabin. At the cabin were my father, wife, brother, a man by the name of Buxton and Jim Ellis, a man who had lived on the frontier many years and was familiar with the Indians. One hf the men saw them coming and gave the alarm. We all armed ourselves and went outside of the door to meet them at the threshold. We could not imagine what was up. As they drew near, they increased the speed of their ponies and their appearance with painted faces and weapons of

war made us think that possibly our last day had come. The chief's pony outran the others and he drew up and dismounted at our feet and made past us to enter the cabin shouting "Ponca." Ellis answered him in his own language saying there was no Ponca: Others came up and soon our cabin was surrounded and they crowded into it and looked into the cellar and up on the loft, we standing in wonderment as to what it all meant. In a few moments, the chief mounted his pony and followed by a few of the young bucks, dashed on down the valley to Mr. Fifield's cabin. Mrs. Fifield sat along in the room with window and door open, her husband being away. The chief entered the room through the open window and stood before her in his war costume. She with coolness and bravery asked him why he did not come in at the door instead of the window. He, finding that he had not frightened her, walked out the open door and in an hour or two, this war party who hoped to frighten us returned to their village without accomplishing their purpose. A few days after this, when Fifield and myself were absent, about 40 Indians came over from the Pawnee Village to steal and they found there only Mrs. Dodge and my brother and they over ran them and went in and out of the cabin at pleasure and were very saucy. When I returned, the Indians had not yet crossed the river. I went down

or horse-whipped.

All this summer the Indians committed great depredations on the settlers up and down the Elkhorn, dr ving many of them away. There was also a very large emigration crossing the Elkhron in sight of our cabins on their way to California and Oregon and the Indians preyed upon them, stealing their cattle and occasionally killing some one of the

anything else because they considered it a great disgrace to be struck

and told them that if they came overand were saucy again, I would horse-whip them. I knew that would have more effect on them than

emigrants.

chief and forced the Indian to let us cross without paying.

I returned to the Elkhorn and on April 7th, my father and brother, and a man by the name of Burton arrived from Massachusetts.

The Pawnees village was directly across the Platte from our house in a S. W. direction about 12 miles away. Some of the Indians had come to visit us during the winter and had become quite friendly. On April 24th, Fifield and myself visited the village and found Ish-got-up, the chief of the Pawnees very sick. Fifield who had studied medicine said that the chief could not live but he could give him medicine that would relieve him. Pawnee Joe returned with us to the Elkhorn and Fifield fixed up a bottle of medicine for the Indian chief which instructions how to take it and sent it back by Joe.

The Pawnees and Poncos were at war and both of themcommitting great depredations on the other. On May 7th, a band of Pawnees came in their war paint to our cabins hunting the Poncoes. They said we had hid them in our cabins, but I knew them so well that I knew they were on a stealing expedition. They rushed into the house, up to the garret and down again. My hor ses were lariated in the valley and while I watched the house, I sent Buxston to get the horses. He was not used to the Indians and was very much frightened. They pulled off his overalls and necktie. When he came back I asked him what had become of them. He said he did not know. He was so frightened that he did not know the Indians had taken them. From ou house, the Indians rushed down to Fifield's but he met them at the door, with his rile and drove them off. My account of their waitling at the time as follows: United the first the content of the came for the content of the content of the content of the came at the time as follows: United the content of the content o

On the evening of May 9th, the Pawnees came to the house and said that Ish-got-up was very sick and wanted us to come over. We promised him we would come over in the morning. A day or two before this, Mr. Clark, formerly a resident of the Bluffs, at that time keeping a livery stable in Omaha, came out with a wagon load of supplies, trinkets, etc. to trade with the Indians. He was stopping at our cabin waiting for an opportunity to go to the village with someone who has been acquainted with the tribe. In the morning, Fifield, Mr. Clark and myself went over to the village. Fifield was not feeling very well, and the water in

the river was very cold, so he remained on the north side of the river taking care of Clabk's team, while Clark and myself crossed to the village. In crossing, I met some of the Pawnees and I saw by their looks there was something wrong. They did not speak to me as they had before. I told Clark that something was up. When I got to the village, I found that Ish-got-up was dead. went into the council house where he was lying, and all the squaws were in it, yelling and tearing their hair, a terrible scene, and I could tell from the looks of all that they had in their mind that the medicine Fifield had sent over had killed Vsh-got-up; however, I said nothing but stayed around there for about half an hour, when I said to Clark that we would return, but when I started, one of the sub-schiefs touched me on the shoulder and told me to go with him. I told Clark he had better return to Fifield but he said, "No I will stay by you". I cautioned him about using his arms or doing anything; that the Indians were evidently suspicious and undecided what to do. They took me into a lodge where the chiefs were assembled, I should say fifteen or twenty of them. I noticed that they did not pass the pipe of peace. They brought in the bottle of medicine and I was asked to take of it, which I did, knowing that it was harmless. They then discussed the question for fully an hour. I could tell from their discussion and acts that I had some friends among them, but what the result would be I did not know. I was very anxious; in fact, any person having Indians holding a council over them would have the cold sweat stand out upon them as it did on me, but I kept quiet and cool and finally one of the Indians came up to me and told me to leave and I put the river between them and me very quickly. Afterwards these Indians were enlisted in a battalion of Pawness which I raised in January 1865 at the beginning of the Indian campaign. Major North was their . commander and when any of them wanted any favor of me, he calimed he was the one who saved my life. This battalion served with me not only during the Indian war but all the time I was building the Union Pacific and were of great service to me. They got a great many favors, individually, from me for what they all claimed to have done for me in the council.

Pawnee Joe was at our house a great deal and was always friendly and I have no doubt he used his influence in my behalf, but this taught me a lesson; I never gave Indians any medicine after that time.

Ton June 1st, I went into Council Bluffs, hired a log house on Hyde Street of Mrs. Avery, located just north of where the Methodist Church now stands and on June 5th moved into it. On June 7th, there was born there my first daughter, Lettie. Dr. Honn was the physician. On June 17th, I moved out again to the Elkhorn.

In July, the Omaha Indians went out to the head of the Loop Fork on a hunting excursion and the Sioux attacked them, cutting off Logan Fontanell, e the chief and a few of the braves who were killed, and on July 24th, the Omahas returned and camped near our cabins, having the dead body of Fontanelle with them. They had one end dragging on the ground the other end him lashed to a tepee pole synd attached to a pony. Dur During this summer the Indians had become very troublesome. They were stealing and saucy. The Pawnees had stolen a good many cattle from the settlers and driven them to their village. One day I drove up the Platte and found that after they had killed the cattle, they had with the horns placed their heads on mounds facing the settlement, which was an act of defiance and I understood it. Most of the settlers whose cattle had been killed, lived in Omaha. They had their claims on the Elkhorn and lived in the city. Among them was Mr. Reeves, who was the Sherriff of Douglas County. He came out with a party of thirty of these settlers on their way to the Pawnee village. They reached our cabins early in the morning and were very anxious to have Fifield and myself accompany them to the village. him they were making a mistake as the Indians were ugly and defied us and if they went over there, they would be killed, but they thought we were cowards and said they were going do have cattle or Fifield crossed them on the ferry. I took my transit and blood. went up on the hill back of my house where I could see the Indian village and watched their movements. The party went on until they reached the Platte River apposite the Indian village, when there rose up about 500 Indians and surrounded them. I could not tell what was being done to them but I was fearful that they would all be killed, but pretty soon I saw them rushing back, as fast as they 7 5

On July 29, 1854, my brother and I took a horse-back ride up the Elkhorn to near the mouth of Bell Creek. The vegetation was nearly as high as our heads when on horseback and when separate a short distance could not see each other.

On the same day some Sioux Indians attacked a family on Bell Creek, just above its mouth and killed one or two men and wounded one woman. Great excitement was prevalent in Omaha on Monday caused by this incident. The next Sunday afternoon, two men belonging to the Quincy Co. and living several miles from Fontanell on Bell Creek, started for the latter place, one of them accompanied by his wife. When within a mile or so of their destination, they heard the report of a gun; thinking it might be some one of the settlers, they went in search of them and when in a deep ravine, were greeted by a band of Indians. They appeared friendly; approached and shook hands. One of the Indians took a hat from one of the white men and put it on his own head. The owner tried to reclaim it bu could not and they started away. The Indian followed and shot them dead. The woman was some yards away and when she saw her husband fall, immediately rushed to the spot. Finding her husband dea d, she started to escape toward Fontanelle. The Indians pursued her and sent a shower of arrows after her, one of which took effect, piercing her through the thigh, but she managed to escape and reached Fontanelle. The Indians scalped their victims and made their escape. This was the first attack made by the Indians and word was sent to Fontanell, a settlement north of Bell Breek and a courier sent to the Governor at Omaha to ask for militia to protect the Elkhorn settlement. We undertook to get the settlers to congregate at our cabin and to make arrangements to defend ourselves but they were so frightened that they were afraid to stay and all moved into Omaha, leaving no one but Fifield and my family in the settlement and we immediately moved into Omaha.

Henry Allen, Royal D. Amy.

Thomas B. Benton, Jr.

John T. Baldwin L. <sup>B</sup>anner

Chas. W. Bryant

Sergeant

Hecht.

Leak.
Lawrence Merkle

F.T.G.Johnson. W. C. James. J. B. Lewis

-27-

H. Barnes
Nathan P. Dodge
Pat Doran
R. Dewey
Jermiah Folsom
Samuel F. Folsom
T. J. Nevitt
T. S. Nelson
John T. Oliver
Runnells.
W. R. Reel
Perry Reel
Reynolds

L. Mallett

Mawhinney
A. McDonald.
T. H. Miller

Miles.
Wallace McFadden (Drummer)
Milton Rogers.

Soule.
J. R. Snyder
Jake Schoupe
J. B. Stutsman.
J. G. Whittaker
Frank Welch.

This list is not complete as the company numbersd about fifty men. They were armed with muskets, uniformed with blue cloth suits. The company had to pay for its arms, equipments and uniforms which cost about \$1500, the most of which I paid. There was attached to it a Saxe Horn Band of which Cyrus C. Kuhn was leader. The company met regularly for drill and we were often called upon to take part in local celebrations. They were invited to Omaha in November 1856 and General Thayer of the Nebraska Militia with his staff met them at the Ferry landing and escroted them up into the town where the citizens entertained them in a royal manner.

In September I sent them from Iowa City, forty muskets and equipments.

During the summer of 1856, I also went by steamer to St.

Louis and made arrangements for business in that city. In the fall of 1856, the M. & M. Railroad again commenced work and upon receiving notice from Mr. Peter A. Dey who still had charge of it, I returned to Iowa City and on October 6th organized a party and camped on the Iowa River. My party consisted of J. T. House, Transitman, George House, Leveller, Robins, Reynolds, Langerfeld, Jenson and Carmichael. Our instructions were to go to the head of Beaver Creek, a fork of the Raccoon, and make a new survey to Council Bluffs running down the Mosquito Valley.

I spent a good deal of time examining the approaches to the Missouri River to determine the best location into Council Bluffs. There had a contest arisen in relation to whether the road should terminate at Council Bluffs or Florence. Cook and Sargent who were prominent men in the company, had bought an interest at Florence and were very anxious that the road should be built down the Pigeon and terminate at Florence, but the to pographical

quito and terminate at Council Bluffs. This was also the commercial feature as the town of Omaha had been established then and had become quite a place, it being on one side of the river and Council Bluffs on the other. The citizens of Cuuncil Bluffs and Omaha both entered this contest, but the recommendations of Mr. Dey, the Chief Engineer, that the line I had surveyed down the Mosquito should be adopted, was approved by the company and the terminus made at Council Bluffs. Accords the Rocky Mountains and reported the probability of this route for a railroad. On the arrival of the party at Council Bluffs, I paraded the

On the arrival of the party at Council Bluffs, I paraded the Council Bluffs Guards. They then had their arms and uniforms and made a very attractive appearance.

I returned to lowa City in November, at the termination of our survey, by stage, my party returning by land. At Des Moines, a passenger in the stage with me, shut the door on my hand, taking the nail of my second finger completely off. It was a very painful operation but I wrapped my hand up in my handkerchief, the best I could, and went on to the city. The party reached the city on December 7th. All of this winter, we were encamped between Iowa City and Des Moines, locating and staking out our line. I remember the winter as a very cold one. There came to us at this time a young man by the name of Pogue, a nephew of one of the directors of the company. We were encamped on Clear Creek near the stage line. Pogue had had no experience, so I put him to carrying the stakes. The heavy snows of the winter had covered the streams without their being frozen over but the crust of the snow had become so hard that it would bear up the party, but I cautioned them to be careful when crossing small streams, not to get in, but Pogue, the first or second day out with his stakes, broke through the snow crust and fell into a creek and got very wet. The thermometer was eight or ten degrees below zero. I was on ahead of the party and they came after me. I went back and found Pogue freezing. We stripped his clothes off and rolled him in the snow. While this was a very severe treatment, it was very effective and saved him from freezing. Each member of the party took off some portion

of their dry clothing and gave it to him, and we got him back to camp. The shock was such that Pogue did not go out for several days. He was very despondent. The stage ran right past where we were encamped and one evening when I came in, I found a short note from Pogue on the table and it said that the M. & M. Railroad and myself could go to hell, he was going to New York. He had had all the surveying he cared for.

There had arisen on the Missouri river, a great fear that the terminus of the road would still be moved from Council Bluffs to Omaha and Mr. Farman had said that if the county of Pottawattamie would vote him \$300,000 in bonds, and if Douglas County would vote an additional sum, he would commence work at the Missouri River and grade East until the grading met. I presented this proposition to the citizens of both places, and on January 4th, 1857, Pottawattamie County called an election to vote upon the issue of \$300,000 in bonds. Douglas County Nebraska called an election to vote on \$200,000 to the M. & M. rialroad, providing work started in Council Bluffs during the year.

On January 12th, I attended the Legislature in Iowa City vendeavoring to obtain the passage of a militia bill, but was unsuccessful and on January 22nd, I attended the Republican State Convention at Iowa City as a delegate from Pottawattamie County. At this convention, James W. Grimes was nominated for Governor if I remember rightly.

During February 1857, as the party was running another line up Clear Creek, we came across a farmer by the name of John Scott. When the party reached his fence, they found Scott there with his shot-gun prohibiting them to cross. I was on ahead of the party looking up the line when they sent for me. I went back and tried to induce Scott to let us pass over his farm but he said no, he would shoot the first man who tried to cross the fence. He said he knew a better line to the south of us. I knew what that meant. I gave the wink to Mr. House and then started off with Mr. Scott. I looked over the route pointed out by him, staying long enough to be sure of my party's getting over the farm. When we got back to his farm, Scott was very angry when he saw the

just ready to shoot me, but I told him the party had gone on with out my knowledge and that all he had to do to destroy their work was to pull up the stakes, which he did. I cared nothing for this as I had my course and levels over the place. Scott was one of the frontier men who said he did not want a railroad; that his neighbors were already to near to him and they were several miles away.

On March 12, 1857, while running up Bear Creek, on a bright sanny day with a light fall of snow on the ground, every man in the party, who was out to work in the field, became snow blind. I was running the instrument that day and running to a flag set some two or three miles ahead. When we got into camp that night we began to feel the effects of the reflection of the sun on the snow on our eyes and by monring none of us could see, and we were all put in one of the wegons and taken to Iowa City. With most of the party the snow blindness was only temporary but with me, being at the instrument, it was very serious and they kept me in a dark room a month before I fully receovered my eyesight.

as

During thes summer, I negotiated with Mr. S. R. Riddle for the property which is now known as the Riddle Tract in Council Bluffs for the terminal of the Rock Island Railroad. I think I paid him \$10,000 for the tract, reserving some twenty acres of it for the terminals. The balance of it was divided into interests, the owners of the M. & M. road and some of the people of Council Bluffs each taking an interest.

 $\sqrt{\ }$  On June 13th, Pottawattamie County voted on the \$300,0000 bond issue to the M. & M., which it carried by 630 majority.

During this month Leroy Tuttle became a partner of Baldwin & Dodge.

On July 15th, the Council Bluffs guards officers were assessed \$20 and the non-commissioned officers \$15 and the enlisted men \$5 for the purpose of obtaining equipment etc.

On August 27th, my brother, Mr. N. P. Dodge, pre-empted the N. E. 1/4 of section 16 range 10 E. on the Elkhron River Nebraska.

October 16th, the M. & M. road again discharged all its engineering corps and stopped all work. I returned to Council Bluffs by the way of St. Louis on December 6, 1857. I had bought in St. Louis a frame house, all ready to set up, paid \$400 for it and had shipped it to Council Bluffs. It cost me \$500 to erect, plaster and paint it. It is still standing, a nice cottage, with a porch added, at No. Pierce St.

During the year 1858, Baldwin & Dodge, in connection with Mr. B. R. Pegram opened a mercantile house under the firm name of Baldwin, Pegram & Co., and they did a very extensive business. During the summer I commenced work again on the M. & M. road carrying out the agreement of Mr. Henry Farnam with the County that had voted the bonds and graded some 12 miles of road up the Mosquito Valley. This work continued until November 30th, 1858, when the inability to sell the bonds stopped the work. During this year, I also made explorations west of the Missouri River and they continued until the year 1861. The firm of Baldwin, Pegram & Co., commenced -freighting on the plains and sent the first train of flour to Denver. They established a relay station at old Ft. Cottonwood, afterwards known as Ft. McPherson. We sent my father to look after our stock, and he opened a store there, trading with the emigrants and the Indians. The emigration through the country during this year was very large.

My duties took me away from Council Bluffs and on July 27, 1859 I resigned as Captain of the Council Bluffs Guards and was succeeded by Seth Craig.

In August 1859, when I returned from the plains, I met here Abraham Lincoln. He had loanded some money to Mr. N. B. Judd, the Attorney of the Rock Island railroad, secured by interest Mr. Judd had in the Riddle Tract. Mr. Lincoln had been to Kansas and on his return, came up the Missouri River by boat to Council Bluffs to look at this property. He also had friends here who had formerly lived in Springfield, Illinois; Mr. W. H. M. Pusey and Thomas Officer. He learned from them that I had returned from reconnoissances west of the Missouri River and on the porch of the Pacific House, he spent an hour or two with me, making full inquiry as to what

Page 33. An. Dec. 16, 1960 I wrote this letter to my mother & Sister. Council Bluffs, Iowa, Dec. 16, 1860.

mole

Dear Mother and Julia:

I have been too busy to write you until today I have a little time. Father writes me nearly every week and I hear from him by the Pilgrims who are continually passing through here; his ranch is the best known on the road and he sells a large amount of goods. I sent him out three weeks ago eight large loads of flour, groceries, etc. The Indians are camped close by him and trade considerable.

Politically we are not very much excited out here. I suppose down there it is all secession excitement. We have won a great victory which has placed us in the true light of the constitution and for one I never will agree to have it frittered away by compromise or the knuckling to the hue and cry of the south. They may have all that constitutionally belongs to them but when they ask us to throw away our cardinal principals, give up all we have gained and fasten forever upon us slavery as national and freedom as sectional, I pray to God that the Republicans will never submit, to it.

I wrote Grimes and Curtis today on business and as a P.S. told them to be liberal to the south but not to give an inch of our just rights; to stand firm and if ne essary stand to their guns. No amount of clamoring should move the North and the south never should be allowed to break up this union. As the south threatens, let the nation financially go under and let every river run with blood but never let it be dissolved because the old dominat party has had to succumb.

Old hypocritic Boston I see trembles; her solid men turn Rowdies to get the faint praise of a McGowan, half brother to the "Brooks " that struck down herr Senator. She had better pattern after a western city, Chicago, which stands to her guns and defends a negro from Nebraska being taken to that territory as a slave when under the constitution he is free.

There is nothing new here; good sleighing and pleasant weather. Folks are all well. Little Ella is as fat as a plover; Let as quick as lightening and about as pointed.

> Give my respects to all the folks. Is old Dan at Rowley? Yours,

G. M. P. S. We are just getting a P.O. established at our ranch at Cottonwood springs and father is to be P. M. again.

my surveys had developed showing a great interest in the proposed Pacific railroads. I todd him what our explorations from 1853 to that time had developed and pointed out to him what Mr. Dey's and my own views were for a proper route for a Pacific road across the continent. He virtually shelled my woods and got all the information I had for my employer, Mr. Henry Farnam, who had personally been at the expense of our explorations west of the Missouri River.

This year we commenced making contracts with the Indians for different supplies, especially for flour, which we manufactured in our mil and kept our trains running to Denver. I went East and interested Mr. C. W. Durant in our milling and train business and obtained large sums of money from him which we invested.

During 1860, the political situation in the United States caused great excitement. I took an active part in politics in the Western part of the State, and at the request of Mr. N. B. Judd, who was the manager for Abraham Lincoln in the campaign, I went to Chicago at the time of his nomination and aided all I could in bringing it about. The delegation from the State of Iowa was greatly divided between Saward, McLane and others. In the beginning, I think there was only two delegates voted for Mr. Lincoln but in the final vote taken the last day, my recollection is that most of them voted for Mr. Lincoln.

I visited New York two or three times during the year and had humerous interviews with Messrs. Farnam, Durant, Tracey and others in relation to a Pacific Railroad. (They were then going before Congress in behalf of the line we had surveyed.) March 1, 1861, Messrs. Farnam, Durant, Tracey, Cook and myself went to Washington and went before Congress Committees in opposition to what was known as the Compromise Bill and succeeded in defeating it. Early in the spring of 1861, I had made arrangements with H. M. Hoxie who was a warm personal friend and whom I had been working with politically in the State, to meet him in Washington at the inauguration. We hired half of a house just back of the National hotel, which was occupied by Kasson, Blair, Hoxie, Gurly, Allison, David and myself and everybody coming from Iowa,

visited us and interested us in the appointments for that State.

On March 4th, the day of Lincoln's inauguration, I wrote the following home in relation to his inaugural address:

"Old Abe delivered the greatest speech of the age. The
"Sermon on the Mouht" only exc ælls it. It is backbone all over;
and Washington, with its one hundred thousand Republicans is very,
very high tonight. The city bristled withbayonets and old Scott is
praised by every one for his great and excellent measures to keep
the peace. There has not been a disturbance since I came here, and it
is said that there never was a crowd to equal this."

All our friends were in favor of Mr. John A. Kasson for Assistant Post-master General and succeeded in having him appointed.

On March 17th, in company with Messrs Ney and Draper of New York (Mr. Ney was an applicant for the position of Governor of Nevada) we visited President Lincoln. Everyone appreicated the hard task before him, and in talking to him in relation to these matters, he said, "I shall bring the country out all safe."

Tremained in Washington unitl the latter part of March, then returned to New York to take up the question of continuing the surveys for the Union Pacific road and its future legislation.

President Lincoln had assured us that he was very much in favor of the passage of the law and the building of the road.

I had become somewhat dissatisfied with the methods used by the different companies I was connected with and decided to dissolve the partnership and on my return to Council Bluffs in April, I took this matter up.

The last of March, of the first of April, the Government had ordered two companies of soldiers from Fort Randoll to go south by steamer to St. Joseph and across the country then to the East.

I had received information that the Confederates in northern Missouri were aware of this and proposed to capture these two companies. I

A.

immediately wrote John Kasson as follows:

Council Bluffs, April 2, 1861

I arrived home yesterday and would have telegraphed you at St. Josephed had I dared do so. There are men form scession military companies formed at St. Joseph for the purpose of capturing the troops from Fort Randall. They will be down about May 1, on the Omaha, and they propose to take, boat, arms, &c. I have several letter s from steady Union men in St. Joseph, and I shall board the boat as she comes down. My information is such that there is no doubt about the matter, and a telegram from the proper source to the officers on the boat would cause them to take the proper action. This letter will reach Washington before the troops reach this place.

Insert 4 - Page 35.

from Fort lottonwood. Council Bluffs, 1000, March 29, 1861

Dear Wife:

I arrived at this place last Wednesday night after a chilly and blustering journey of eleven days horseback; two days, however, I laid over that is rested, or I should have been used up. Slept in a bed three nights, balance of the time in the wagon that took down our buffalo robes. I had not rode two days before I got into cold water. While up at Cottonwood Springs the weather was delightful when I left, and in fact has been so all winter. I am now stopping at G.M's where I am living in superior style to what I have lived since I have been at cottonwood. Few live better than G.M's family. Lettie and Ella are really-beautiful children. Lettie has improved much since I left. She is very graceful, and I might add, accomplished for a girl of her age. She puts every word in the right place. No grammarian does better, and then she is very capable, can do many kinds of house work. Ella is the quintessence of good nature, is as plump as a partridge and pretty, and will talk as fast as a Sioux Indian when he thinks the Pawnees are after him, and some things she says can be understood as well.

Two hundred dollars of my claim for Indian depredations is allowed, and H.M. has managed so as to have the money paid me in Omaha some time hence. I think he will be unable to get any position for me as most of the western offices are filled. I believe the appointment for Pawnee agency has already been made so I cannot have that.

Unless I can sell my interest at Cottonwood I shall return

to that place the last of April or first of May. I have received a letter from "Jule" since I arrived here; it was remailed from Cotton-Shall probably have more letters from one and another by Saturday's western mail. We have fine improvements up there. \$500. for my part. The long journeys back and forth are very tedious especially such weather as when I came down, and then to be nearly immersed in the Platte River which was filled with "slush ice" in a cold night, is shivering to think of. The river at the crossing at Kearney is near two miles wide, including islands, with twelve channels, and the water in some of these runs nearly as swift as Niagara It came near carrying the old mare down stream. river. scarcely make her stem the current against the cold weather and ice. The minute we were out of the water we were mailed with a coat of I hauled up at a ranch on the opposite bank of the river and ice. stopped over night, stipping myself and dried my clothes, took no On arriving at Loup Fork we werd detained some three hours cold. on a sand bar before we reached the opposite bank, once across that river I felt I was nearly home. Stopped late that evening with a Mr. Fales who I once assisted when he was in trouble. He took good care of me and when I come to settle my bill in the morning he would I have some good friends up the Platte valley, not take one cent. always glad to see me. Very many people know me I cannot call by nam Omaha folks seemed glad to see me, as did also many in C.Bluffs

They had all heard of our being cleaned out, scalped &c, and were glad to see me with even a much larger scalp than they ever

saw on my head before. All said I looked well and the climate agreed with me and that I have not got scared out of a year's growth. I find times dull here, but am glad to see Nathan apparently prosper-He has a good business which is daily increasing. ous. ceived a large number of letters today. Some with remittances. gets a large tax paying business from Boston. When in Boston he fell in with a Mr. Joseph Hayes, a real estate agent, who was once in G.M's engineering party. He joined the party for the purpose of seeing the country. He introduced N. to John J. Dixwell, President of the Massachusetts Bank, Boston, who has since forwarded him a list of many thousands of acres of land on which he wants the taxes paid. He is almost daily receiving additions of this sort, which is a good paying business. These Boston men are using their influence for him there. N's promptness commends him to all business Lew Hill is about to leave here, and N. has made him and offer for his land list, which he expects to get, and which is worth \$200 per year.

Very truly.

S.Dodge.

Union men are leaving Missouri in swarms, and unless matters change within a week, a reign of terror will exist about St. Joseph."

I received an order from the War Department to board the steam er as it passed here and deliver an order from the War Department to disembark at this point and march across this state.

On the arrival of the steamer here, I went aboard and met Captain Gettey delivered the order to him and invited them to encamp in Council Bluffs and the officers to become our guests. The officers declined stating that they preferred to camp outside of the town with their companies. They camped on the Mosquito Creek on the main stage line. They marched across the State until they reached the end of the railroad.

On April 25th, the Governor of the State appointed Judge Caleb Baldwin to take charge of the organization of military companies on the Missouri Border and Judge Baldwin appointed me as his Adjutant.

I had already organized the Council Bluffs Guards with a view of going into the service and had become Captain of them again) I offered them to the Governor for the 1st Iowa Infantry but he declined stating that he could not take them away from the borders.

I again offered them to him for the 2nd Iowa and he still declined when I informed him that I should apply to go into the regular army. I immediately went to work on the organization of the companies on the border into a State Guard and I find in my reports I organized the following companies:

Constitutional Guards, Co. A.W.R.English, Captain, Thomas M. Mead 1st Lt. I. L. Shields, 2d Lt.

Union Cavalry, Co. B. S. M. Craig, Captain, J. L. Oliver 1st Lt. P. A. Wheeler, 2nd Lt.

Council Bluffs Guard, Co. C. G. M. Dodge Captain, Chas. L. Hopper, 1st. Lt. Rice, 2nd Lt. This company which was organized four years before, had lost all of their arms and equipments but were again armed by me.

Page Co. Rangers, Co. D. Joseph Creamer, Captain, R. F. Coonor, 1st Lt. and George Ball, 2nd Lieut.

Frontier Guards, Co. E. Wm. Tripp, Capt. Wm. R. Smith, 1st Lt. and A. J. Millard, 2nd Lt.

Citizens Union Guard Co. F. G. B. Gaston, Captain, Wm. A. Bates, lst Lt. Channey L. Clark 2nd Lt. C. Bluffs Lt. Art. Co. G. Samuel C. II. Gaptain, Thos Officer, 2nd Lt

1861 On May 25th, I received the following letter from Gov. Kirkwood:

"I hereiwth confide to you a communication to Maj. Gen. Harney at St. Louis, desiring from him or through him from the Secretary of War, 3000 stand of arms from the command at Ft. Kearney, Nebraska. Should be deemed proper by you, when at St. Louis, upon conference with General Harvey, to go to Washington City in order more readily to obtain these arms, I desire you to go there at once. When the order is obtained you will report to me immediately for further instructions."

On receipt of this letter, I immediately went to Des Moines and had an interview with the Governor. I left Des Moines for St. Louis, Ft. Leavenworth and Washington, May 24th. I failed to get any arms at Ft. Leavenworth; also at St. Louis. General Harney stated that he had none but he told me thought there was some deposited in the Allegheny Arsenal that had not yet been used. I made a memorandum of this. The Governor had given me letters to Fitz Henry Warren, a citizen of Iowa, who was then the Correspondent of the New York Tribune in Washington. On my arrival in Washington, I first called on him and told him my business. He said he did not believe there could be any arms procured as every State had been applying for I told him that I knew where there were some arms. He went with me and introduced me to the Secretary of War, Simon Cameron. The Secretary told me they had no arms and it was impossible to get any. I asked him if I could have any arms that I found and he said "Yes". I immediately left him. I had a frient in the Ordnance Department and I went to see him, told him confidentially what Harney had told me and he inquired at the arsenal and found there about 6000 springfield muskets, smooth bore, that had not been issued. With this information, I went back to Secretary Cameron, who, when I told him of these arms, hesitated about giving me an order for them buy It held him to his agreement and got the order. I placed a man in charge of these arms to take care of them until they could get to the State. On this secondinterview, Cameron immediately offered me a Commission as Captain in the 15th U. S. Infantry but I told him that it was impossible foor me to accept it as my serivces were first due to the State. He then offered me a Colonelcy of the 4th Iowa Infantry. I immediately wired the Governor and was accepted.) Sec. Cameron said he gave me this because I had succeeded in doing what all the rest had failed to do. It seems that the Senators and Representatives

Now

from our State in Congress, had tried to secure arms but had failed. While in Washington, the Secretary of War and Fitz Henry Warren declined feeling I did not have the experience to fill such a position. They then undertook to give it to McKeene but Congressman Samuel R. Curtis became a prominent candidate and obtained it.

While I was in Washington, John Adair McDowell, brother of Major General Irvin McDowell who was then commandin g at Arlington, wished to obtain a Colonelcy in the Iowa regiments. He asked me to dinner with his brother, and I accepted. After our dinner was over, General McDowell said to me, "Here are two young men, John Adair McDowell and William H. Worthington, who wish commissions in Iowa regiments and you can get them." I was astonished at what he said and I said, "How can I obtain them?" He said, "If you will send a dispatch to Governor Kirkwood, recommending them, I know he will give them the position." McDowell and Worthington were both strangers to me and I did not like to take such a responsibility but I told him that I would wire the Governor that he, General McDowell wished their appointment and recommended them and that I thought the appointment would be good one. This is the substance of the dispatch I sent Kirkwood and he authorized their appointment, one taking the 5th Iowa and the other the 6th.

In the life of Governor Kirkwood, for the following is the statement as to my action in obtaining the arms:

"Among these men, one of the most determined and persevering was G. M. Dodge.  $I_n$  the commencement of the war one of the greatest needs was arms. For the purpose of obtaining them, the Governor issued the following commission: Executive Mhamber

Des Moines, Iowa, May 25, 1861. Capt. G. M. Dodge:-Dear Sir:- I hereby confide to you a communication to Major General Harney, at St. Louis, desiring from him, or though him, from the Secretary of War, 3000 stand of arms from the command at Ft. Kearney Neb. Should it be deemed proper by you, when at St. Louis, upon conference with Gen. Harney to go to Washington City in order the more readily to obtain these arms, I desire you to go there at once. When the order is obtained, you will report to me immediately for further instructions.

Respectfully.

Respectfully, Samuel R. Kirkwood,

Governor of Iowa. Gen. Bodge at this time was captain of an independent military company, which he had some years before organized, and which was known as the "Council Bluffs Guards." He tried to get it into the First Regiment, and failing here, into the Second, but Governor Kirkwood refused to enlist it in either, thinking it would be neded for the protection of the courtboar borden from Miccount Court and Second S for the protection of the southern border from Missouri Secession-

ists or the western Indians. So anxious was Dodge to enter upon active military service, that he told the Governor he should seek service in the Regular The Governor then issued to him the above commission, which he at once proceeded to execute. Failing to get arms, either at St. Louis our Fort Leavenworth, he went direct to Washington. On his arrival there, Cameron, then Secretary of War, said "every state was applying for arms and he had none to give them." Gen Fitx Henry Warren went with him, and they urged the matters so strenusously that Cameron told Dodge that if he could find any arms he could take them. He did find some arms, and he took them, for he had a friend in the Ordnance Department that put him on tract of 6,000 smooth-bore Springfield muskets, which he got upon the order, which he sent at once, in charge of a man, to Davenport and Quincy, where they were used to arm the Second and Third Iowa Regiments and afterwards the Fourth. Some of them were used to displace old guns formerly issued that were so old, thin and poor they were as likely to kill those who fired them as those at whom they were fired.

Cameron offered him a captaincy in the Fifteenth United States Infantry and after obtaining the arms, the colonelcy of the 4th Iowa. The latter was tendered him, as Cameron said, on consideration of his successful effots in obtaining arms, when such men as Senator Grimes, Gen. S. R. Curtis, and others had failed. He telegraphed the Governor, "Shall I accept?" and got an affirmative

answer.

Cameron and Warren both wished him to take the brigadier-generalship afterwards offered to and finally obtained by Curtis, but he declined it, not then having confidence in himself of being able to fill it, and lacking in experience, though he had a thorough and

complete military education. Gen. Grant in after years, said he was the best railroad builder and the best railroad destroyer in the federal army. In X destroying the Rebel railroads, he could give the heated rails a twsist which nothing but Federal ingenuity and Federal machinery

could untwist.

Of the military company under Capt. Dodge and other ones like it, Governor Lowe, in his last message, said:
"There are several independent military companies in the State to whom arms have been distributed. Yet there is no law of the State under which they are organized, or that would strictly authorize the Executive to call them into the field in cases requiring their services."

I immediately claimed a portion of the arms that I had obtained for my own regiment and they were promised me but they had a waried experience. I sent a portion of them to Davenport and sent the rest to Quincy, hoping to get those at Quincy over the St. Joe railroad and up the Missouri River to Council Blufs. When they reached Quincy, there had come a good deal of trouble in north-east Missouri and these arms were sent to Keokuk where Col. Cyrus Bussy was in charge. They took the arms and distributed them to the two and to companies satted throughout branches of the Governor regiments being organized, not withstanding the orders of the Governor and his staff to have these arms sent to me. There was absolutely no necessity of turning them over at Keokuk to the Union Guards there and the Governor censured Col. Bussy very severely for what The fact is that rather than let the arms come to me, Bussy

went to St. Louis and got an order from Fremont to turn them over

Insert (3) Page 39. Washington, June 11, 1861. Dear Mother:

I am about starting for the point of interest just now, Harper's Ferry, and ere a week you will hear of a battle or a great run in that direction. The Company at the Bluffs is in the 4th Regiment Iowa Volunteers. I am a Lt. Col. of cavalry, got my appointment since I reached this place. I do not know whether I shall be kept in active service or not. I go to Harper's Ferry on the staff and hope to see some fighting. Eleven regiments left here yesterday in that direction; the whole country around is one undivided camp. I have been beyond Alexandria and to within two miles of Fairfax Court House, but was on duty and could not stop to see Sylvester. Our scouts are close together and fire on each other every night. The volunteers are highly spoken of by the ladies of the city as being gentlemen and well behaved. A few days ago 60,000 were encamped here and on the outskirts and nothing but uniforms met the eye.

I suppose you are anxious to hear the plans. Well it is to attack Harper's Ferry from four points, viz. Leesburg, and Frederick, Hagerstown and from the west by Cumberland. The levies thrown into Virginia will at some time march and threaten Manassus Gap, so that they cannot go to the help of Harper's Ferry; and Gen. Butler will also make a forward m ovement on Richomnd, thus holding in check Davis and his forces.

Yours,

Gren.

Insert (5) Page 39.

Washington, D. G., June 21, 1861.

Dear Mother:

I am ordered to rendezvous with my regiment at Council Bluffs and I leave for New York and thence home immediately. I go into the field in twenty days with as fine a body of men as ever drew a sword or shouldered a musket. I go into this war on principle, pecuniarily it will ruin me. I trust you will write my family a letter approving my course. I put my trust in dod; if I come out and safe I hope no one will have cause to regret my course.

I am,

Truly yours,

G. M. Dodge.

to the two regiments then being organized in Keokuk. While in Washington I wrote these two letters to my mother Insert 5 15) From Washington, on receipt of a dispatch from the Governor

of the State, I returned to New York and there met Ezekiel Clark and undertook to purchase supplies for the troops. We had to buy them on the credit of the State. The State had no money and had issued no bonds. The merchants there were very scary about allowing us to have the goods and finally they sold them to us and shipped them, but they not only demanded the paper of the State but that Ezekiel Clark, who was a prominent banker at Iowa City, and myself had to endorse the paper personally. This was the first time I knew a personal endorsement was better than that of a State.

From New York, I returned immediately to Council Bluffs and was received there by the citizens and by the companies that had already gone into camp at Campt Kirkwood, which was located down at the south point of the Bluff, facing the Mosquito Creek. The two papers of the twon commented on my appointment as follows: From the Council Bluffs Bugle, July 3, 1861.

"We understand that our fellow citizen, G. M. Dodge, has received the appointment of Col. of the 4th Iowa Regiment. It is well known to our citizens that Col. Dodge and ourself are bitter political opponents; but notwithstanding our political hostilities towards him, we will do him the justice to say that as neighbor and citizen, we entertain the highest respect for him. We understand that he is a graduate of the West Point Military Academy, and we know that he is an excellent tactician, and if as we hope, Col. Dodge's discretion moderation and widsom as a commander are equal to his energy and ability as a tactician, no better appointment could have been made."

From the Council Bluffs Nonpareil, July 6, 1861.

"Col. Dodge is now on his way to this city, and will be here early next week, with the camp equipage and arms for his regiment. We hazard nothing in saying that Col. Dodge will make as efficient and accomplished an officer as any one of the many men who have been called from the civil pursuits of life into the army raised for the purpose of asserting the supremacy of this Government. He is a man of indomitable energy, quick perceptions, resoluteness of will, almost to stubbornness, fearless in the performance of any duty that may devolve upon him, frank and kindly in his manner, and devoid of the least particle of ostentation. He graduated at the Norwich (vermont) Military School, under the veteran tactician, Capt. Partridge, and has alwaystaken a very lively interest in military affairs. For years he labored faithfully and earnestly to get an efficient military law passed in this state, but his labors were in vain, until the Breaking out of the present troubles. Through his exertions, a military company was formed in this city in the winter of 1856 which under his personal suprvision attained a proficiency in the manual of arms, seldom attained outside of the regular army.

When the Legislature met in extra session in May last, he was promptly on hand, and contributed perhaps more than any other man outside of that body, towards perfecting the military bill which became a law. Appreciating his energy and perseverance, and relying upon his superior knowledge in military affairs, Gov. Kirkwood, cloth ed him with authority to go in quest of arms and munitions of war for the State. In this capacity he visited Springfield, Ill., St. Louis and Washington. At the War Department, hismanner of executing his commission, so favorably impressed the Secretary of War, that he tendered him an important commission on the regular staff, but Capt. Dodge preferred to serve his own State, even in an humbler capacity. He was accordingly tendered the Colonelcy of the 4th Iowa regiment, which appointment he at once accepted. That he will prove an acceptable officer to the whole regiment, none who know the man as we know him can for a moment doubt."

"Col. Grenville M. Dodge, of the 4th Iowa Regiment, arrived home from Washington yesterday, and was received by the companies rendezvoused here, with military honors, and greeted by his fellow citizens with a whole hearted welcome. The Iowa 4th may well be proud of its Colonel; besides possessing a thorough military education he has an iron will and an energy that knows no "let up". For the 4th and its gallant Colonel, we predict a proud stage on the history of crushing out treason; and wherever they go, whether storming rebel batteris on the Mississippi or planting the old flag on the Alamo, the hearts of the people of the slope will go with them."

On my return, I immediately applied for authority to enlist a battery. I obtained that authority and made Captain N. T. Spoor, and J. R. Reed its first Lt. its Captain. It was enlisted as Dodge's Battery but as soon as it was mustered in, it was designated as the 2nd Iowa B attery. I enlisted it under a promise that it should serve with me but I never saw it after it was mustered in.

I had applications from all over the State from persons who wished to join my command.

On June 27th, I received a letter from John M. Corse, who afterwards became a distinguished General from Iowa, who had received authority from the War Department to organize a mounted battery. He addressed me on the subject and asked me: "Will you be so kind as to inform me what I have to do in the premises: Do you wish the roll of my company? What are the formalities and steps incident to being attached or at least of being so recognized as attached to a regiment?"

On the same day, I received a letter from Samuel Kirkwood telling me that Porter's Saxe Horn Band of Grinnell had been organized
and offered their services for the war and asked me to take them,
which I immediately accepted. They went into the service with me
but after reaching St. Louis, the band was taken away from me and
until the campaign of 1863
I never saw that again. I received my commission as Colonel dated
July 6th. The regiment roster after organization was as follows:

Company A. Mills Co. Capt. W. R. English. 1st Lt. T. H. Head. 2nd Lt. L. Shileds. 74 men.

Company B. Pottawattamie Co. - Capt. S. H. Craig, 1st Lt. P. A Wheeler, 2nd Lt., W. H. Kinsman, 98 men.

Company C., Guthrie Co., Capt. T. Seely. 1st Lt. S. D.

Nichols. 2nd Lt. L. P. McEwen - 98 men.

Company D. Decatur Co. - Capt. G. Burton. 1st Lt. J. S. Warner, 2nd J. B. Springer - 96 men.

Company E. Polk Co., - Capt. H. H. Griffith. 1st Lt. W. D. Simmons. 2nd Lt. Isaac Whicher - 96 men.

Company G. Ringgold Co. - Capt. E. W. Rice. 1st Lt. L. Hopkins, 2nd Lt. R. Sry, 87 men.

Company H. Adams Co. - Capt. Elmore Y. Burgan. 1st Lt. H. G.

Ankeny. 2nd Lt. J. J. Hafer, 84 men.

Company I. Wayne Co. - Capt. W. E. Taylor, 1st Lt. S. L.

Glaswow. 2nd Lt. G.S. McCune, 102 men.

Company K. Page Co., Capt. Joseph Cramer, 1st Lt. G. W. Freidley. 2nd Lt. J. L. Chittendon. 88 men.

Dodge's Battery, Pottawattamie Co., Capt. N. M. Sooir. 1st Lt. J. R. Reed, 2nd Lt. C. O, Dewey 92 men.

. Band 14 men. Staff Officers 11, Grand total of regiment, 1,005 men.

## Nativity.

Ohio, 261. Iowa, 15 Mo. 33 Ill. 54 Ky 35

Va. 45 Penn. 202 Ind. 243 N. Y. 65

Foreign Born, 20m Ocean Born 1. Scattering, 121.

Total 1,005 men.

Under 21 years, 317. Average age of regiment 24 years.

226

243

There was great difficulty in getting arms for these companies but fiannly we obtained a lot of old Prussian muskets that were more dangerous at the butt than at the muzzle.

In July we began to receive rumors of the organization and concentration of troops on the northern border of the State of Missouri with intention of attacking or occupying southern Iowa. I had a young man in my command by the name of Fred K. Teal, who had been recommended to me very highly by H. M. Hoxie as being a fit man to send on any special duty, and to ascertain what these organizations were doing in northern Missouri, at the suggestion of Judge Baldwin, who was still in charge of the organization of troops on the frontier, I sent Teal to Missouri and on July 23rd I received an order from Judge Baldwin to move with about 200 of my regiment and a section of the Local Artillery Co. . under Captain Clinton to Southern Iowa to guard that border. He did not want me to move into Missouri unless it was absolutely necessary. I went on to Clarinda, Page Co, where Teal reported to me saying that the whole country was full of rumors but it was no use to pay any attention to them, that everyone had a tale of his own; that 45 miles south of the State line, there was an organization under Col. Poindexter, that they were entrenched at Gentryville; they had three pieces of cannon. I immediately halted my command and sent Teal through to that place. Teal went to Gentryville and reported that they had learned of our movement south; that it was reported I had 1000 men and a battery of artillery; that the forces immediately scattered and the rartillery tipped into the river and there was a general fright that we would march into Missouri and destroy the rebels. I discovered that Missouri was as frightened as Southern Iowa and there was not much danger of either of them attacking the other and so I returned to Council Bluffs. My regiment was now using the arms that had been sent to Judge Baldwin for the service on the frontier guards. The regiment was only partially armed, without accoutrements and without any uniforms.

On July 30th, Governor Kirkwood in writing me extending his thanks to me and the regiment for the trip south said this about arming my regiment and the appointment of officers:

"The Major for your regiment will be appointed from the Slope and upon your suggestion. I have today appointed Robbins and Grimes Surgeon and Asst. Surgeon. They are the only ones approved by the Medical Board from your region. There is some complaint from that region that "Council Bluffs gets everything." Your arms I hope will reach you soon. There has been much confusion about them. The people at Keokuk took possession of them at one time and were determined to keep them for State use. I received on Saturday the following dispatched: "The Battery of Artillery with Col. Dodge's regiment at Council Bluffs is accepted with the understanding that it cannot be attached to any particular regiment.

On August 5th, companies A, D, F, G and H started for St.

Louis on the steamer "Emelie." On August 8th, companies B, C and

E were mustered into the U. S. Service by Capt. Merrill and on

the 10th I left for St. Louis with these companies. We arrived

at St. Joe and took cars from St. Jose to Hannibal; leaving there

on steamer "Sucker State," for St. Louis.

On the 13th of August, the regiment was assembled at Jefferson Barracks and went into Curtis' Brigade. We were here armed with smooth bore Purssuan muskets, old ones, and the first time they were fired, thirteen of them burst.

On the 24th of August, we took cars and went to Rolla, Missouri that being the outpost of the Federal Command in the West. The arms of my regiment were in such a condition that I insisted on an officer coming to inspect them. On August 29th, Capt. W. L. Elliott of the regular army came to Rolla, which was known as Camp Lyon, inspected the arms and made this report:

"I have inspected the arms in possession of the 4th Iowa regiment and find they are the old pattern musket, 1818, 1824, 1829 altered to percussion and these without any of the implements, such as screw drivers, nippers, ball screws or spring vices. I consider that this regimentas now armed is unfit for active service, although composed of men raised on the frontier and accustomed to the use of fire arms."

On September 8th, I received the following letter from Gov.

Kirkwood:- Lept oth

"I am almost ashamed to hear from you or to write you and yet I feel that I am not to blame for the mishap you have met with.

My orders were most positive to send you your arms but at the time an attack on Col. Moore at Athens was immiment and the arms were taken and used to aid him. When the danger was over your regiment had gone and Col. Bussy supposed there was no use to send them. I did not know they had not gone, until my return from Washington. They are now a good deal scattered and I fear cannot be gotten together again soon. I will ascertain.

I have been using my best endeavors at Washington for your regiment also with Gen. Fremont. I had a dispatch from him a fesw days since, saying that your regiment and Lauman's were being provided for. I sincerely hope it is so. I will write him again.

There absolutely no money, nor can I get any now. Our bonds

provided for. I sincerely hope it is so. I will write him again.

I have absolutely no money, nor can I get any now. Our bonds
will not sell. The U S. ase in position to pay the troops, and
on the first payment will pay for the time they were in quarters
before bing mustered in. This is under a recent law of Congress."

D. B. Page 44.

Insert (4)

These scouts reports showed there was no enemy in myfront or near it and my reports to that effect caused Gen. Fremont to order me to Report to him in St. Louis. I immediately went to St. Louis reported to his Adjutant General but got no satis-I never saw such a retinue of bespangled staff officers ans such ceremony, guards, etc. I remained in St. Louis two dayswithout seeing or hearing from Gen. Fremont turned to my command. The very next day after my return I received a dispatch from Gen. Fremont asking why I had not reported as ordered. I answered that I had been in St. Louis two days at his head quarters and was not allowed to see him, that I would immediately report again I made up my mind that this time I would see him. He had his headquarters in the old J. H. Benton mansion which had a terrace front and steps leading up the front with a sentinal at every terrace. arriving in St. Louis I took a package in my hand and started up the steps, as each sentinal stopped me I said I had orders to report immediately to Gen. Fremont and they all When I reached Gen. Fremont's office I waited before he received me and after quite a conversation K some time with him about my command and about the enemy and about troops joining the movement on springfield, in fact I could not understand really what he wanted of me and after my interview I returned immediately to Rolla.

During the fall of 1861, there were assembled at the post of Rolla, several regiments among them the 36th Illinois under Col. 13th Lll. under Col. Wyman Griesel, the 24th and 26th Missouri, 4th Iowa and some independent companies with artillery and being the ranking officer, I became commander of the post. None of these regiments were well drilled. The 4th Iowa had not yet gotten its arms or equipments but I started in to thoroughly drill it and had it out nearly every day in company drill and every other day in regimental drill. I exercised it expecially in the firing of muskets, in skir mishing and in all movements that my military training told me would be necessary. I marched them through the brush while they were firing. They were drilled so much more than any other regiment at the post that there was much complaint by them. In going through the brush they tore their clothes; and they did not appreciate the necessity of discipline and practise. There was camped near us the remnant of the army that had come from Wilson Creek, under General Seigle, who reported directly to General Hadleck and hardly any of those regiments spent any time in drilling.

While General Fremont was in command, I was continually receiving reports from him that the enemy were near me or that they were reported near me and were continually sending out scouting parties to determine the fact and invariably I never found any enemy, so that the troops were very much disgusted with their long marches. I had an indepdndent company there commanded by Captain White. It was a fine scouting party. Captain White came into my office one morning and said that it was no use to wear out his horses on these scouts that he had plenty of men in his company who knew all that country and if they had money to pay their way, they could go any place in Missouri and northern Arkansas and find out the facts and bring them to me. I thought this was an excellent suggestion but I had no momey; however, my provost marshal, had collected some funds, fines, permissions, etc. and I called him in. He concluded that he would turn over any money I wanted for that purpose and I set White to work and that was my first experience in the secret service of the army.

I followed it all through my service and found it of great benefit.

On September 21, 1861, I obtained leave of sbsence for fourteen days for the benefit of my health. I visited St. Louis and with the aid of General Curtis, obtained the arms, uniforms, shoes, under-clothing, etc. for my regiment; also over-coats. At the same time I got a full outfit for the Dodge Battery, commanded by Captain Spoor. This was the first outfit the regiment and Battery had had. The over-coats were dyed black. The other goods were of ver poor material.

On September 23rd, all the regiments except Col. Wyman's, 13th Illinois and the 4th Iowa, left to take part in Fremont's campaign against Price.

While I was in St. Louis, I ascertained that my regiment would probably garrison at Rolla during the winter and on my return to that place, I immediately put my regiments to building barracks.

Each Companyput up its own barracks, with officers quarters; also a large hospital. The My regiments had the best winter quarters of any of the command. Whether this was better, in a sanitary measure, I have my doubts, for there was a great deal of sickness in the regiment during the winter, more than in any other regiment which was quartered in tents; also a great many deaths, so many that I prohibited music in roing to the burial as their funeral marches had a bad effect upon the men in the hospital. The building of these barracks received the approval of General Fremont, who paid the regiment quite a compliment.

In November, I sent 1500 men to Texas County after Col. Freeman and his rebel command. They followed him over fifty miles until his command scattered.

On November 9th, A. D. Richardson, a correspondent of the New York Tribune and T. M. Knox of the New York Herald arrived in Rolla from General Fremont's command and were very severe in their criticisms of Fremont and his movements.

The forces from Springfield reached Rolla on November 27th, General Asboth being in command.

In December, Captain Phil. . Sheridan reported to me as Quarter Master for the force that was assembling outside of the post; he was also quarter-master of the post. Captain M. P. Small reported as Commissary of Subsistence.

5- Page 45. I wrote my mother this letter that gives a good description of conditions at Rolla.

Hdqrs. 4th Regiment Iowa Vols., Rolla, Mo., Nov. 26, 1861.

Dear Mother:

I believe I have neglected to write you for a long time. Nate left too soon; he had ought to have seen the Army come in from Springfield; it is a grand sight, the whole valley is white with their encampments. I have now at this post, which I will command, nearly 20,000 troops; along with the army some 7000 families of Union people who dared not stay. Some of them are good people but have had to leave their old homes, stock farms and all they have to be fed by me and they are really thankful. You know I could not turn any one away; I do not know whether the Government will sustain me but they must be fed. Price and McCullough is on the advance here. I sent out 1000 men last night to cut off his Texas Rangers, have been expecting them to run.

This army is a very fine one but it wants a McClellan to handle it; its discipline under Fremont was bad. Halleck takes hold to suit me. If he will only stop the stealing both by officers and men and go to shooting for the outrages committed by many of our troops, draw everything down to the Army regulations and to a well disciplined army, we shall always succeed. They must put the troops of each State in the same divisions under their own generals and each nationality by itself. I could straighten out some things much better than they now are. Fremont was a big enthusiastic man but had poor discipline and was very extravagant. I have a very fine regiment. I know I can lead them through a hot place; they will follow me until the last man drops. I do not think I have an enemy in the regiment. Lt. Col. Galligan, I fear, is unpopular; it was a mistake when he was appointed, still I do not allow any dissensions in relation to him.

I should like to get home a few days but that is impossible. Lett is very dear to me: I think of her every day and although I work night and day, I get time to romp with Ella occasionally. I have sent home two fine horses that I want good care taken of; also two fine saddles with trappings. I want father to see that they are not hurt or

lost and the colts kept in good trim until I come.

Tell Lettie to learn to write so she can send me a letter. Annie says she sent you \$5 in a letter last week; you no doubt will receive it. I am tired and must go to bed. We have a nice lot of barracks for the troops here-I built them. Have got a house for myself with four rooms in it.

Love to Jule and I expect to see father here before long. Truly,

G. M.

At that time, our regiments had 28 four-mule wagons to each regiment. Sheridan's orders were to organize the transportation into trains for supplying the army in its campaign to the south-west. He came to me and asked me to issue an order reducing each regiment to two wagons. He knew when he gave me this order what a rumpus it would make and that protest that would come. He watched to see what I would do. As soon as I issued the order, every regiment and battery in the post protested; they wired their Governors and they protested and it was quite a problem to me, but I went out and stripped my own regiment first and then called upon the other Colonels to strip theirs, and, having seen my regiment do it without making any protest or fuss, the others complied, but Sheridan had great difficulty in getting the regiments which were camped outside the post to obey the order. Some of them absolutely refused. He finally succeeded in oreganizing the trains.

On December 24th, General Seigle assumed command of a 11 the troops including the post of Rolla and it was supposed that he was to command the army in its movement to the south-west. The last part of December, I was severely wounded in the leg from a shot of a small pistol which I carried in my coat pocket, and which while I was riding on horse-back was discharged. I recuperated from this wound very fast.

The 27th of December, Samuel R Curtis was assigned to the command of the district of South-west Missouri and came to Rolla and assumed command. This caused a great deal of feeling among the German troops but was very gratifying to the American troops, quite a large number of which had concentrated at Rolla.

On January 21, 1862, I was assigned to the command of the 1st Brigade, 4th division Army of the South-west. The brigade consisted of the 4th Iowa, 35th Illinois 24th Missouri and 1 Iowa Battery. The Division was commanded by Col. Eugene A. Carr. My commission ranked that of Col. Carr and Captain Sheridan said that while it was very proper for me to accept the position which I was pleased to do under a regular army officer, considering him more competent to command a division than I was, I should protest and assert my rights. I made the protest to General Curtis. He decided that where commiss-

18 7

ions were of the same rank, the regular army officer took rank over a volunteer officer, no matter what the date of the commission. This decision was forwarded to General Halleck but he reversed General Curtis' decision and decided that I was entitled to the command of the division but that decision did not reach us until after the battle of Pea Ridge and until after I had left that command but it made a precedent.

Governor Kirkwood was very anxious that the Iowa regiments should be put into brigades and divisions by themselves, but that was impracticable and the authorities disapproved it. The 2nd William Brigade of Carr's Division was commanded by Col. Vandever of the 9th Iowa. We moved forward to Lebanon where we rested and were joined by Col. Jeff C. Davis' division of some 5000 men, so that the total command of General Curtis was 12,000 men.

Co. E. of the 4th Iowa was the first to enter Springfield the enemy having retreated and we moved on, following Price on a retreat, attacking his rear guard at every opportunity and bringing on several short engagements, generally at the crossing of the streams, until finally they reached Fayetteville, Ark. where they were stopped by an order of General Halleck. Col. Jeff C. Davis' Division was posted at Sugar Creek some twelve miles in the rear. General Seigle's command, two divisions, some five or six miles west of Bentonville and Col. Carr's command at a plane known as Cross Hollows, the most rocky gully and pitch pine butternut place you ever saw. Col. Vandever's Brigade was some twenty miles to the West. The 4th Iowa Infantry was posted on Eagle River at Blackburn's Mills and were running those mills to supply the command with corn-meal. A Sheridan was the quarter-master and Commissary and had to forageort and feed the command off of the country. It was a very difficult problem. We were some 300 miles from railroad or \*Water communication and outside of what we had brought with us we had to feed and forage the command from a sparsely populated country with little in it and it has always been a wonder to me how he so successfully did it. The entire command wanted shoes, pants and tents, you might say they were nearly naked. The march over the

rought country and through the brush and the poor quality of the

DB. - Page 48-

I was several times on the verge of personal conflict with irate regimental commanders but Col. G. M. Dodge so greatly sustained me with Gen'l Curtis by strong moral support and by such efficient details from his regiment, 4th Iowa Volunteer: Infantry, that I shall bear him and it in great affection and lasting gratitude.

material we received, with no surplus whatever, had left the army in a very bad condition.

During this campaign, Captain Sheridan tented with me.

He had a great difficulty in getting the necessary letails for who commanded two pursions running mills, foraging, etc. General Seigle, would not furnish him details from his command, stating it was not the duty of a soldier. He would come to me and at times he would have the entire 4th Iowa detailed at different mills and out upon foraging expeditions and he spoke of this in his Memoirs, as follows:

\*\*The command of the help they gave him at that time.

Captain Sheridan used to often say that he thought if he could get into the line, he could do something and he used to say his ambition was to get where I was - in command of a brigade.

About the first of March, Captain Sheridan had some difficulty with General Curtis in relation to his receipting for stolen stock, which he declined to do and General Curtis relieved him to the great regret of the officers who knew what it meant to feed an army so far away from a base of supplies. Some of us went over to consult General Curtis in relation to the order, endeavoring to have him retained, but Gen. Curtis was very positive and angry and his Adjutant General, Captain T. J. McKinneyy, told us we had better not come again or we might be relieved ourselves. Captain Sheridan went back to Springfield and was there at the time of the battle of  $\Lambda$  the 6th, 7th and 8th of March. Right after the battle, a great effort was made by the reporters and officers of Gen. Seigle'e command to give him the credit of the battle, when he virtually did very little in it. These dispatches were sent to Springfield by messenger where they too' the telegraph. Sheridan was there in charge of the telegraph. He knew that it was General Curtis who had fought this battle and won it and was Cols. Carr's and Davis' divisions who had done most of the fighting, so he held these dispatches until the dispatches came from General Curtis. He Sent General Curtis' dispatches first, and followed them with Gen. Seigle's, showing a very soldierly quality, after the treatement he had received from Gen. Curtis.

The first news of the movement of General Van Dorn upon our army was brought in by one of my scouts and by refugees who were fleeing before Gen. Van Dorn's advance and some members of that a foraging party, a part of whom had been captured by evening.

We only got the word one day before Gen. Van Dorn was upon us and General Curtis that day issued the orders concentrating his army upon Col. Jeff C. Davis' division at Sugar Creek.

INSERT CAMPAIGN OF SOUTHWEST.
SEE PRINTED COPY.

Sometime after this battle of Pea Ridge, mite a controversy arose as to the campaign, the part taken in it by the commands and particularly the action of Generals Curtis and Seigle.

Mr. A. P. Wood of Dubuque, who was writing a history of the Civil War, wrote me a long letter in relation to this campaign asking me many questions that had arisen in the controversy and I wrote him in 1866, partially as follows:

We started at 12 o'clock at night--a dark, bitter cold night. Siegel who was on our right, got orders to move same time we did, but his delay allowed the enemy to get between us at Sugar Creek and a portion of his force at Bentonwille. The next day was consumed in closing in and taking position. Some sharp skirmishing occurred on the Bentonville road in getting Siegle through. Some of my scouts brought me word that General Price's command was marching down the road from Bentonville to Cassville.

Theyknaw that country well. About 4 P. M. I went to Gen. Curtis, who was superintending the building of a battery, at the point where the main road ascends the hill north side of Sugar Creek. I told him that the enemy were evidently working on our right; that there was a good road leading into Cross Timbers from Bentonville to our rear; but it led through a gorge called Little Cross Hollows, which if bloakaded would be a great detriment and delay to them. Curtis immediately asked some one to go and fell the trees; but for some reason they did not go. He then turned to me and said, "You know the country, go and do it." I told him that my troops had marched all night and day and were worn out, but I would do as he desired.

Taking five companies of the 4th Iowa and two companies

Taking five companies of the 4th Iowa and two companies of the 3d Mo. Cavalry, I struck the ravine leading into Cross of the 3d Mo. Cavalry, I struck the ravine leading into Cross of the 3d Mo. Cavalry, I struck the timber I could, having Timbers about 9 P. M. and felled all the timber I could, having gone in advance with the cavalry. Two companies of the infantry under Capt. Nichols got lost and instead of following the cavalry under Capt. Nichols got lost and instead of following the cavalry too right down the Bentonville road, making west, and struck the enemy. In following them up to find them, we barely got them enemy. In following them up to find them, we barely got them back over the road before we could plainly hear the enemy moving down the road to attack our right or rear.

down the road to attack our right or rear.

On returning to camp, Lt. Williamsons adjutant remaked that we had not struck or seen a picket on our whole right flank. This alarmed me, and I sought Gen. Curtis (then about 2 A. M.) and told him what I had done, where the enemy were, and that they would strike us on the right and in the rear; also that no pickets were out on our right, afterwards our left. Curtis evidently had other information as he did not seem to place much importance on the report. I went back to my camp.

About sunrise on March 7th, I received an order to

attend a conference at a church or school house some distance in my rear and between me and Elkhorn Tavern. I was so confident of the attack on our rear and right, that when I went to the conference, I gave orders to my command to break camp and follow me.

At the Conference I believe all but myself and Col. Jeff C. Davis were for retreating. I cannot say certainly about Osterhaus but it is my impression that it was thought best to get the Cross Timbers or Özark Mountain gorges in our front instead of ear. General Curtis had fixed to fight fronting Sugar Creek, but had no defense on his right, the vulnerable point which was all open. I told Gen. Curtis then that we had come there to fight; that it would never do for us to refuse, now that we had an opportunity; and that for him to retreat would ruin us, and him, especially in Iowa. I think Gen. Curtis intended to fight all the time, however. While we were discussing the question, Col. Boyd of the 24th Mo. Inft., who was at the Elkhorn Tavern, sent word that the enemy were driving in his pickets. That was then our rear. Curtis slipped out, saw my troops standing in the road, and asked whose they were. I said, "Mine." Col. Carr, who commanded the division, was present, and Curtis immediately ordered me to go to Elkhorn Tavern, where in a few moments, I was hotly engaged, and where I fought with varied

success, on the extreme right, all day.

At noon, I received order if I had to fall back, to retreat slowly, but sent back word that if I did, the day was lost; that I could and would hold my position -- and I did until

dark, when I had not a round of ammunition left.

I lost nearly one-third of my command in that position, and all of Price's army, about 12,000 strong, wasagainst Col. Carr's division. The 1st Brigade, Col. Vandever commanding, on my left, gave way about two hours before I retired, unknown to me, and when I fell back out of my position, the enemy were in my rear, and one battery on the new line established by Curtis that was playinginto the enmy, sent half of its shots into my rear. This drew my attention and I sent Lieutenant now General Williamson, towards the Elkhorn Tavern to see what the trouble was and where Carr was. He rode into a regiment of rebels who all fired at him, but failed to hit him. As I backed out the leading columns of the rebels pushed in behind me. They struck two or three of my wounded men, and stopped to question them, which gave me time to slip by and show a solid front. Curtis then came up, desiring to know what was the

I told him I was out of ammunition and had held the po sition two hours afterseverything else had left. He told me to charge back while he went to push Gen. Asboth, who had arrived, to charge back while he went to push Gen. Asboth, who had arrive down the road and retake Elkhorn Tavern. I said, "General, it (retaking Tlkhorn) cannot be done tonight. You have lost that point and the enemy occupies it with several batteries and all their forces." He, however, pushed down but the fire of the artillery was so hot that it immediately forced him to retire, Asboth being wounded in the arm. I charged across the field to my old position, the enemy retiring, but afterwards came back again to the 2nd line, Gen. Asboth failing to drive out the enemy on my left at the Tavern.

Gen. Curtis told me that Gen. Seigle was ordered aroun

Gen. Curtis told me that Gen. Seigle was ordered around to my aid at noon of that day, but he failed to come. Gen. Jeff C. Davis and Osterhaus fought on our left, or to the west, in the open country, and the enemy in their first dash carried everything before them to our trains. But the lost ground was soon recovered and Generals McIntosh and McCullouch were \*killed. Three companies of Col. Bussey's regiment got badly

cut up in a charge there. The next day I was ordered in reserve and took position behind Col. Jeff C. Davis' Division; Siegle who had not been in the fight up to that time, taking the left. Davis placed his troops behind a rail fence and we stood from 12 ogclock midnight till daylight shivering in the cold, without fires or food, exhausted and without sleep; while all of Siegle's troops, who were fresh, slept soundly. They got their breakfast leisurely and did not get into position before 7 A. M.

get into position before 7 A. M.

About 7 o'clock, the enemy opened a battery on our then right (The east) that enfiladed the rail fence and drove Davis'

troops back, directly over my men. This looked squally, and Curtis called me to him, just to the left of my command, where he was lying in the grass and waiting for Siegle to get into position and open. Gen. Carr had been to me before and said if worse came to worst, he should endeavor to get out with his regiment of cavalry, the 3rd Illino s. General Curtis asked me what we better do if we failed to drive them from our rear. We were then as we had been, surrounded on the north and west by the enemy. To the West was a broken country such that it was impossible to flank the enemy there. I answered, "Put my command impossible to flank the enemy there. I answered, "Put my comman at the head and we will cut out to the east towards Pineville; the enemy are certainly weak there for we hear nothing of them." Curtis answered that he would do it.

General Seigle soon moved, Col. Davis reformed and I left the reserve and went to the extreme right. We pressed forward and the moment we moved the enemy gave way. We lost a very few men that day. General Seigle followed the enemy to the north; I had orders to go to the East. We were all carying out our orders, and if I had kept on would have captured every piece of the enemy's artillery as it went off without any support. As it was, I took several prisoners and everything indicated a

rapid retreat of the enemy.

About two miles out on the White River road, I received an order from Gen. Curtis to immediately return, which astonished me, and the whole command. Upon returning, General Curtis said General Siegle had gone to Keitsville and had sent him that letter (exhibiting it) and he could not stop him. The letter was from Gen. Siegle advising General Gurtis to get back Where he was as General Van Dorn might recover. General Curtis said I was all that was left to hold the ground. I said, "If you go back, the enemy will re-occupy this place and claim a victory." General Curtis answered, "I am going forward, not backward." This is a great victory and Gen. Siegle must return." I occupied the battlefield and Pfice and his army escaped with most of his force, batteries and trains.

batteries and trains.

The secret of our victory as General Curtis always acknowledged to me, was th tenacity with which we held the ground on the second day, and the hard fighting on the left by Col. Davis who had about 3000 men, pitted against VanDorn's 12,000 men, and th fact that all of Generals McIntosh's and McCulloch's troops after the second days fight, when they were killed, ran off to Bentonsville, only one or two regiments making round to the Bentonsville, leaving Gen. Van Dorn the third day with rear **b6** join Price, leaving Gen. Van Dorn the third day with Price's men alone to whip an army, he had failed to move the day before with all his men. The third day the enemy's show of fight was for the purpose of getting off, nothing more. Gen. fight was for the purpose of getting off, nothing more. Gen. Price in his report—if you have it you will see, says he failed to accomplish the object of the move to the rear (which was a fatal one to them) from the fact that about 12 o'clock at night he one to them) from the fact that about 12 o'clock at night he struck the blockaded road at Little Cross Hollows and had no means to clear it also finding it blockaded he expected every moment in the night to run against our troops. He therefore moved carefully and the attack that should have been made at daylight (which would no doubt have been a surprise to us) was daylight till 8 o'clock. So you see what a little judicious work, done by us that night, saved.

General Halleck telegraphed to Washington to make ma a Brigadier General a very complimentary dispatch, and giving me credit for more than I was entitled to. However, I do say, that I worked hard, fought hard, and that my command that day saved I worked hard, fought hard, and that my command that day saved the field. Genera. Price states that he did not discover my weak force, which had been handled with consummate skill, until 4 P. M. when he moved up to crush me, but it was then too late."

I have seen so many false reports about this battle,

giving credit to Gen. Sigle and others, and as an Iowa General commanded us, I am desirous he should have credit for it. Whe at 12-o'clock at night on the and day, Generals Sielge and Asobht got Col. Bussey to go to Gen. Curtis to induce him to call a council of War or back out, General Curtis said he wanted no council; that his orders were out and he was going to fight it out on that ground. This Col. Bussey told me on my return to the field after the 2nd days' fight.

He informed me about 12 o'clock at night as I was going to Gen. Curtis' headquarters what efforts were being made, and I went directly to Gen. Curtis and told him that the troops that had been idle the day before should be gotten to the front to relive our troops that were exhausted. He said General Siegle should be up with his force, and that he was now on the ground. I told him it was not so, that General Siegle was in camp to our rear, and his men were sleeping. But Gen. Cutis would not order him to take position and then he told me that there had been efforts making for a council of War, and said his plans were all made. He should fight it out right where they were. I told him if he would bring into the fight early, General Siegle's command, nearly half his army, and force the fighting, the moral effect on our men and on the nemy would be great and wound win the day. "That is jurned what I am going to do," said the General.

But General Siegle was late getting into the fight on "That is just

the morning of the 3rd day, and the loss in his command (half of Curtis' Army, was nominal compared to that in the other two divi-

sions.

The secret of Gen. Curtis' reluctance to push up Gen. Siegle and the Germans to the same standard of discipline and promptness that he did the rest of his army, was that Gen. Siegle was first assigned to the command of that army which was organized at Rolla. General Siegle came, took command, and was suddenly relieved just as the campaign was about to commence. Half the army were Germans and the removal of en. Siegle caused great feeling; in fact, almost demoralization. General Curtis instead of putting his foot down like a true soldier, tried to conciliate by allowing them privileges that no other portion of the army got; thereby got the American troops down on him. The German commanders took this forbearance of General Curtis as fear of them, not its true meaning; and until after the Pea Ridge campaign Gen. Curtis did great injustice to part of his American commanders. The troops caught the comparint and it ran all through the command. The 9th lowa was bitter; the 4th would have been had I not taken strong ground in his support,

He afterwards apologized for assigning Gen. Carr to command the division in which I commanded, a brigade, while I ranked Gen. Carr. I was so intimate with Gen. Curtis that I should have taken any position he wished me to, and he requested me to take this, I think, doubting the propriety of his own.

decision.

At that Council of War, I learned a lesson that was valuable to me ever after. It was vacillating, had no mind, no nerve, no fight; and although I was in a great many critical places afterwards, when I wished I had a supermor and was often advised to call councils, yet the recollection of Pea Ridge Council of War kept me from it. Generals Grant, Sherman, McPherson nor no General that I ever was under ever called one. They often got together to advise about a movement after it had been ordered, but never to consider the propriety of the movement, the plan of a

campaign or wehther we better fight.

I was wounded in the side on the second day of the battle. It was a contusion, not a clean cut wound and while it swept me off my horse at the time, it did not seem to be serious. I think it came from the cutting off of a branch of a tree by a canon ball it came from the cutting off of a branch of a tree by a canon ball striking it but the doctors think it came from a shell. I did n appreciate how badly I was hurt until I was recalled to hold the field of battle of March 8th. When I got off of my horses, and the excitement was over, I fell right down into my boots and had the excitement was over, I fell right down into my boots and had to be carried to my tent. I remained on the field until March l6th when I was taken in an ambulance with other wounded men, among them Capt. Burton, and sent to St. Louis a very long tedious mide. ride. At Springfield we stopped a day or two and had our wounds dressed. We also stopped at Lebanon where I received a dispatch from General Halleck notifying me of my promotion to Brig. Gen. for services rendered in the battle of Pea Ridge.

after the Rise

When I met General Halleck in St. Louis, I told him that he expected to make a Brigadier General and have a vacancy but that I had fooled them on the vacancy.

From Lebanon, by easy stages, we reached Rolla where I took cars to St. Louis. At St. Louis, I saw the dispatch of Major T. J. McKenny, acting Adjutant General of Curtis' Staff, in which he says:

"Our victory is complete. We have been burying the dea ever dince the battle. Horrible sights meet the eye. The woods being on fire many of the wounded are burned to death. The Iowa Third Cavalry had seven scalped by the Indians. McCullock and McIntosh are dead without doubt. Gen. Slack is mortally wounded in the groin.

Col. Dodge of the Iowa 4th is a lion. The 4th and 9th fought like tigers. Heron is a prisoner. Many are dead, and any number wounded. Gen. Curtis cool and self-possessed."

Gen. Pike commanded a brigade of Indians, composed of the Chickasaw Battalton, Cooper's Choctaws, and Col. McIntosh's regiment of Greeks and Capt. Stand Watie's regiment of Cheorkees, about 2000 in number. These Indians had scalped about eighteen of our men, part of whom were in the Command of the 35th Illinois. General Curtis protested to General Price stating that a number of his men were found on the field scalped. General Price answered him stating that the Indians were used in the service against his protest and that they not only scalped our men but that they scalped his dead. He sympathized with the position Gen. Curtis took in the matter and said he would make known both of their opinions to the Confederate authorities.

I saw the Indians as they came up to attack the left of the 35th Illinois. At the time, I happened to have a section of battery that had just come up to me and I turned one of the guns upon them and high immediately fled, apparently panic-stricken. I don't think they were of any use on the battle-field. An Indian won't stand up and fight like the white soldier.

After arriving at St. Louis, I had my wound examined and it was found to be more severe than I expected and I was confined in St. Louis until June 1st, receiving a renewal of my leave of absence three times. During this time the 4th lowa Infantry was continually in correspondence with me. There was a good deal of contention in

the regiment to fill the vacancies. The Lieut. Colonel having resigned there was a vacancy of Colonel and Lt. Colonel. There was a good many meetings of the officers to fill these vacancies and a good many combinations among them. Capt. Griffith, Capt. Taylor, Capt. Hichols, Capt. Burton and Adjt. Williamson were at one time or another recommended for these offices. If I had been with the regiment, I should have recommended immediately a person to fill all vacancies without having any town-meetings held. I did not believe in that method, but I had been promoted and did not feel disposed to take any authority in the matter, although I wrote the Governor, but he desired the recommendation of the officers. Capt. Griffith who was a very efficient officer commanding Co. E. was very much dissatified and applied to General Curtis and got his company detailed from the regiment after Williamson was recommended and commissioned as Lt. Col. He appealed strongly to me and became an applicant as Captain of the 1st Iowa Battery. Knowing him to be a fine officer, I wrote Governor Kirkwood asking for his appointment and it was made and he filled the position with great deal of ability throughout the war.

Adjt. Williamson was made Lt. Col. for his brave action through the battles had drawn attention to him and overcome the prejudices they had against him as to his not being soldierly in his make-up and not being posted in the tactics of war. The regiment afterwards recommended Lt. Col. Williamson as Colonel and Capt. Nichols as Lt. Col. but for some reason the Governor declined to commission Lt. Nichols and appointed Lt. Col. Burton in his place. Captain Nichols was a fine officer but not very subordinate and I had hadconsiderable trouble with him. He had made a study of the tactics of war and was very critical of the officers who were faulty in their drill and movements. I think he sometimes criticised me but as I had had three or four years drill, it had no impression on me, but I think Nichols thought it was my action which kept him from the position. I simply endorsed the recommendation that the regiment sent in. If I had made the choice myself, I think I should have taken Furton or Kinsman.

After I left the regiment, it moved to Forsyth where they remained for some time. They were complaining all the time of being short of rations. They did not seem to have any one equal to Sheridan

for supplying them. They were also short on all kinds of clothing. They moved from Forsyth to Batesville during a very rainy season and the roads were very muddy but in their letters to me they described Batesville as a beautiful place on White river, where they received supplies by steamer and where, I think, they were encamped for a long time. Even after I had taken a new comma d, the regiment made application after application to be placed in my command but they never accomplished it. That would be taking a regiment out of one department and putting it in another, which hae Government would not do.

From Batesville, the regiment finally moved to Helena, reaching there on July 3rd and fr om the letters written me, they were in a deplorable condition, although their discipline seems to have been maintained. On reaching there, they made another effort to come to me. From nearly every officer in the regiment, I received letters very complimentary of the way I had handled them in the battle. I think those who had any feelings towards me or any criticisms to make, thought the way the regiment was handled in the Pea Ridge fight saved them from any unnecessary loss, although one-third of them fell. There were no prisoners taken and in their letters to me they all mentioned the fact that when they went off of the field, there were no stragglers and the regiment was in as good spirit as when it went on in the morning. I was certainly greatly pleased and satisfied with the way they fought on that day and I was amply repaid for all the time and work I had spent with them in putting them in a first-class condition. Their action on that field won das admiration and praise of everyone in Curtis' army, especially of General Curtis.

While I was in St. Louis, I endeavored to settle up, through my brother, my old firm debt brought about the dissolution of the firm of Baldwin & Dodge and of Baldwin, Pegram & Co. I did not think that good judgment had been used in closing out our matters. The fact that I had left to go into the service and the depression that came on account of the war caused the two partners, Baddwin & Pegram to sacrifice our trains and our stores so that it left us very heavily in debt and it was a continual struggle during all the time from '61 until Jualy in 1866 for us to settle up our debts and straighten out our affairs. I sent my brother considerable money which I had received for my services to do it. We turned over everything we had to our creditors and finally

Day!

settled with them, without leaving any of us any surplus whatever.

While I was in St. Louis, I received a great many letters from friends and officers all over the country, complimentary of our services in the field. I remember receiving a letter on June 16th from Capt. H.Z. Curtis, who was on General Curtis' staff in which he said he thought the hearly war was over and he wanted to get into the regular army.

The latter part of May I reported to the War Department that I was ready for duty and I received special order #114 from the War Department assinging me to the Department of the Missou ri with orders to report to Major General Halleck at Corinth, Missipsippi.

On July 1st, I left by rail for Cairo and June 3rd started for Corinth on the steamer Ed Walsh by way of the Tennessee River. I arrived at Pittsburg Landing at 9 P. M. on June 4th. I obtained transportation from there to Corinth, which was soon after the evacuation of Corinth by the rebel army. There were all kinds of reports then, that Pope had taken from ten to fifteen thousand prisoners, etc. One report came that Rich mond had been taken and that Memphis would fall. I role from Pittsburg Lan ding and passed through the different lines of entrenchments, both Union and Rebel. I was greatly astonished at the immense work that had been done by the army on its approach to Corinth.

When I reached Corinth and heard the views of the officers, the criticism of Halleck's methods of approach and that there was a large number of rebels in Corinth, I felt that a mistake had been made that General Pope's army should have been thrown on to the Mobile and Ohio Railroad, south of Corinth, cutting the communications, which Grant so strongely favored.

When I went to General Halleck's headquarters in Corinth, I met Captain Sheridan who had been with me in the Pea Ridge campaign. He was then acting as Quarter-master of Halleck's head-quarters. Not having General met Halleck, I asked Sheridan when it would be proper for me to call on him. It was then just about noon and Sheridan said, "You come in to Lunch with me and you will see him." I went in with him and Sheridan introduced me to Gen. Halleck, who greeted me very cordially and talked to me about the campaign under Curtis, and spoke highly of it and was very complimentary of the part I had taken in it. He was well posted on the whole matter. He was very severe, also, upon Siegle. I remember I thought when he was talking to me what I had said, that a great mistake

had been made, that Gen. Siegle was not relieved when Gen. Curtis was put in command but I made no answer. I discussed with him some of the points of the battle that he inquired about and he told me that the next morning he would give me my orders.

While I was here, there was a vacancy of Colonel in the 3rd Michigan Cavalry, made by the promotion of Col. Gordon Granger to Brigadier General. There was a movement among the officers to recommend Sheridan for the place. I remember I signed the petition. My recollection of the matter is not as clear as to the opposition that was said to be against it but General Augur who was then a Captain in that regiment and who was taking a prominent part in behalf of Sheridan, told me the circumstances afterwards. He said there was a division in the regiment and that it was brought about by some differences with its Colonel, Gordon Granger, and the Governor said he would never appoint another regular officer over it but they were so anxious to have Sheridan that he took the petition to Governor Blair, who was at that time at Pittsburg Landing, and prevailed upon the Governor to appoint Sheridan and he says that the Gov sat down on a pine box at the Landing and wrote out the appointment of When Sheridan reported to General Col. Sheridan and sent it back by him. Halleck concerning his promotion, General Halleck told him he could not accept it until he got permission from the War Department. regiment, which was then in Col. Ellio tt's brigade, was about to start on a trip though to the south and Sheridan was very anxious to join it, so Gen. Halleck waived the point he had made and allowed him to go and with Colonel's Shoulder.
his Captain's uniform, he obtained eastrap from Gordon Granger and went immediately to the command of the regiment and made his noted raid on Rienzi, where he had a fight and distinguished himself. He also took part in the operations south of Corinth, and for his services there he was soon made a Brigadier General.

The next morning I received my orders from General Halleck; was assigned to the command of a division with orders to report to Gen. Quimby at Columbus, Ky. This was a far better command than I had expected and I immediately told, Sheridan that I was indebted to him for so fine a command but he insisted that Gen. Halleck had made it on his pwn motion but no matter how much Sheridan protested, he could not make me believe it. I knew what good friends we had been in the Pea Ridge

campaign and I was satisfied that he had a hand in giving me a Division instead of a Brigade. It was a singular fact that while I happened to be there, Sheridan obtained the realization of the desire he had so often expressed to me when he was the Quarter master of the Army of the south-west, when he used to say he thought he could do something if he could get into the line and his ambition was to obtain a brigade command, and while he was assigned to a regiment, I was assigned to a Division. This was the beginning of his great career.

On July 8th, I left Corinth and at Pittsburg Landing boarded bhe steamer, Golden Era and started for Columbus, Kentucky. I arrived X there on July 9th. My division was immediately assigned to the duty of repairing the Mobile & Ohio railroad from Columbus south to Corinth. General Halleck was very anxious to have this line open so as to feed his army over it. I think when he assigned me to this work, he knew of my profession of Civil Engineer and had seen some of my operations in repairing and keeping up the road from St. Louis to Rolla and also of reairing the railroad from Rolla to the Gascanade River. I imme diately went over the road for about 64 miles and saw that I had quite a problem before me. Many of the bridges which were out were howtruss bridges crossing deep bayous where there did not seem to be a good foundation. The road bed had goown up in grass, telegraph lines were down, the water tanks gone and as far as I could see there was no tools or anything else applicable Bor building the road immediately. I saw that to replace any of the structures that had been in it, it would take a long time. I therefore made up my mind I would put in crib-piers and sink them in the bayous and use the iron rods that were in the Truss Bridge for Dowel pine to bolt them together. I found in my command, which consisted of about 8000 men, made up of the 1st Kansas, 12th and 15th Wisconsin, 62nd Illinois, 54th Illinois, 15th, 16th and 18th Regulars, 7th and 8th Wisconsin Batteries, 1st Kansas Battery, Co. G. & C. 2nd Illinois Light Artillery, 2nd and 6th Illinois commanding the 12" Wisconsin and 7th Kansas Cavalry, Col. George E. Bryant, who had been a classmate of mine in Norwich University and who was also a Civil Engineer. immediately called him in consultation with me and he toad me that his regiment was made up mostly of Wiscons Lumberman who were used to working in the timber. I sat down with him and made the plans for

Mar.

Insert Ry 59 (6)

When we had the bridges and road bed prepared we fitted up and repaired what locomotives and cars there were at Columbus. There were not sufficient to man the road so the Government sent additional ones and we had set up a small shop to make repairs As soon as we had the locomotive fitted, I undertook to go over a portion of the road with it but the weeds had so over grown the road bed that when crushed they greased the rails so badly we could make little progess until we got out and sanded the rails ahead. We had to rebuild the tracks over the spans over the large streams trussed stringersand after the War I was told and bayous with that the Mobile and Ohio Company when they undertook to take out the cribbed piers and put in truss bridges they had so much trouble that it caused them to use very harsh language. The way we had bolted them together they could not pull them apart by hand and had to use steam power to clear the streams. The crib settled to a foundation and to held firm; and the grade and alignment super a month held the large structure to grade. These Wisconsin axemen were so handy that their bridge piers and superstructure were good workmanship and strong and from this experience I organized to compare a pioneer corps that could put their hand to any construction and repair work needed during the War.

them into the timber to get out the logs, running them down the streams and putting in the cribs. I also called from my command a detail of every person who was a mechanic, or who had ever had anything to do with railroads and I was astonished at the number of men who came forward and the different vocations they were expert in, not only in the building of the road but in the running of the trains and I organized a very efficient force and they rebuilt this line from Columbus to Humboldt, 80 miles, so that on June 29th, I made a trip over the road in a hand-car to Corinth, which took me 48 hours. I rebuilt this road so rapidly that it astonished everyone and I was even astonished myself at how efficient these men, detailed from the regiment, were at anything I placed them at.

I remember one of the steamboats lying at Columbus, which had come there loaded with railroad material and ammunition, took fire. I happened to be in the ware-house near the boat. Everyone about there and about the boat were frightened on account of the ammunition but it was all in cases and in the forward of the boat. I thought we could save the boat and also the ammunition so I called on the soldiers to go aboard and take it off. They he sitated but I told them I would go aboard and watch while they took it off. When they saw me go aboard, a big crowd followed me. One of the boys said, "If you are willing to rick your life at it, we can risk ours." It did not take very long to unload the boat and before the fire reached the forward part, we had most of the ammunition unloaded. This action of mine, I think, gave the men a great deal of confidence in me for I heard a great deal of it afterwards.

On June 28th, I was assigned to the command of the Central Division of the Army of the Tennessee with head-quarters at Trenton, Tennessee. I sent a part of my command forward to Trenton to occupy the town before I went down there myself. The road which I had been building, had been very free from raids of the enemy, but a out the time I was completing it, their cavalry and guerrillas commenced making raids upon it. I got on an engine, with several of the enlisted men, to go to Trenton and to look over some of the work. It was just dark when we reached the station at Trenton. We got off of the engine

and started up town, expecting to meet some of my own command. One of the men who had been on the engine, went on ahead of us some ten or fifteen minutes and just as we were getting upfrom the depot towards the center of town, he came running back to me and said, "General, we must get out of here as the town is occupied by Confederate Cavalry." We turned around quickly, but quietly and backed our locomotive out of the town very quietly. They evidently did not discover us.

On July 1st, I moved my head-quarters to Trenton to a fine, deserted residence, surrounded by fine shrubbery, magnolia trees and I had hardly gotten settled here when I received word from fruit. General Halleck, through General Quimby, to move my division to Hickman and to take the river to Cairo and to proceed immediately This was a great surprise to me and I wondered what had caused it. Soon the news came that General McClelland had been whipped. I moved my divisions, 8000 strong with five batteries and learned that General Halleck was moving 25,000 of his troops north. I had only marched out about thirty miles when I received an order to halt, then to return to Trenton. , so it seems the order for the movement was countermanded. Trenton was sixty miles from Columbus and eighty miles from Corinth. After I finished the Rail, I commenced immediately to put up block houses and stockades at all the railroad stations and all the principal bridges. This work was mostly done by the 2nd Wisconsin reguent. They were all very neatly framed and put together and were a great credit to the workmanship of these troops. Later on whe n Forest made his celebrated raid and destroyed all the bridges between Grand Junction and Jackson, when they struck my first works at Humboldt, they were repulsed and the forces in the block houses were enabled to drive the enemy away. The troops at all these stations had orders wo stay in their works and fight, never to leave them, no matter how large a farce came to them, and that we would get troops to them as soon as the block house was attacked, but the enemy generally left before we reached them.

had, through General Quimby, been posted as to the work I had done on this line and the effectiveness of it in holding the points and prohibiting the distriction of the road mad he immediately issued an order complimenting the command and gave an order that all prominent

bridges and points of importance should be protected in the same manner and from that time on that was the usual practize throughout the war. I was very much pleased at the action of the troops and I found that a company in a block house could hold off a regiment and often two regiments, that it was impossible to drive them out or to capture them unless they used artillery against them, and, as a general thing, the Cavalry had no artillery with them.

While I was at Trenton, the 7th Kansas Cavalry was ardered fre Columbus and arrived to report to Corinth. As they marched down through the country, they gathered up the negroes and took them along with them, which at that time, was a violation of our orders. Halleck had ordered that "no negroes allowed withint his line unless they were strictly contraband, and that no negroes should be taken from his master or from the plantations." This view of the question did not suit the soldiers, but the commanding officers of the different posts were obliged to inforce it. The planters, all through that country, knew of Genl Hallecks's order and when the 7th Kansas took forcibly from them their negroes, they appealed directly to him. sent me an order at Trenton to arrest the Cavalry and strip it of all its negroes and send it forward. I received this order and as I had under me the 1st Kansas, commanded by Col. Dietzhler, I sent him out to deliver the order to the Colonel of the 7th Kansas. He halted them on the outskirts of the town and they refused to obey the order. came back to me and reported the Bact. I said to him, "You command a axraginant; ofou know what to do and this order must be obeyed and you must take the necessary steps to do it." Deitzhler was a good soldier and he said, "Very Well, I will do so" and he called out his Brigade and when the 7th Kansas saw that I meant business, they surrendered I had all the negroes turned into the public square. the negroes. The planters there then came forward and demanded of me to deliver their negroes to them. I said, "No, my orders did not require that; I only had to strip the Cavalry of them. " I said, "If you want them, go and get them." They would not follow the planters but scattered. When the 7th Kansas heard my orders, they were glad and

sent up cheer after cheer and they came to my headquarters and showed

their great appreciation of my acts. A great many of the officers

. .

had picked out these negroes for cooks, waiters, teamsters, etc. The 7th Kansas went on the next day and I think a great many of the negroes followed them; however, I never heard anything more of it. I reported to Gen. Quimby just exactly what I had done, that I had stripped the regiment of the negroes and sent the regiment forward but that I had declined to take the negroes and turn them over to the masters.

While in command here, Col. Hurst, a prominent West Tennessean, recruited a regiment of loyal tennesseeans and they rendezvoused at Trenton and were called the 1st Tennessee Cavalry. General Halleck sent up O. C. Ord, who afterwards became a distinguished General, to muster them in. I had Col. Hurst get his regiment together and put them in line for inspection at the deportat Trenton. A good many of the soldiers went down to see the ceremony of mustering them in. They were about the hardest looking crowd of men I ever saw. Poorly dressed, in fact, having on all kind of dresses. Col. Hurst had on a tally silk hat, a long coat with brass buttons. When I took, Ord to them, he said, "Do you expect me to muster in such a crowd as that? I said, "Yes." He went through the ceremony and while I was in West Tenn-Jessee the regiment served under me. Most of them had their homes through that country and I noticed when I sent out expeditions through that, that in the afternoon Col. Hurst's regiment would begin to grow less, until finally at night, he had hardly a company left; then they would gather in in the morning and catch us on the march. and by noon he would have a full regiment present. They had an intuition of where we would go. I said to Col. Hurst that if I got into a fight look, I hoped it would be about noon so as to have the service of his regiment. That regiment became quite a noted one and were very important to me because I detailed from it a great many scouts and spies who brought us valuable information from Confederate negative and confederate all during my the army. service in that part of the country.

ats-Rayao I Surrequiere

نجو : - با پر Trenton was a beautiful town, fine residences, plenty of shade, and magnolia tress, but the people, especially the women, were bitter seceshionists. The men of the town would congregate together every day in some shady spot and play marbles, old and young, they had nothing to do but to plot mischief and I don't wonder at their bringing about a rebellion.

There was a piano in every house and in the evenings they would play their choice southern songs such as "Bonnie Blue Rose," The Flag of One Start, ". The one thing uppermost in all their conversation was the negro question, what would become of their slaves.

During July, I received a great many letters from the 4th Iowa giving the condition of matters in that regiment. Captain Taylor, who was dissatisfied, mote me as follows:

Helena, Ark., July 17, 1862.

We arrived here day before yesterday, worn down by a long and wearisome march, made on half rations with scarcely any water, men nakedlalmost and covered with vermin. No troops have suffered more and been more harshly dealt with than this regiment, since y u left. It appears that we have no friends now to look after our interests. Instead of occupying the proud position we did when with you, we are "now so poor as none to do us reverence." I most heartily wish I was with my company, out of this regiment, if we have to remain in this army, but if they could be any influence exerted to get us away from it, would be hailed by delight by every man."

I also received a letter here from George M. Bailey, who afterwards was on my Staff. He was then an enlisted men in Co. F. of the 3rd Indiana Cavalry and was at Fredericksburg, Maryland. Lt. Golonel George C. Ford, Co. B. 4th Iowa, joined me as A.D.C.

On July 23, I received the following letter from Captain T. Il. McKinney of General Curtis' Staff:

Melena, Ark., July, 23, 1862.

"Here we are at last after a long and tedious march. On our way here we had skirmishing all along, and one that might be called a small sized fight. This occurred near a little place called Cotton Plant, and resulted in the complete defeat of the enemy, and it is stated in Col. Neney's official report that 120 of the enemy were killed (don't believe it) our loss was six killed and fifty-two wounded.

The stealing propensity of our army has increased 1000 fold since you left, and since our arrival so far south, our army has been considerably reinforced, but I doubt much whether they would fight as well as in the Pea Ridge army. Gen. Washburn of Wisconsin, is with us and has a brigade. Col. Bussey commands a brigade, he is now absent on a sick leave. The divisions are 1st Steel, 2nd Carr, 3rd, Osterhaus, Williamson is Colonel of the 4th, and English is here, but declines doing duty under Williamson. He is still ordnance Officer.

I went in command of a reconnoitering expedition 180 miles down the river, and within twenty-five miles of the Louisiana line. Had a small skirmish, killing two men. Destroyed some 100 crafts of different kinds. One locomotive some 70 or 80 guns, &c. &c.

There was a good deal of talk in the regiments about the elections in the north. John A. Kasson was nominated in my district for Congress against Daniel W. Finch, on the democratic ticket. The Democrats had taken a positive stand against the war and I was astonished that a man of Finch's standing and reputation would stand upon such a platform.

My battery, now the 2nd Iowa, was in General Asboth's division at Rienzi, Mississippi.

On July 11th, I wrote the following letter to my two little daughters, Lettie and Ella:

Trenton, Tenn. July 11, 1862.

I suppose you are romaing at home, and have full play for your free actions on the green near Grandma's house, while I am far away in Dixie, sweltering under a hot southern sun.

and sing the "bonny Blue Rose" and "My own sweet Maryland." They are toted around by negroes, little and big, and never without them for guides and guardians. They are called by them "Missus" and the little girls of ten show their authority over them in prompt, decisive orders. The little wooly headed negroes and pretty white girls romp, jump rope and play hoop together.

Apples are ripe and blackborries very nearly; I have both every day, and often think how my little Lettie and Ella would smuggle them out of my dish if they were here. Peaches too, will soon be ripe. The yards are full of shrubbery and flowers, but are

not tastefully arranged.

You must be good girls; obey Mother, and grandma and grandpa.

and endeavor to be little ladies with your playmates. Stand up for
the Red, White and Blue and tal them if you were boys you would be
in the fight too. A kiss to both, and good night.

Father.

On July 18th, General Halleck who had been called to Washington to take command of all the armies or to act as chief of staff to the President, called on me enboute there. He told me that I would note move from Tranton for a month or two and that our forces would lay quiet until September; howeve, er, he would not let me go home for a week; said my command was too important for me to leave it. He did not think much of the military plans against Richmond; maither does he think the Eastern armies need reinforcements. General Grant will take command of the district of Western Tennessee, not even giving him a department. General Halleck said if he remaine d in the East, he would endeavor to take some western officer there and indicated that I would be one of them. I recieved a long letter herefrom my father who at the request of Appleton's Encylcopeadiea had written up my biography and was asking me about some matters in relation to it. He had made a pretty full and pretty fulsome statement in relation to me.

No.

Several of the officers of the 4th Iowa had been given leaves of absence and were being assigned to other regiments. Captain Kinsman was recruiting the 23rd of which he afterwards became It. Colonel. He was an excellent officer but not very subordinate. He had been advanced ideas about how war should be made and generally wished to carry them out in accordance with his views instead of the orders of a superior officer; however, he was enthusiastic and very brave. I was laid up the latter part of July, and while sick, I received a letter from Brig. General J. F. Quimby, who was in command of the district of Columbia, in which my division was serving. The letter was as follows:

San G W Dodge

Brig. Gen. G. M. Dodge, Trenton, Tenn.

General:-

I am greatly pained to hear of your indisposition and sincerely hope you are not to have asiege of fever in addition to your sufficiently serious local trouble in the side. It would embarass me greatly to be deprived of your services at this time and public interests withint this district could not but suffer from such loss.

It seems as if rebelding were making a last desperate effort to retrieve its waning fortunes, and unless our own are commensurated with hers, we shall lose the ground that has been won by so much hard fighting, suffering and expense. The general order which you propose to issue, with some modifications, is approved and I hope it will leade to good results.

You have received a copy of Gen. Grant's special order. The day before I received your dispatch, I telegraphed him to issue such an order.

If you do not get better shortly suppose you come down here as my guest for a few days. We will take good care of you and the change can do no harm. I am, Very truly."

The excitement of the election had reached Tennessee and Hon.

W. H. Etherage who was running on the union side in West Tennessee, spoke at Trenton. There was a large crowd in attendance, especially of soldiers; however, he was serving the union side but was strongly opposed to freeing the slaves. Pres. Lincoln had sent George W. Boutwell of Mass. and Chas. A. Dana of New York on an inspection tour but really for the purpose of testing the sentiment of the officers and soldiers of the army on the negro question. They started from Cairo on a steamboat, stopped at the different points on the Mississippi river. When they reached Columbus, the principal officers in Gen. Quimby's command were called to Columbis to meet them. We went aboard the boat and Boutwell made a statement to us in relation to the negro question. It was not very definite. We could see that instead of giving their opinion, they wished ours. Gen. Quimby was called upon first as commander of the

May 1

District. As a regular army officer, he was very careful what he said. I could see that his sympathy was for the freeing of the slaves. I think I was called upon next. My views were very clear in the matter."I had already, in two or three orders, taken a position as to the rights of the freedom of the negroes and of their use in the army. I was then employing nearly 1000 of them on the railroad and in the camps and I remember I stated to the commission that I was sent into the army by Iowa for the purpose of putting down the rebellion and that I was anxious to do it and ready to utilize any policy or plan that would accomplish it; that I believed in using the negroes as much as possible for teamsters, in the Pioneer Corps for cooks, servants, &c. (the question of arming them had not yet come up) but I believed that they should be freed, as they were the mainstay then of the south, as they were raising the crops while all the citizens were in the army. I saw that my talk pleased both General Dana and Boutwell very much. All the other officers took the same position but not as strongly as I did. When Messrs. Dana and Boutwell returned to the East, Dana wrote me a letter asking me to put my views in writing. This I did and on August 12, 1862, I received the following letter from him:

New York, Aug. 12, 1862.

To Gen. Dodge:

Yours of the 2nd inst. addressed to me at Cairo, has today been safely received here. I thank you very cordially for the enclosure which contains everything that we desired.

C. E. Dana.

At this time I was receiving a good many letters from different officers on this question. One from Col. Williamson of the 4th Iowa who was a democrat when he entered the service, and is as follows:

Helena, Ark., July 29, 1862.

General Dodge: -

Immediately upon the receipt of yours of the 18th inst. I sent to Gen. Curtis a request for leave of absence for two days, stating the reason why I wanted to see you and urging him by every consideration to grant my request. Since then I have been waiting from day to day expecting to get an answer, but as yet have heard nothing.

I am almost afriad to trust myself to write you. I have been

day expecting to get an answer, but as yet have heard nothing.

I am almost afriad to trust myself to write you. I have been treated like a dog simply because I wont be worse than a hound, and pretend to be sick and cringe around the General's Head-quarters to get a leave of absence or cringe around for my rights, and those of the regiment. Vandever, with two wagons to a Co. and the 1 th and other regiments/ with God only knows who many, had all that they could do to perform the forced march to this point. Yet I am expected to do all, and more than they did with my little weak and starved

Sold Stranger

teams, and nobly did the men and officers of the 4th bear all, and came in camp in as good condition as any of them. It rained hard at Clarendon making the roads very heavy and I was compelled to burn my old tents, which you well know were not worth anything, and for doing so have been lectured by Gen. Curtis, who says that he had more transportation than he knew what to do with.

The General was at that time far in advance and it was with the utmost difficulty that Dr. Robbins and myself could carry our sick, while division and other quarter-masters had any amount of

transportation to haul whores and niggers.

Gan. Curtis has lost sight of everything except the negro, and devotes most of his time to freeing them upon their own statements. I have no doubt of the right the government has by its proper representatives to confiscate the negroes and other property of the rebels, but there are limits to which this power extends, and laws by which it is to be done, and I have some doubt as to whether the legal manner of doing it is to have an entire exporte examination, in which there is no party but the negro to be liberated. These negroes are well posted upon the story they must tell; posted by outsiders before they go in. The only idea a negro has of freedom, is freedom from work, and freedom to steal. They cannot be hired to work after getting their free papers. I have been trying to have some of them for teamsters (in accordance wit Gen. Curtis' order) but cannot to so with the Government quarter-masters feeding them.

The whole army had become lawless; having no regard or respect for the rights of persons or property. The lawless habit of taking everything was to some extent encouraged, and continued on the march on account of having short, or in fact no rations, but it is no better now when we have plenty than it was then, and all manner and kind of lawless thieving is done almost openly and goes unpunished. I am willing to go with and as far as you, and any and all other brave men, actuated by proper and just motives and principles to crash out and put down this rebellion, but I am not one of the number who believe that robbing houses of women's dresses, hoop skirts and bonnets is the proper way to put an end to this war. Men will hardly be turned from the error of their way or be made better Union men by this course. I came into the war for the purpose of trying to do something worthy of a man, and not of a petit larceny thief. According to the policy which is carried out in this army, all suffer alike from infancy to old age, the innocent and the guilty. My policy would be to make war upon men, take from them whatever we need, but take as men, and in the proper manner, and not in the manner of vandals and thieves.

We have not a great deal of sickness in the regiment now, but it is on the increase. We will be paid tomorrow to the 1st of July. Gen. Carr has been gone to Memphis for about a week. During his absence Wyman commands the division and I the 1st Brigade. Commanding a brigade, unless it is in an engagement, is a barren honor without a rank, and one for which I would not give a darn.

Since I have been in command of the Brigade, I have had more trouble with the first flying battery (a Dutch institution) than a Brig.

Generalship would be worth.

Never cease trying to get us with you. We want to go. Write to me often. If Gen. Curtis will let me go, I shall be up to see you."

At the same time, I also wrote to my brother giving my views of the negro question and what use I was making of them, which was dated at Trenton, Tennessee, August 3rd, and was as follows:

"I am quietly waiting for something to turn up. Doing a little fighting every day with the guerrillas. You seem to think negroes are never used; I have had over 1,000 at work for two months; they have been building block houses. Negroes go and come as they please, and there is no restraint upon them, but they are a nuisance in my command, it takes so much work to feed and care for them, and demoralizing to the army. Thousands are working up north. Within the last two weeks 3000 have passed through my lines. Slavery has gone up. I do not believe the owners care much about it. They have made up their minds they will be free, so let them go. Many loyal men are suffering to save their crops.

General Bragg and most of his army has gone to Chattanooga. If the north will fill up our old regiments it will be all right. The south press in every man, while our people in the north hold back. It is useless to wait for volunteers; drafting mustbe immediately resorted to, and the sconer you realize that fact and act upon it, the better. It is the height of folly to recruit new regiments before filling up the old ones. Three hundred men in an old regiment are worth a whole new regiment. The men in the field are all right if those at home will only show one half as much interest. A General has very little power; he is tied down by orders and must obey the or our army would be soon a mob. The one thing needed above all others is backbone in the Congress and at head quarters, and good advisers and one head to direct; then I have no fears of the result. I care nothing for these raids into Kentucky and Tennessee. If I had my way, I would not send a man to stop them, but keep my forces massed altogether; and move down in solid columns into the heart of the enem, 's country, and occupy their centres leaving just enough in the rear to protect our base of supplies and regiments, and cannot get them without drafting. General Halleck told me it was all wrong not to fill the old regiments up first; with them full we could move on the enemy any moment. Jeff Davis will have 800,000 men in the field by fall, and we must have 1,000,000."

I also wrote a letter to Governor Kirkwood, dated Trenton,

Tenn. August 4th, 1862, and which was as follows:

## Governor:

. si .) {

One word about the new entistments. Fill up the old regiments first. Everything now depands upon having a large experienced army in the field. You know all the advantages of this. It not only gives us a large army but an experienced one, and one ready at any moment to move with success upon the enemy. Keep our ranks full and we will give a good account of ourselves. Draft, if necessary, immediately. Do not let August pass without 1000 able-bodied men in every Iowa regiment and I will guarantee a good account for every command. Keep our ranks full; drive back the stragglers and our old and experienced officers will show them the enemy. Under the new policy comes renewed vigor and energy; new and successful blows struck within sixty days will add greatly to the effects and benefits arising from the late acts of Congress. It will bring thousands out of the ranks of the rebel army and will make loyal hundreds of thousands who are now afraid to declare their sentiments, but who finding us in earnest, will come out to save their property. These acts will fall harmless unless the enemy see we have the force and power to make them feel them. All here are anxious to go forward again. When new regiments are raised take old experienced officers for them, and for God's sake don't put in the skulkers and hang-backs that have gone home from sore toes, and a few bullets, but reward the men who, sick or well, have stood to their post, and returned to their duty as soon as they were able. These men need rewarding, and there it is due. Most of our poor officers have left; our good ones are in the field—let us keep them there.

Yours for the cause,

G. M. Dodge,

Brig. Gen. Comdg.

Immediately upon receipt of my letter, Gov. Kirkwood answered it saying that the War Department had issued an order prohibiting the appointment of soldiers in the field to the new regiments being enlisted. This was a very singular order to all of us in the army. We could not understand it because we thought that the officers who had shown themselves in the field in battle was able to be a field officer, would be of great benefit to any regiment coming into the field. We found that it was almost impossible to recruit men in the north for the old regiment where they went in as enlisted men and there was no opportunity for them being made officers, while the enlistments for the new regiments wen who were promised offices, made it a personal matter and with the XLieutenants and Sargewts soon raised the companies, while the officers we sent up to recruit for their own companies in the field invariably failed. This order of the War Department brought so many protests from the officers in the field that it was immediately changed so that the officers in my command who had been promised field offices in the new regiments, most of them obtained them.

At the same time I received a letter from Col. Marselles M. Crocker, a very efficient officer, in relation to the conditions in Iowa which was as follows:

Dear General:

Camp nearBolivar, Tenn. Aug. 23, 1862.

I have just received yours of the 21st inst. I am grateful to you for your prompt response to mine of the 15th. I have no news of any importance. We have had quite a union meeting here today, which was addressed by the "Grecian Orator," McClernand. They passed strong union resolutions, which in my opinion do not amount to much; I have very little faith in the efficiency of union meetings. I command the Iowa Brigade, composed of the 112th, 13th, 15th and 16th Iowa Vols. They are in fair health and spirits. If there is an enemy in the country, he is hard to find. I do not hear even of guerrillas. One regiment, the 16th, is off to Summerville, 22 miles west of this, hunting negroes, mules and other property

west of this, hunting negroes, mules and other property.

I have not heard much from Iowa. The little I have heard leads me to the belief that Kasson will beat Finch. Finch is personally very popular but he is identified with a set of politicians that always have been, and always will be the seath of him, politically. Finch is a clever fellow, a good neighbor and smart, but he has not any opinions of his own. He always selects an advisor and follows his directions—and that adviser is generally the most unsafe one that he

I received a letter a day or two since from Col. Williamson. He seems to be greatly disgusted with Gen. Curtis and the Arkansas campaign; by the way, it strikes me that the campaign has been a with his genius, no doubt.

Col. H. H. Trimble has been nominated for Judge of his judicial Dist. and the papers way was present and made a speech. How the devil can he get away from his reciment to figure at conven-

Now

tions? It is possible that he has brought his military glory to a

premature market.

The appointment of McKinney to a Colonelcy in one of the new regiments was announced in the Gate City, but Tuttle writes me that it was premature. I hope that the Governor will appoint him. He has appointed Dewey, of the 15th, Grabb of the 6th, and Stone. He could hardly have made worse appointments than Dowey and Crabb. Stone will make a good colonel.

Cal. Scott, who resigned and went home to run for Congress, in the 6th Dist. has been beaten in convention, by Judge Hubbard, of Sioux City. I wonder what he will do? It doesn't do for the

heroes to be in too great a hurry.

Let me hear from you when convenient. Your friend, M. M. Crocker.

In September I received a long letter from Peter A. Dey giving me the result of the meeting for the organization of the Union Pacific railroad and the authority given him to verify the explorations we had made as far as Salt Lake.

General Pope's great defeat in September caused great unrest and disappointment in the north. So much so that there was all kinds of prophecies of the defeat of our armies. It did not make any impression on us in the field in the West. We had now gotten used to receiving news of our defeats in the East but our continual success in the West made us hopeful and we were encouraged all the time, but the information that came down from the north was very pessimistic At the same time, there was being organized at Council Bluffs another regiment, the 29th Iowa Infantry to be commanded by Col. Thomas H. Benton, a banker of my town. It was rendezvoused at the foot of the lake north of town, near Mynster Springs and was named after me, Camp Dodge. The ground being low there, the camp was soon moved down to join Camp Kirkwood, where I had organized the 4th Iowa. It was remarkable what a response Iowa made to the calls upon her. She had raised up to this time 21,219 men and put them into the field while her quota was only 10570.

The discouraging news from the east of the battles there was creating a great deal of feeling among the loyal men which they feared in the election would cause the defeat of the Republican party. I was being appealed to by a great many men in the north to aid them in their election matters and to write letters. Non, John A. Kasson who was a member of Congress from my District wrote me on August 5 as follows:

Des Moines, Ia. Aug. 25, 1862. "I thank you a thousand times for your hearty words and acts of friendship. My principal regret is that you are not here in the district that I might have the benefit of your counsel and aid on the ground. But the Legislature has been convoked for the 3rd of Sept. when a bill will be passed to give the elctive franchise, to our soldiers in the camp and in the field. You can, therefore, probably do me great service by asking a few friends of the right stamp in the regiments, to interest themselves for me. So far as this district is concerned, the 4th Infantry will, I think, remember my interest and efforts for them in time past, and will be willing to vote. I hope other regiments, despising as they do, the Mahoney platform of rebel sympathy and kid-glove warfare, will sustain the administration candidates. The Douglas Democracy of Indianais coming up nobly to this issue, declaring against party spirit now, and for the Government, and against electing men to Congress to pull down the administration.

I also think that a letter from you to some friend on the slope to be published in the Nonpareil, speaking from a military point of view of the necessity of laying aside party spirit, and uniting the people as one man in supprto of the war, and of the administration, of the encouragement given to the enemy by divides counsels, and by supporting opposition candidates to weaken the administration, would do much good!

Mississippi River and wade their preparations to attack the forces

In Sept. Gens. Van Dorn and Price with their armiescrossed the

under Gen. Grant at Corinth and other places and preparatory to their movement they sent forward along our line of communication mounted infantry and cavalry which was annoying my railway line a great deal. I attacked these forces on the Hatchie and at Dyersburg and Brownsvill and Denmark and always with succe (ss. The detachments of my cavalry and infantry that I sent out after them were under able officers and they never hesitated when they came upto the enemy no matter how strong they were in attacking. General Grant, who had now come in command, took notice of these attacks of mine and their success and sent a long dispatch to General Halleck of Washington giving a list of my fights a and complimenting me upon it. I attacked Gen. Villipague who was in command of Gen. Van Dorn's advance forces on the Hatchie. He had about 2000 men with him and there was a severe fight but he was stopped in his movement north and retreated. I wrote my brother in relation to th*i*s and spoke of the fight at Denmark, telling him of our severe loss; also of the loss of two pieces of artillery which we had since retaken. We were hard pressed and had weakened our forces to aid Gen. Buel who was in a tight place. I knew if I was not reinforced, the enemy would break m'y railway. My forces fought no matter how great the odds were and we allowed no news to go out. I was well posted as to the movements of the enemy by my spies and scouts and knew if hard work and fighting would win we would be O.K.

On September 20th, the battle of Iuka was fought and on Sept.

23rd my forces fought with Jackson's cavalry force on the Tennessee river. My loss was 50; the enemy's, 75.

During the month of September, President Lincoln issued his proclamation freeing the slaves, which brought great encouragement to the army. It was received universally with great favor. Even those 7 who had been opposed to it and pessimistic about the results of it had changed their views and it was of immense benefit to the espiritd-ocrps of the whole army.

I had requested the war Department to appoint Captain W. H. Kinsman of the 4th Iowa as my A. A. G. but his receiving the appointment of Lt. Col. in the 23md Iowa Infantry, he declined. I then asked the appointment of George E. Spencer who had been with the 1st Neb. regiment and who formerly had been Secretary of the State Senate of Iowa. He came to me soon after and was a very efficient officer and remained with me until I appointed him Colonel of the 1st Alabama Calvary.

On September 28th, General Grant came up to Columbis and sent for me to come up and meet him. In this was my first interview with General Grant In the greeted me very cordially and spoke in complimentary terms of the work I had been doing and intimated that he was going to change my command but did not tell me what he was going to give me. On the next day he issued a special order, 206, assigning me to the command of the district of Columbus during the absence of General J. F. Quimby who had been sick for quite a long time and was going home to recuperate.

The enemy all along the front had now become very active and on October 1st I received a dispatch from General Grant to forward all my forces that I could spare to Corinth and I sent forward all my available forces; they took part in the battle of Corinth. I stripped the road from Columbus to Humboldt and all the troops from my command behaved remarkably well in the battle and I received the compliments of General Grant for my prompt action in the matter.

One of my command captured the diary of It. C. C. Labeau, Co. F. 42

Alabama, which gave a very graffic description of the battle of Corinth

Ta las

which is as follows:

"I went skirmishing at 7:30 and returned at 9:30 o'clock. Two of Capt. Fosters men were killed but none of ours. fired very fast and we replied; we got behind trees and logs and the way bullets did fly was unpleasant to see. I think 20 must have passed within a few feet of me humming prettily. Shells tore off large limbs and splinters struck my tree several times. could only move from tree to tree and bending low to the ground while moving Oh, how anxious I watched for the bursting of the shells when the heavy roar of the cannon proclaimed it coming. At 9:30 o'clock I had my skirmishers relieved by Capt. Rauses company; sent my men to their places and went behind a log with Major Furges. 10 o'clock--suddenly the fight fairly opened with heavy vollies of musketry and the doubly thundering cannon, this was on the right, in a few minutes the left went into action in splendid style. At 10: 15 o'clock <sup>C</sup>ol. Rogers came up by us only saying, Alabama forces. Our regiment arrived with the brigade all unmindful of shell or shot and moved forward, marching 250 yards and rising the crest of a hill the whome of Corinth with its immense fortifications burst up on our view. The U.S. flag was floating over the forts and in the town. We were now met by a perfect storm of grape, canister and cannon balls and Minnie Balls. Oh, God. I have never seen the like, the men fell like grass even here; giving one tremendous cheer we dashed to the bottom of the hill on which the fortifications are situated; here we found every foot of ground covered with large trees and brush cut down to impede our progress. Looking to the right I saw several brigades charging at the same time; what a sight was there. I saw men running at full speed stop suddenly and fall on their faces with their brains scattered all around; others with legs and arms cut off shrieking with agony; they fell left, behind and beside and within a few feet of me. I gave myself to God and got ahead of my company; the ground literally strewn with mangled corpses. One ball passed through my pants and they cut twigs right a at me, and it seemed that by holding out my hand I could have caught a dozen; they buzzed and hissed by me in all directions but I still pushed forward. I seemed to be marching right in the mouth of cannon for the air was filled with hurling grape and canister while ahead was one continual blaze. I rushed to the ditch of the fort right between some large cannon. I grappled into it and half way The enemy were only 3 or 4 feet from me on up the sloping walls. the other side but could not shoot us for fear of having their own heads blown off; our men were in the same predicament. Only 5 or 6 were on the wall and 30 or 40 in and around the ditch. Caberaby on the wal by my side. A man within 2 feet of me put his head cautiously up to shoot into the fort, but he suddenly dropped his musket and his brains were dasheddin a stream over my fine coat which I had in my arms and on my shirt sleeves. Several men killed here on top of another and rolled down the embankment ghastly heaps; this was done by a regiment of yankees coming about 4 yards on our left after finding us entirely cutt off and firing into us. Several of our men cried, "Put down the flag." and it was lowered or shot into the dithh. Oh; we were butchered like dogs, as we were not Some one placed a white handkerchief on Sergeant Buck's supported. musket and he took it to the post-hole, but the yankees snatched it off and took him prisoner. The men were falling 10 at a time; the ditch being full and finding that we had no chance, the survivors tried to save themselves as best they could. I was so far up I could not get off quickly. I do not remember seeing Gatesby after this but think he got off before. I trust in God he has. I and Capt. Foster started together and the air was literally filled with hissing balls. I got about 20 steps as quickly as I could about a dozen beinkilled in that direction; I fell down and scrambled behind a large stump; just then I saw poor Foster throw up his hands and saying, "Oh, my God!" jumped about 2 feet off the ground falling on his face; the top of his head seemed to cave in and the blood spurted I could see men falling as they attempted to up several feet. run, some with their heads to pieces and others with the blood streaming from their backs; it was horrible. One poor fellow lying almost on me told me his name and asked me to take his

pocket-book, if I escaped, and give it to his mother and tell her he died like a brave man. I asked him if he was a christian and told him to pray, which he did with the cannon thundering dealy accompaniment. Poor fellow! I forgot his request in the excitement; andtold nim to pray, which he did not accompaniment. Poor fellow! I forgot his request in the excitement his legs were literally cut to pieces. As our men retreated the enemy poured in their fire and I was barely 30 feet from the mouth of the cannon; Minnie balls filled the stump I was behind and the shells burst within 3 or 4 feet of me, one was so close that it stunned me and brunt my face with powder; the grape shot knocked large pieces off my stump gradually wearing it away; I endured the horrors of death here a half hour and concluded to resign myself and prayed. Our troops formed in line in the woods and myself and prayed. Our troops formed in line in the woods and advanced a second time to the charge with cheers but began firing whe about half way and I had to endure it all. I was feigning death; I was right between our own and the enemy's fire, in the first charge our men did not fire a gun but charged across the ditch and to the very mouth of the cannon with bhe bayonet, so also at the second charge but they fired. I thank God I am unhurt and I think it was a merciful Providence. Our troops charged by me when I Our troops charged by me when I seized a rifle and endeavorted to fire it several times but could not for the cap was bad. Our boys were shot down again like hogs and could not stand it and fell back each man for imself; then the same scene enacted as before; this time the yankees charged after them and as I had no chance at all and all around me were surrendering I was compelled to do so too as a man threatened to shoot me. have to give up my sword to him; he demanded my watch; also took it but I appealed to an officer and got it back. I had no means to defend myself and for the first time in years I cried to secour brave men slaughtered so and thought where Gatesby might be. I have never felt so in my life. It is now said that our brigade was never ordered to charge such a place and it was a mistake; if so it was a bad one. Being brought behind the works we found three regiments drawn up in line and all of them were fighting our 42nd Alabama alone. I helped to carry a wounded man to the depot with Lieut. Marshall, Lieut. Camdy and Lieut. Preston, they being the only unhurt officers who were prisoners from our regiment. We and the privates were soon marched to a large ware-house, having a partititon for the officers, the men about 400 being in the next room. YI heard firing again but I fear we can do nothing. We are treated very politely--more so than I expected. I have no clothes money or anything. Sergt. Saint, Thos. King and Sundlen are wounded prisoners from our company. Joe Bennington, Robinson, Supt. Buck, Frank Tacket, Gilbert Gasset and Sundlen. I dendeavored here to get out to the battle field to see about Gatesby. I am most distressed about him. This is the storming of Corinth. 15,000 men being 5 brigades charged in here; stirring sight, no description can convey a correct idea of the horrors. Our whole forces engaged were approximately 25,000 men; the enemy fully 20,000 basides enormous batteries of heavy artillery. Price was commanding our forces; Rosecrans the enemy. Our loss was about 1,500 killed, 1,5000 mounded and nearly 1000 prisoners making This is from my own observation and must be nearly 4000 loss. correct as I had good facilities afterwards of knowing. anxious for my parents to know something about me but I have no chance to get them information. At night we slept in an old dirty tent on the bare floor without covering and I suffered from cold. I have had nothing to eat and am really weak. Crowds assemble around to gaze at us, and we suffer in various ways. wounded I know of are prisoners. Our force's retreated about 3 o'clock pursued by the yankees. Gen. McArthur is pursuing Price and we hear various disheartening reports from the yankees but believe none of them.

Monday October 6th--Yesterday but one meal and that dinner; some fat pork and beans, crackers. After much trouble I got leave to go to the battle field with Lieut. Marshal to look for our dead and particularly to find something about Gatesby; we were escorted by two yankee offices. Right at our charging place (the redoubt the dead were piled in heaps; Catesby not there. I saw Col.

Rogers stripped, he was shot with 4 balls and Capt. Foster, his brains all on the ground. The stump I was behind is literally all cut to pieces by cannon shot and to within a few inches of my Some had the flesh shot off their bones and other limbs in little pieces. Those killed here were mostly from grape shot; the fire here was so terrible that hardly a man has less than 2 bullets in him and in many I counted 5 or 6. Oh, how relieved I was not to find Gatesby here, for now I believe him safe. On coming to our prisone I went through the very extensive hospital camps. I saw some of our men, Sergt. Cane wounded in the thigh. Dick Higely shot through from side to side; Capt. Krom through the thigh and many others from our regiment wounded. There are more of the yankees wounded than ours. Even the acting provost marshall (Welby) came and paroled us to the limits of the town. After taking an oath not to take up arms or assist the confederate States until duly exchanged, which werwere obliged to take any how. Some confederate cavalry came near here and frightened the yankees to death. We were much excited as we hoped our friends would rescue us, but it was all in vain. About 5, we went to report to Col. Buck commandi - the post, as our parole required it He told us to make ourselves easy and report at 9 o'clock tomorrow morning. They bring in a few more prisoners. Went to Hospital to see our wounded boys again. Gen. Moore of our brigade is a prisoner. He had his leg amputated today. All of the officers (33) reported to Col. Buck. He told us to report at 7 again. Out on battle field again; most of the dead buried; most of our dead were stripped and their pockets turned out. Our common bill of fare and the eternal impudent gazers. The women here are all righ and take every opportunity to speak to our officers but very sly about it.

Tuesday, Oct. 7. Reported at 7 when our names were taken. Gen. McKean is now commander of the Post. We have nothing to eat at all but fat bacon; sometimes with coffee. Capt. Page (yankee) asked me to walk with him to his quarters, which done he introduced me to his wife and another northern lady. He pressed a clean shirt to me so humanely that I could not refuse. I then walker with him to general hospital and lost him. There are many awful wounded men there. On reporting this morning a young lady came to her back door and bowed to me. I returned it and she said in a low voice: "We can look at you but dare not speak." This shows how the women are here. Afterwards I saw a girl about 12 years old. I asked her where she lived and she told me and asked me if we were secesh officers, and that she was glad to see a dog of our side of the house. They ankee officers show us every attention and me in particular. Evening. Major Homes and I went to see Gen. McKean (yankee) about what would be done with us. He is a very kind old man and said that we would be sent home he thought on parole. We walked around the suburbs and by the seminary and back to our mean quarters. Corinth is a pretty place and

Wednesday Oct. 8--Tolersbly clear. Another of our regiment, wednesday Oct. 8--Tolersbly clear. Another of our regiment, brought in a prisoner last evening. He saw Gatesby in the fight on Hatchie River in the morning and he thinks all right. I am delighted and feel easy now. Took a walk up Memphis and Charlestown R. R. and a very pretty girl spoke to me while I was talking with her father, Mr. Warsel. They are all strong southerners and Mr. Warsel told me that we had the place in our power on Saturday, as warsel told me that we had the place in our power on Saturday, as the yankees were flying before us and only needed one more effort. I went to his house with his daughter Mobly and had a splendid time. We exchanged rings for a short time. I kissed her little sisters, Sally and Amanda, they were so glad to see me and hated the yankees they said. I heard that we would leave Corinth at 3 o'clock tomorrow morning and so I bade them all boodbye and went to our Guard House."

While at Columbus, I received my first letter from General Sherman which was as follows:

Memphis, October 8, 1862.

General Dodge:

Thank you kindly for the sketch of news up to the 6th.
Rejoiced at the result. Rumors reach me of less favorable news about Bolivar, on Sunday last, but as it came through secession sources, I don't believe it. I can better judge of the shape events take in the interior by the bearing of the Secesh, and this does not indicate good news to them.

I sent a cavalry force yesterday out about 25 miles and

broke up a camp of the enemy completely; killing 4 and wounding

14 and taking prisoners, arms and horses.

We are all well here, and I think have things so shaped that when the time comes, we can saliy out and clear the way to Grenada.

Will always be much obliged for late news from Bolivar and thereabouts, as mine comes through spies and secession sourced, always unsatisfactory."

On August 8th, the 8th Indiana lands at Columbus on their way to Corinth. This was the regiment that fought under me at the battle of Pea Ridge. They came up to my headquarters and called on me and gave me three cheers, remembering our good work at Pea Ridge.

During my stay at Columbus, two steamboats laying at the dock and alongside of our warehouses, caught fire and threatened the destruction of not only the boats but the warehouses and the following is the account of the fire written at that time:

"This has been an exciting day here. Some rebel set fire This has been an exciting day here. Some rebel set fire to our Q. M. and ordnance boats with the intention to clean us out. You know, of course, it was difficult to get men to work against fire when they knew that the boats were loaded with shell and powder. I called out the infantry and drove the men to work at the point of the bayonet, all that I could find. Many cowards and all the citizens fled to the bush, but by good luck, I caught a thousand and the soldiers were heroes. The shell and loose shot burst and tore through us ripping and smashing cars and buildings, and for three hours the terrific explosion of shell was grand but very dangerous. The shell burst all around me. tore everything loose, but the The shell burst all around me, tore everything loose, but the men stuck to it and stores were saved. For three hours the artillery fire was tremendous; over a thousand burst but did not hurt but very few. I got hit a few times and got a wound in the left arm, but not bad enough to get a furlough on. I had to lead the men and stand by in the thickest, for they could see but little glory in such a fight. I am sorry to say that some officers behaved badly and sneaked off while others stood up like men. No one has any idea of such a thing; the missiles whissing around our heads and tearing through the buildings, and yet no enemy buttfire to fight."

On October 16th, I heard of the election of John A. Kasson, the representative from my district, by a majority of 1000 in the state and 700 majority in the army.

OnOctober 21st, I received another letter from General

Sherman congratulating me on the capture of Colonel Faulkner and his command at Island No. 10, which I had attacked and captured at the same time we captured some 1400 State troops and conscripts twenty-three miles West of New Madrid.

When General Quimby returned the latter part of October, he met General Grant and when he came to me he said that General Grant had told him that he was going to order both of us to his front. On October 24th, I received a dispatch from General Rawlins to report immeddately to Corinth and to relieve General Davies who was then commanding the 2nd division of the Army of the Tennessee. I was at Humboldt when I received this dispatch, away from my headquarters and where I had a force at work on the bailroad and its defenses. I was dressed in a working uniform, a soldier's blouse with my shoulder straps on it. The dispatch seemed to be so imperative that I hesitated about going back to my headquarters and get my staff and outfit or to go immediately but I made up my mind that I would go down on the next train to see what my command was and as the train came along, I got aboard. When we got to Jackson, which was General Grant's headquarters, General Rawlins came aboard the train, inquiring if I was on The conductor pointed me out and Colonel Rawlins came up and said that General Grant was on the platform and wished to speak to me. This was the first time I had met Colonel Rawlins. I was very poorly dressed and said that I did not think I was in proper condition to pay my respects to the General, but he answered me, laughingly and said, "Never mind that; we all know about you." When I got out on the platform, General Grant greeted me very cordially and I saw that he was no better dressed than I was, which greatly relieved me. General Grant said, "I have assigned you to the command of the 2nd Division of the Army of the Tennessee and I want you to understand that you are not going their to command a division of Cowards." At that time I knew nothing about the friction at Corinth and was rather nonplused at what he said and did not

Na/

hardly know what reply to make but I thanked him for the appointment and got on the train and went to Corinth. There I was informed of the friction that existed between General Grant and General Rosecrans and I also discovered that General Rosecrans, in his report had denounced General Davies division as a division of cowards because they had been driven back in the battle of Corinth into the town, although they held their line and the town. I came to investigate, I found that the division had done most of the fighting the first day and had behaved splendidly. General Davies had made a very strong protest against General Rosecran's report and General Grant had requested it to be changed. Rosecrans, upon investigation, changed the report, giving the division credit for what they had done and stated that he had made the criticism of the division on the report of a staff officer; however this did not cure the feeling in the division or amon g the officers General Grant considered that after the Battle, General Rosecrans had not followed up the enemy as promptly and efficiently as he ought to have and General McPherson, Ord, Logan and others, who had taken part in the fights at Iuka and Corinth, were very bitter on General Rosecrans and had appealed to General Coant to relieve Rosecrans from the command. Grant declined to do this. They then appealed to Mrs. Grant who was then with the General at Jackson. Mrs. Grant told me after the war that she sympathized greatly with these officers but Ulysses, as she called him; said that General Rosecrans had fought a great battle and won it and no matter what feeling he might have in relation to it, or to him, he could not relieve him, but she said that a day or two after her talk with him. Ulysses came out of his tent with a dispatch in his hand and twirling it in the air said, "Julia, it is settled alright", and he read her the dispatch relieving General Rosecrans of the command at Corinth and giving him the command of the Army of the Cumberland, which was a great promotion. In commenting upon this promotion General Grant said that in all probability, as an Army commander

Elina La

he would do better than as a subordinate because as a subordinate he did not respond to orders or to the views of a superior officer as Grant thought he ought to. The friction between Generals Grant and Rosecrans continued throughout the War. I never knew General Grant to make any statement or show any disposition to call it up again, but the fact that he relieved him at Chattanooga was a bitter disappointment to General Rosecrans. After General Rosecrans had left the army and was a member of Congress, he took occasion, on the floor of the house to make a very bitter, uncalled for attack upon General Grant, which fell flat, although General Grant never made any comment or response to it.

Under the order of General C. S. Hamilton, who was then in command of the district of Corinth, I assumed command of the And division of the Army of the Tennessee on October 30, 1862.

General Grant had commenced his movement after Price south towards Holly Springs to meet the Confederate army that was said to be concentrated at that place. General Stanley McArthur's and Quimby's divisions went to him from Corinth, leaving my command alone with one company of cavalry and a brigade of artillery to garrison Corinth.

The district of Corinth was commanded by General Charles S. Hamilton with headquarters at Grand Junction. He wrote me that General Grant intended to relieve me at Corinth and send me to take Stanley's division, Stanley going to Kentucky.

The officers of the divisions made great complaint against General Rosecrans' plans and strategy of the battle of Corinth.

They claimed that he got demoralized at the battle and ordered the depots to be burned, fearing the enemy might capture them. He could plan and move armies with great effect but when it came to small bodies he got excited and tried to control mindetails. They also complained that he did not believe that the enemy intended to attack Corinth until the night of the 3rd and he would not concentrate his divisions

until then.

In looking over the ground, the first position taken by our troops in the battle three and one-half miles out of town, is where he should have thrown his whole army instead of the 2nd division It is at the old rebel works and is a splendid position and Stanley been there on the morning of the 3rd, Price and Van Dorn would have been defeated. The 2nd division which he criticised so severely fought this first attack alone and successfully but with great loss. After a battle it was very easy to say what should have been done but much more difficult to anticipate those things before the battel. There is no doubt but what General Rosecrans' criticism of the 2nd division is wrong and angered General Grant because it was the division he had organized at Cairo, had made its first fight under him at Donelson and the division that charged the works and carried the line of intrenchments at Donelson and the 2nd Iowa, of the division, had blaze on its banners, by order of General Grant, "First at Donelson. I found it a division of veterans, ably officered and it served under me from the time I took command until August 19, 1864, and never took a step backward. It was a portion of this division, tinder Corse, that fought and won the battle of Altoona and saved all of Sherman's stores.

The election in the north came off on November 7th and was very disappointing to the north and also to the army.

At Corinth I found detachments of a great many commands, a portion of which had been captured at Shiloh, among them the Sth, 12th and 14th Iowa, which had been organized into a regimentand called the Union Brigade. There was great discontent among them; they were without proper officers and with the aid of Governor Kirkwood, I got permission to send them north to recruit and remain until the rest of their command could join them.

I received a letter from Senator Grimes inquiring particularly as to the conditions of our army and also inquiring about Gen. Grant and i wrote the a very long letter, going into detail about the conditions and giving him the armies view of Gen. Grant, which was unanimous in favor of him; they considered him the best commander they had ever been

Maria

under, and I complained of the treatment Gen. Grant was receiving from the War Department. He had been placed in the command of the District of the West Tennessee with about 50,000 men to take care of that country, which, under General Halleck, it was considered necessary to have over 100,000 men for and with this small force, General Grant had maintained his lines of communication, had fought and won the battles of Corinth and Iuka and was at that time moving against Price and Pemberton, who were known to be superior in force to General Grant. General Grant later told me that this was the most anxious time of his service.

When Grimes received this letter, he was so pleased with it that he immediately gave it to Forney, the Editor of the Philadelphia Press, who printed it and it received quite a large circulation.

All this time I was expecting to join Gen. Grant and command a Division in his army. General Quimby, who visited me, told me that this was to be done, but I soon received a letter from General Grant stating that he should leave me in command of the District of Corinth; that it was a more important command than a division in the field: as it held his flank. He also said that he left me there because he knew I would stay, which was an indication to me that he expectedme to stay no matter what force came against me. Gen. Grant feared that General Brggg would detach a force from his Army when he moved south and try to cut his communications on the Mississippi River and that it was necessary for a large force to be posted near the Tennessee so as to be ready to attack any force that attempted to cross, because any such movement as that would have to destroy or force to retreat any force located at Corinth.

The fortifications aroundCorint had been built for a large army, forty or fifty thousand men, and I saw immediately that it would be necessary to concentrate the lines so that a force of eight or ten thousand men could hold any force that would, in all probability be sent against it; therefore, we connected the principle batteries that had been constructed before the battle of Corinth and drew in all the lines and built additional forts on all sides of the town, inclosing the store houses and the railroad station and made a very strong fortification.

Jag.

and contrabands
The troops worked continuously on this fortification for several months
before it was fully completed.

The movement of General Grant south made all of the Confederate Cavalry very active and their objective point was the Mobile and Ohio Railroad. In his movement, General Grant sent Col. Dickey with a brigade of Cavalry across to the Mobile and Ohio railroad and I moved a force of 2500 down that road to Saltillio to help him destroy it. This raid was successful.

Col. Roddy, with a small command was lying to the East of me, across Bear Creek and on December 18th, General Forest crossed the Tennessee river with about 5000 men and threatened Jackson, north of me, endeavoring to take that place. At the same time, General Grant notified me that General Jackson with a Confederate force was moving north from in front of his command, evidently with a view of striking Jackson.

men to attack Col. Roddy on Bear Creek. Col. Sweeney attacked Col. Roddy's advance at Bear Creek, followed him to Cane Creek, where Col. Roddy with his men, a body consisting of about 2400 men and four pieces of artillery, took up a strong post, but after some resistance, were forced to abandon it. A fight was kept up between this and little Bear Creek, across which, the bridge had been burned. Col. Sweeney, however, succeeded in getting his infantry across when he attacked and captured Roddy's camp, securing a lot of garrison, fommissafy and quarter-master's stores. In twenty-four hours, this force marched thirty-six miles, fought a battle that lasted six hours and drove the enemy twelve miles.

On December 18th, I received an order from General Grant to go immediately with what force I could take from Corinth and to take command of the troops near Forrest; attack him wherever he was. I moved out of Corinth with the 1st Brigade under Col. Sweeney, composed of the 2nd, 7th and 52nd Illinois; the 3rd brigade under Col. M. M. Bane composed of the 7th, 50th and 57th Illinois with two batteries of the First Missouri Artillery and the 5th Ohio, and struck directly north for Lexington, Tenn. with a view of getting into Gen. Forrest's rear.

In the meantime, General Sullivan, at Jackson, Tenn. had sent forward the advance of his force to meet Forest and the Ohio Brigade commanded by Col. J. W. Fuller, consisting of the 37th, 39th and 63rd Ohio Infantry.

I divided my force and sent a portion of it to the Tennessee River to destroy all means of crossing and follow Forest directly north. When I reached Lexington, I found that he had fled toward Trenton. The advance force of General Sullivan's troops, met him West of Jackson but were defeated; then the Ohio Brigade, under Col. Fuller came up at Rome Cross Roads and attacked Forest with great energy. After a battle which lasted some two or three hours with considerable loss on both sides, they defeated Forest, capturing a great mumber of his force and Forest retreated to the north towards Trenton. The defeat of Forest at Rome Cross Roads by Fuller, stopped the raid on the railroad. He re-crossed the Tennessee river without any further damage to us. This is the first time, as far as I know, that Forest had been met and defeated. His plan of attacking any force after h im, was to attack on the flank with a small force, then in the rear and endeavor to get them to make details for these temporary or false attacks and after he had accomplished this, he would attack the main body and was generally successful in defeating any force that went after him. I issued an order to pay no attention to these flank and rear attacks but to hold their force together and attack in a body and Col. Fuller, who was a very competent officer, followed this policy and while Forest made every effort with this kind of an attack to demoralize them, he found it was impossible and was obliged to flee.

When I assumed command at Corinth, I immediately, under the instructions of General Grant, made arrangements for sending spies into the confederate lines, utilizing some of those that I had used at Trenton; and at Glumbus I arranged with several union southern men, who went into the lines and remained there and gave us very valuable information. As the records show, I was in thehabit of sending

Va V

this information, almost daily, to General Grant. General Grant had requested me to get as much information as possible f4om the south and the East towards Tennessee and on December 234rd, some two locomotive engineers and an enlisted man that had been taken prisoner came up from Mobile and brought us very valuable information which I sent to General Grant in this dispatch:

"They both escaped by running away with an engine, on plea of examining the damage done by us to the railroad. They left Mobile Tuesday night, and he says there was a large fleet off Mobile and that great consternation existed as only two regiments of Infantry remained in Mobile, Gen. Forrey having joined Frice with the other forces. The three weeks they transported to Pemberton 18,000 men and were two weeks doing it. They came from Chattanooga to Mobile. Both agree in the statement as to time and numbers. Since that time no troops have gone that way except conscripts, though they have been expecting more every day. The talk in Columbus was that Bragg's army was coming, but he could get no foundation for it except rumor. For a week past. He has been transporting the machinery of the Arsenal at Columbus to Selma and Montgomery; also a part to Georgia. The same has gone over the road from Jackson to Grenada. He says Pemberton's force does not exceed 40,000 men and that your advance has created great excitement. The troops from Mobile to thisplace are two companies of Infantry at Meridian and Bartolf's Cavalry at West Point. They were going to move to Okolona. At Columbus there are no troops. At Marion, f ur miles above Meridian all the stock of the Memphis & Charleston R. R. is laid up, and when Van Dorn advanced on Corinth, they employed a large number of engineers, expecting to resume operation of the road.

He also gives full statement of the vessels in Mobile Harbor; their armament and especially of the Florida which run in there some time ago. He says he has been on her and had offered him the place of 4th Assistant Engineer; that she has shipped two crews, expecting shortly to run the blockade, one crew being for a ship in England. She is not an iron-clad, but has about a foot of pressed cotton between her inner and outer hull."

On January 1, 1863, I received this letter from my uncle, Mr. J. M. Phillips, showing the anxecty of the loyal men of the north: Council Bluff's, Ia. Jan. 1, 1863.

"It is a long time since I have heard from you but still every movement of yours is of great interest to me. It seems as though this war would never come to a close, but still I am loth to give up the Old Ship, but it seems as though it leaked badly at the present time; by the papers, it looks as though you were getting in close corners; but I have no fears for you, but if they will give you men and means, that you will come out all right. What do you think of things? Have we got to kill them all off before they will give up? If so, let us have men enough, and those we can put confidence in, and put the thing through, if it takes every man between 18 and 45 to do it.

If they draft me, I shall try to get in one of your companies so as to see you. Think I could fight pretty well at t is time, or

at least would do my best to put down the rebellion.

I had employed a large number of men in the secret service which required a large expenditure of money and there was no proviig( sion by the War Department to furnish us with this money and in com-. municating with General Grant in relation to this matter on January 3rd, I tol him that I had seized a large amount of cottonand sold it at public sale and the funds taken and accounted for on proper return, I had used for the secret service. The Quarter Master Department being unable to furnish me funds, and it being indispensable to have them at this place, a large number of men being employed in the service, many of them men who will not give vouchers that are to go through several hands and publicly given, thus making known their name and business. The money is disbursed under my direct supervision, and the vouchers retained by me to be forwarded at the proper time.

The raid of Forest on the Mobile and Ohio Railroad, north of Jackson had stopped its operations. This road was the only line over which I received my supplies at Corinth. There was a good deal of delay in repairing this road and I therefo e had to bring my supplies for the command up the Tennessee river, the  $m{y}$  being convoyed by the navy bp small gun boats and landed at Pittsburg Landing from where I transported them by team some fifteen miles to Corinth. General Roddy's force lay near our landing and I knew he was watching for an opportunity to tackle my trains. The gunboats on the Tennessee it

were very effective in destroying boats and keeping the enemy from crossing the river and all the time I was in command at Cor nth, we were continually operating together and in perfect harmony. I always found the navy ready and anxious to aid in any movement I undertook.

The enemy seemed to be very active on the south of Corinth and there were a good many reports coming to us in regard to their movements. I sent Col. Mersey with his brigade south some sixty miles on a reconnoissance trying to develope the force, if there was any force there, but whatever force there was fell back rapidly showing the reports were mostly exaggerated. He brought back with him a copy of the Southern Republic of Columbus, Miss., which had the following in relation to the slave question:

"Our slaves:- We have seen for a long time a disposition on the part of our slaves to be more independent, and to exercise a disposition to do as they please. We wish to call attention to this matter and to warn their owners, that they must keep a more strict watch upon them. They are running about at all hours of the day or night, while many have already left for parts unknown. They are getting lazy and shiftless, and we know many that have left good homes, where they were hired, because they had to get up in the morning an hour before day, and they would not stand it, and hteir masters and mistresses sustained them in it. If this course is pursued long, they would not only ruin their slaves but thems elves.

Now, if ever, in such times as we are passing through, a strong curb should be put upon our slave population and if it is not done the owners will be alone to blame for any evil which may arise from a lack of discipline. We believe that some have been tampered with, but we can as yet trace it to no source. We call attention to this, because we consider it a duty, and hope our warning will be heeded."

We were receiving a great many reports from members of the lest Alabama Cavalry that General Roddy, in command, was forcing their families, killing them and committing all kinds of depredations and under the plea of making an exchange of prisoners, I sent a flag of truce to General Roddy with this letter:

Corinth, Jan. 17, 1863.

"I herewith send by hand of one of your men, a list of prisoners in my hands, whom I desire to exchange for any men of this command in your hands. If it meets your approbation please return the men whom you exchange under flag of truce, to Glendale, with the exchange papers signed, and I will deliver the prisoners in my hands by Flag

at that place.

It is represented to me that your command has been burning the houses and turning out the families of Alabamians who have enlisted in the U. S. Service. I desire to know if this is done by your order or by your sanction. They also report the hanging of one Union man, whose sons are in this army, and the shooting of others, for no other reason than their sentiments. Southern families are fleeing to these lines for protection from these cruelties and depredations, some of whom I find do not sympathise with our cause, but are driven out merely upon suspicion, or because some relative has joined this army. If you propose to drive out of your line all Union men and their families, I desire to know the fact."

General Roddy answered me that his forces had been engaged in none of these depredations but my letter had some influence in stopping the depredations for a time. It was evident to me that the enemy were closing in around Corinth for some purpose and I was very anxious to move out and attack them and wrote to Major General Hamilton, in whose command I was, that a large body of Infantry and cavalry had lately been concentrated at Columbus and were repairing the railroad to Baldwin and that the 2nd Tennessee, and the 4th, 23rd and 26th Mississippi had lately gone over the Mobile & Ohio Railroad from the east and that General Bragg had sent to Col. Roddy three regiments of Infantry and one more battery, giving him a respectable force, and  $\mathcal I$ proposes to move out and attack them. To do this, I would have to move in some of the brigades that I had distributed along the Memphis and Charleston Railroad to protect it and they were not willing that I should do this. General Grant was pressing General Pemberton and had nearly reached Grenada when General Earl Van Dorn, in command of all the Confederate cavalry moving around his left into his rear and captured Holly Springs with all the stores for General Crant's army. Col. Murphy, who commanded that post, surrendered without hardly a fight. It was a disgraceful surrender. This forced General Grant to retreat and to fall back again to Memphis, and he says that the fact that his army moving from Grenada to Memphis was able to live off of that sparsely settled and cultivated country taught him a lesson that if he had that experience before the loss of Holly Springs, he would never have retreated but would have kept right on to Vicksburg and have carried out the original plans for Gen. Sherman to go by boat down the Mississippi and up the Yazoo river to the rear of Vicksburg, where Gen. Grant was to meet him with his land force. In all probability that plan would have been successful and the capture of Vicksburg accomplished. General Grant says this was a great lesson to him that was of great benefit ever after in the war.

Gen. Van Dorn moved north towards Jackson and I prepared immediately to move out to attack him but he was checked on the Hatchee and retreated.

I had written a letter to Senator Grimes in relation to the attacks of the northern Copperhead Press upon the army and objected to

arresting of men in the north on treasonable charges, where they were tried and generally released. On January 21st Senator Grimes wrote me the following letter:

"Yours of the 12th is received. The matter of which you complain is certainly very permicious and annoying. The question is whether we shall not increase and aggravate the evil merely by attempting to suppress it by ordinary means more than by letting it alone. I do not want to see another performance like that of Mahony, carried out, viz; arresting a miserable devil and then discharging him without punishment or indictment, so that he may wear a crown of martyrdom in place of the fool's cap which best becomes him.

I would suggest, however, you officers have a rememdy in your own hands; exclude those traitorous prints from your lines, and punish every man who brings them into your camps or military districts.

There are loyal men enough at home to take care of all the trait As to the pernicious influence in your army, you are ors at home. surely competent to counteract it if you use the power which is indisputably in your hands.

Yours truly, J. W. Grimes."

The rebels still contiued their outrages against the Union men of the northern part of Alabama and I made an official appeal through General Hamilton to the War Department in relation ot it. The letter was as follows:-

I have the honor to submit a statement of a few of the outrages committed upon citizens of Alabama by the confederate troops. While all the leaders from the President down are boasting of their carrying on this war in accordance with the laws that govern mations, in such cases, and are charging upon our troops ald kinds of depredations and outrages, I think a few simple facts must put them to blush, and make these parties, and our press and people who are seconding the efforts of Davis, to cast stigma upon us, ashamed of work they are doing.

I will merely state what I know to be true. Abe Canada and Mr. Mitchell were hung two weeks ago, for being Union men; they lived in the Hacklebor settlement, Marion Co., Alabama. Mr. Hallwerk and daughter, of same county were both shot for same cause, the latter instantly killed, the former is yet alive but will probably die. Peter Lewis and three of his neighbors were hunted down by 100 bloodhounds and captured,

The houses of Messrs. Palmer, Wesley, Williams and the three Wightmans, and some 30 others, were burnt over their heads, the women and children turned out of doors, and the community notified that if they allowed them to go into other houses, or fed or harbored them in any manner, that they would be served the same. Mr. Peterson, living at the head of Bull Mountain, was shot, etc. I am now feeding some 100 of these families, who with their women and children, some grey haired old men, and even cripples on crutches were driven out, and made their way here through the woods and by ways, without food or shelter.

All this was done for the simple reason that they were Union

men, or that they had brothers or relatives in our army.

The statements of these people are almost beyond belief, did we not have the evidence before us.

I am informed by them that there are hundreds of loyal men and women in the woods of Alabama, waiting for an opportunity to escape.

This letter was given to the press and had a very large circulation in the East and was used as an answer to the many charges that the confederates made of the action of our troops in their country. Aththe battle of Chickasaw Bayou, General Thayer's Brigade, of which the 4th Iowa was a part, made the principle attack there. It was a very gallant one and gave great credit to my old regiment, the 4th Iowa. Colonel Williamson sent me the following account of the

part they took in the battle. He says: "You have heard many exaggerated accounts of the battle of Chickasaw Bayou and the part taken in The facts were bad enough, God knows! it by the 4th Iova. being under fire all day until 3 c'clock, I received an order to charge the enemy's in renchments lying in the face of a battery that was emplanted about them. I had never seen the ground over which I was to pass or were any directions given as to the exact point where I was to make the attack. I was only told to go forward and that I would be supported by other regiments. We went forward at a double-quick, General Thayer at my side. After getting under the enemy's fire, we ran right against a narrow, deep swamp that could only be crossed by the flank, which I was compelled to do with a direct fine in front, with a cross fire from the batteries on the right and left. As soon as the head of the column passed, we fixed to the right and came forward into line. We were then between the enemy's battery and were thus exposed until we gained the first line of intrenchments and carried Here the discovery was made that we were not supported, when General Thayer ordered me to retreat, but I saw it was certain destruction to a large part of the regiment to fall back and I said to him that I would hold the position I then had until reinforcements came up but no support coming we had to fall back. When I got back, I found that the 30th Iowa which was to have followed, had been ordered to the support of a command on the right and the balance of the regiments which were to follow, were resting in the timber. We had apparently been forgotten, and General Morgan who had command of the division had halted the rest of the brigade. There was gross mismanagement some The loss of the regiment was 7 killed and 105 wounded."

In General Thayer's report, he pays this tribute to the regiment:

"The conduct of the noble 4th Iowa infantry both officers and men throughout this terrible ordeal, is worthy of the highest priase. They pressed steadily and forcibly forward; there was no flinching; they entered the enemy's works in splendid style. Col. Williamson marched at the head of his column and by his coolness and heroic courage won my unquialified admiration. He was struck by three balls but not severely wounded and remained on the field the balance of the day."

General Grant in a general order authorized the 4th Iowa, for their bravery in this charge to place upon its benners, "First At Chickasaw Bayou."

From the refugees which had come into Corinth from northern Alabama, there had been recruited three or four companies of cavalry and by authority of the War Department, I had organized them into the 1st Alabama Cavalry, at the head of which I placed my Chief of Staff, George E. Spencer as Colonel, Cameron as Lt. Col. and Adjutant George L. Godfreyof the 2nd Iowa infantry as Major. This regiment was of great service to me on account of the knowledge they had of the country and a number of them and their relatives had acted as scouts or spies.

\*\* 23 m

The discontent in the north still continued and on February 3rd, I received the following letter from the Hon. John A. Kasson in relation to it:

Washington, Feb. 3, 1863.

"My heart is full of the thoughts which your letter suggests, I am powerless. The administration undoubtedly lacks efficiency but without change in the cabinet, I know of no way to improve it. This the President seems unwilling to make. Stanton is not adequate to the Far Department, but the President does not seem willing to remove him. There is also great dissatisfaction with halleck.

There is also great dissatisfaction with halleck.

I think this party reactionary movement in the north is transient.

It is the swinging back of the pendulum of the clock, and it will swing back again, after a little. Every soldier writing home should make his voice heard against these cowardly traitors firing at the backs of our troops."

In answer to his suggestion that every soldier writing home should make his voice heard, I wrote the following letter to Caleb Baldwin at Council Bluffs, Iowa:

Corinth, Miss., Feb. 5, 1863.

"This army corps is in excellent condition and ready for the heavy

work not far ahead of us. I have a large command now, and an important one, with fights enough to suit any one. If things looked as bright in our rear as they do in our front, we should have no cause to complain, but we cannot divine or see the policy ruling loyal men in the north just now. I do hope no more men will be cast into prison to be let loose to howl, without either charge, indictment or trial. Is it possible that when victory is in our reach we are to be sold out and disgraced? What are we coming to, and what can this army think, when we see leading men in the north spend days, weeks and even months denouncing this war, this army, and bolstering up the enemy in every conceivable way. Their entire stock of denunciation comes from the fact that some rebel's negro will fire a shot in defense of our cause, our country and flag. They have not one word to say in favor or defense of the best, bravest and most united army the world ever saw, who have fought battle after batte, and have retained vvery foot of ground they have won, and who today have their base in the very center of the enemy's country -- not one word against all the barbarities used against us, although negroes and Indians have shot at us on almost every field, and are today in all their ranks. Nor have they one tear to shed for the thousands of brave, noble men who have fallen in support of a government the northern traitors would turn over to rebels, to the disgrace and ruin of twenty millions of people. Not one word do they utter in Varor of the men who have stood up for years, and fought battle after battle against a foe who have met us with a savage ferocity and cruelty hardly excelled by the cannibals, and who today say to every officer in this army-Should you chance to fall into our hands, we will hand you over to a community to be dealt with, that are today chasing their own citizens into their army, or out of their lines with Our soldiers see and hear all this, and say -- Is it blood-hounds. possible that just now, when, by a combined effort, with the moral suppossible dist just now, when, by a combined effort, with the moral support that we have a right to expect from the north, and when we are on the eve of crushing out this rebellion which is tottering and tumbling from its own iniquitous weight, that these traitors at home will come and prop it up, and give it such aid and comfort, that two hundred thousand more lives must be lost before it falls?

I say it unhesitatingly and the voice of the army will support it, if it was not for the aid the rebels receive, and that promised from the north, connected with the traitorous effort to demoralize, disorganize, and break up our army, the rebellion would be done for

in one year. These men in the north have promised the rebels if they will hold

took Twindle hours! Tal!

out three months longer, that they will so divide the north, and draw such support from the army, that we will agree to any peace the rebels may dictate; and on that agreement the rebels are today dragging men into their army by chains -- conscripting every one, old and yough that is not on crutches, to meet our armies moving south; and these traitors North are carrying out their part of the agreement by sowing distrust, dissatisfaction, and dissention in our army, to the best of their ability, and openly declare it shall not be filled up; in fact telling us we can go on until we get so weak that the rebels can crush us. They send through the rebel lines the Chicago Times, Cincinnati Enquirer, and other treasonable sheets, which are extensvely copied from in their "Orders", and by their press to keep up the waning spirits of their people, and a soldier cannot go out of our lines into theirs, but what some treasonable article copied from Northern papers is flirted in his face to prove their ultimate success. It was only a few days ago that one of their officers, high in command near here, said that to divide th North was their last and only hopethat there was a perfect understanding with these northern traitors, and even said to the Missouri soldiers when they returned home the north would treat them with more respect than they would the "Lincoln hordes." and when asked by the loyal man, if the Southern men or press should uphold the Union cause, as this Northern press upholds theirs, What would be done, he answered, "Why hang, them of We don't allow any Union sentiments in our lines."

Is it a wonder this army sends up a cry of indignation and demands that open treason shall not take possession of their homes and they shall not be disgraced by acts committed by those left behind? There is a pent up volcano down here, and no matter what our fate, I know what prejudices and what determination the army will carry back against these men, and if they knew how carefully every treasonable letter written here from the orth is circulated and laid up for future settlement, they would send it to a different market from the army.

The different tunes they sing on the "negro--Constittuion Administration and the War- no matter how plausible or what olly tongue puts them forth, they do not weight a feather against the principles that nature has instilled into the loyal soldier, and which rebel bullets have made doubly dear. They may influence a coward, or a soldier forced into the army against his will, or one who will get out at all hazards, but that noble band who flocked to our colors, and have stood by them through many a battle, and can count his com

rades' graves in a dozen rebel states, they pass by like the wind. Thank God they have not as yet moved us one iota- nothing but chagrin and indignation has gone forth from the soldiers. I hope it will cause the instigators of it to stoe and think.

If you wantyour spirit arounsed, come down here and listen to this devilish cry from the north and see how the army feels over it. Notice the resolutions passed by the Illinois officers. meeting was composed of nearly every officer of the Illinois regiments here and was led by prominent Democrats. The hearty endorsement the resolutions received from the soldiers and all, would astonish you. It will not do to meet these man with the charge they are soldiersmachines, and do the bidding of Lincoln. They obey military orders, but when it comes to civil policy, they are as outspoken as any one.

We want

A conscript las.

2.

A Law defining Treason.
Better discipline, and the endorcement of sentences of death on deserters.

A general raking of the north for deserters; their return and punishment.

No promotions; no appointment except of officers who have their hearts in the war.

And, lastly, every man who is living off of the Government, should be made to support the war by word and action. If he will not, and is luke-warm from fear of the copperheads, have him removed, and put a disabled soldier in his place, who has a rebel bullet

not lette

in his body, and you will have a war man.

If we are to be a divided North, for God's sake, don't feed, support and uphold men by Government influence and money, who are opposed to us. I am in earnest in this matter and do not want to go home disgraced by a set of men who were always traitors, but only now allowed to spit it out."

extensive circulation, both in the East and the West. Honorable Wendell Phillips of Massachusetts read it to a large audience in Mechanics Hall in Salem, Massachusetts and I received a great many letters from people all over the country com ending me for writing it. The officers and soldiers in the different commands took up the same question and held meetings and each State passed resolutions. The lowareficers, at their meeting on February 7th passed the following resolutions:

"Whereas, the Iowa officers at the garrison of Corinth, have noticed with deep regret, a disposition to embarrass the Government in its attempt to suppress this rebellion, on the part of its citizens, and whereas, we are deeply and solemnly impressed that it is the duty of this generation to establish beyond a doubt the authority of our

Government; and, Whereas, We have embarked in this struggle for that purpose;

be it therefore

Resolved, That the sacrifices we have made to suppress this most causeless and wicked rebellion, have had the effect of endearing the Government to us, and at this moment we love the unity of our nation and the honor of our flag with an ardor and enthusiasm never felt before and no party prejudices, affinities or considerations can alienate us from our Government;

Resolved, That we are in favor of prosecuting the war with increased energy and force until there shall not be an armed traitor

to dispute the rightful authority of the Government.

Resolved, That we witness with intense delight the constancy and patriotism of the great body of the people of our State as manifested by their unflinching devotion to the Government during this unparalleled struggle for national existence

Resolved, That knowing the heart of lows as truly royal, we regret to be compelled to acknowledge that there are traitors upon its soil, and that we hold in greater contempt a cowardly traitor in our rear than we do a manly foe in our front, who dares to meet us on the battlefield. That it is the duty of all loyal men to avoid and despise all enemies to our Government, as our fore-fathers did Benedict Arnold.

Resolved, That in this crisis there can be but two classes of men, "Patriots and Traitors," and as defenders of our flag and country, we will now and hereafter refuse to support, sustain, or fellowship with any man, who, in this great struggle, is not emphatically and truly royal.

Resolved, "That the course taken by the Dubuque Herald, Keokuk Constitution, Davenport Democrat and News, and other kindred and minor sheets, throughout the State, meets with our ungualified and disappobation, and we denounce their teachings as disloyal and revolutionary in their tendencies.

Val.

No. Company

Resolved that we regard the teachings of the so called Peace Men of Iowa as not tending to stop the war, but only to prolong it, and that we will hold them responsible for the lives of all loyal soldiers sacrificed by reason of such disloyal conduct.

The meeting was largeand enthusiastic, and was addressed by Col.'s Weaver, Rice, Cummings, Col. Bane of the 50th Illinois and others.

A. D. Davis, Capt. Co. A. 2dn Iowa.

Chairman,

- G. L. Godfrey, Adjt. 2nd Iowa.
- C. C. Tichenor, Adjt. 39th Iowa. Secretaries,

that were closing in around me and General Grant, who had increased my cavalry forces, wired me asking if it was not possible for me to drive Roddy's forces north of the Tennessee. I sent an expedition under Coll Phillips im ediately to do this and the following is General Grant's dispatch to the War Department. "General Dodge's forces, under Col. Phillips drove General Roddy to East side of the Tennessee river capturing all his train a consiting of 20 mule teams, 200 head of cattle, 600 head of sheep, 100 head of horses and mules, destroyed the factories and mills which had been used largely to supply the rebel armies."

On February 13th, General M. M. Crocker who was with General Grant's army rote me that he had been urging General Grant to bring my command to his army. General Crocker wrote that General Grant had replied: "Dodge is a good man for any place but he could not be spared from Corinth."

nomination of General Heron to a Major Generalship. He was a Jr. Brig. General and they thought that I should be prototed before him. I was also Senior to him. They consulted with General Grant in relation to the matter, telling him that they thought the Major Generalship should have been given to me. I had taken no part in this and knew nothing about it until the letter was received from General Gracker, telling me that General Grant had told them that when they urged my promotion, it would be alright very soon.

General Van Dorn's large cavalry force, which had been in the front of General Grant before he retired to Memphis, had been ordered to join General Bragg. My spies discovered this and I made it known to General Rosecrans and sent my cavalry under Col. Cornyn of the

10th Missouri Cavalry who had joined me and was a very effictient officer. He fell on General Van Dorn's rear at Tuscumbia. He captured 200 prisoners and one piece of artillery, stores, arms, &c. On February 24th, I received from a woman meesenger, the wife of one of the 1st Alabama Cavalry, the report of the spies stationed in that vicinity showing the enemy's forces at Mobile, Meridian and Jackson and I sent the following dispatch to General Grant giving the information in those reports:

1st. No troops have come to Gen. Pemberton's army since Smith's 10,000 joined him about Christmas.

2nd. All troops from Mobile up that road, and from Grenada have gone to Vicksburg and Port Hudson, leaving a few thousand at Mobile some six thousand at Meridian, and ten regiments at Jackson; and about three regiments of militia at Grenanda. A portion that left Grenada are posted on Black River.

Everything in the shape of cavalry, even to the partisan rangers as low down as Port Hudson, joined Van Dorn in his move to Tennessee; leaving perhaps a regiment or two north of Grenada, a few

at Okalona and a few companies just south of me.

Everything in the shape of government property has been taken away from the country bordering the Yazoo and adjacent streams, and at all prominent points such as Jackson, Grenada, Columbus, &c. At Jackson the foundries are running, and a cotton mill or two, and perhaps a government shoe and clothing shop/ but every preparation is being made to take them away. West Mississippi is being entirely attributed of stock provided and conditions and the stock provided and conditions are stocked and conditions are stocked as a stocked as a stocked and conditions are stocked as a sto stripped of stock, provisions and forage, &c. and everything indicates that they are getting ready for a quick move

In the last ten days, some 3 000 negroes have been pressed and

put to work at Columbus, Miss., and one or two points near Meridian, while the great stock of cars and engines at Meridian are being taken east and south. It appears to be the opinion of the s couts that the enemy are making perparations to take up the line of the Tom bigbee, for the next position; and say that it is openly talked there, that gunboats will go up the Big Blakk, where their army will have to take position to save Selma and Mobile.

The trains go loaded from Vicksburg daily with sick and discharged soldiers; they say that they average twelve cars a day.

Last week a heavy steam boat engine and the prow to a ram went
up the road to Jackson, said to be placed in some boat on the Yazoo.

Deserters and conscripts are flocking into my lines daily, and

so far as the above stations are concerned, they corroborate them. The raking of the whole state of Mississippi for stock and provisions is as vigorously carried on as it was by Bragg in Tennessee. Van Dorn took about 8000 mounted men, and two batteries away with him. He is now at Columbia, Tenn. with Wheeler and Forest. Bragg has taken everything that is movable and this army does not really need, south of the Tennessee. He has put the R. R. in order from Decatur to Tuscumbia-bought up all the corn in the valley, and got ready to move it by cars to Dedatur and by boat to Bridgeport just as I struck Tuscumbia; my forces are on their way to Decatur now which will stop that game."

The defenses of Corinth had become so nearly completed that I considered them impregnable against any force the enemy would be liable to send against it. It was an entirely different state of defenses from that of October when the Battle of Corinth was fought. There were but few of the native inhabitants remaining in Corinth, most

95

service

the store houses were used by the military. A good many of them had been taken down in the line of fortifications. The troops had settled down for the winter and showed a great deal of ingentiaty in the construction of their winter quarters. They had made low stockades on the top of which they had placed their tents; have a giving them comfortable quarters. At the back end of the stockade they erected chimneys of all sizes and descriptions thus making small out villages, Laid up in regular order with regular streets which were kept thoroughly policed. They had sunk wells so that they had plenty of water and the post was in such a condition that I could now leave a small command in it and mobilize my forces for any and expedition I wished to make.

The secret reports that I was sending to General Grant had to pass through my superior of ficers but they were sent in Cipher to Memphis and then down the river to wherever his head-quarters were. General Hurlbut, the commander of the 16th Army Corps at Momphis, demanded that I should give him a full account of these scouts who they were, where they were located, etc. He also ordered that I should return my vouchers through him. This, of course, was fatal epemy's to the service. No man would dare serve in ide of the lines, if his name was known; they would soon be known by the rebels and they would be killed. It was necessary, therefore, in order to save their lives, that no one should have any knowledge of them. General Grant did not inquire in relation to any of them. I wrote a letter to Ganeral Hulrbut explaining this but it was not satisfactory and he still insisted upon my sending in vouchers. I then appealed to General Grant and he immediately instructed that these reports of scouts and spies should be made directly to him, but when they were of interest to any other command to also make a report to them.

and he issued the following orders to me. "The provost martial in your ditrict will turn over to you all moneys collected by them under existing orders, take your receipt there fore which they will forward to the provost Martial in statlement of their account in lieu of money and which you will account for as secret service funds; any additional funds you may require can be obtained by requisition on the Provost Martial General at my headugarters. All sales of cotton confiscated should be made by Capt. Eddy at Memphis Tennessee and properly accounted for by him."

beer plerie

The Chiefest of ear

This order relieved me from any farther interference. I had then nearly 100 scouts and spies. The scouts were organized under a 2nd Iowa soldier who had shown himself very efficient, Captain Harrison. The spies in the lines were mostly southern people or and first West Tenn. Cavarry. There were some of the 2nd Iowa and members of the 1st Alabama. enmy's the 7th Kansas who remained in the lines. Their policy was never to come out but to communicate with us through negroes or messengers, often through the families of the 1st Alabama and 1st Western Tennessee Cavalry.  $/\!\!/$  They had all been thoroughly instructed to be careful about over estimating forces. (The great trouble with all our information from the enemy was that it was greatly exaggerated; they were taught to count companies, regiments, brigades, divisions and how to tell the commands and where troops were moving on trains, they were taught to estimate the number that could go in a car and in this way, as the time went on, they became empert and their reports were found to be very accurate. There were a great many ways of checking them up and when a person would see a company, in the beginning of the war and call it a regiment, or a regiment a brigade, they got down to the real numbers of the troops they saw moving, so that when I received their reports I could tell almost for certain the truthfulness of them and General Grant depended almost entirely upon me for this kind of information. No one at my headquarters knew the names of the spies in the snemies' lines. They all knew, of course, they were there, but I alone had their names, and at the headquarters they went by number, so that I never mentioned one of their names. Their reports had to go into cipher at my headquarters so that the men there knew that I had the spies in my employ. Then the company of scouts that were around my headquarters, were thought by many people to be the ones on whom I denThe scout's pended entirely for information. They were brave men who took their lives in their hands and would go inside the lines, but goverall as confolerate scrats, sometimes dressed in Confederate uniforms but they were not the men we relied upon for accurate information of the movements of the enemy's troops.

On March 4th, I received letters from one of the spies in Alabama and also from a Confederate officer who had been confined in the Atlanta prison on charges of high treason. He made his escape on the 7th of February and came to my line. He reported.81 of our efficers confined there, among them, General Willich, Col. Williams, Lt. Stewart, 2nd Ind. Cavalry, Lt. Col. Shcaker, 32d Infty. Lt. Col. Dunn, Lt. Col. 42d Ills., Maj. Warren 5th Kans, etc. There are no troops on the railroad from Atlanta to Chattanooga, and only about five hundred at Atlanta. At this place they have signonths provisions on hand for the entire western army.

At Mobile there are about 5000 men under Buckner; in the building Harbor, five iron clad gun-boats, two wooden gun-boats and two building.

In Charleston harbor they have three iron-clads and two floating batteries, with two other iron-clads waiting for the machinery which was in the Princess Royal and epattred by our fleet.

In Savannah three iron-clads or rams. On the Yazoo river, they have one powerful ram, which they are pushing to completion, the prow and engine came up from Mobile."

On March 25th, Lt. Gill Reader of the 1st Kansas Infantry, who had been detailed as an A.D.C. on my staff, at his own request, was relieved to return to his regiment.

On April 30th, I received a letter from General Wood who enemy's was in co mand of the forces on Bear Creek and he said they were holding that line strongly. He said if we executed some prisoners which we held as spies, he would retaliate. He sent me a very drastic letter which, as follows:

Corinth, Apr. 3, 1863.

"Your communication of April 1st, by flag of truce, arrived at my lines today; and in answer I have to say that James Neil is held by us as a prisoner of war, and treated as such. How you obtained such information I am unable to surmise, as there is no foundation in fact for it. Your threat to hang two men for one is given its proper weight. Our Government never hangs men without good and sufficient cause (I wish I could say the same of yours) and when it decides upon hanging men the threats of Confederate officers count nothing.

We have no fears of the old story of retaliation."

General Hamilton who was in command of the left wing of the 16th Army Corps, of which the district of Corinth was a part, objected very much to the appointment of Major Gen, J. B. McPherson to the command of the 17th A. C. and he visited General Grant and on April 1st wrote me the following letter:

Memphis, April 1, 1863.

"I have received your letter on my return from Vicksburg. My impression is you had better stay where you are. It is by no means improbable that Vicksburg will yet have to be taken by an advance from Corinth down the M. & O. R. R. I have resigned my commission as Maj. Gen. and start for home today. It is brought about my family reasons, and because I was assigned to a division when Mc Pherson, my junior, is in command of a corps. I am entitled to the corps by rank and by services, he had no claim to it whatever.

Everything at Vicksburg is just where it was three months since. Every plan has failed and something new must be tried."

His resignation was accepted and General Oglesby was assigned to his command. I had urged upon General Grant a movement up the Tennessee valley for the purpose of destroying the supplies that I knew were being accumulated there for Bragg's Army and also to drive out the large force that was concentrating there under Genls. Roddy and Wood but General Grant had made er response to my request until Gen. Rosecrans applied to General Hurlbut for a movemen up the Tennessee Valley to protect a raid that he proposed to make with Col. Straight with a mounted force 2000 strong, land at East Port and move through northern Alabama to Georgia to destroy the enemey's communication. As soon as General Grant was notified of this, he then authorized the movement I had suggested up the Tennessee valley and on April 4th I submitted my plans of the campaign to General Hurlbut. When General Oglesby relieved General Hamilton, I was just starting on this campaign. In order to ascertain exactly what forces there were in the Tennessee Valley, I had planned to reach Tuscumbia with a flagk of truce with letter addressed to Gen. Roddy in relation to prisoners that we had and also of the treatment of union citizens and I placed it in the hands of Capt. George E. Spencer, who was my chief of staff (a very ingeniou officer) with instructions to go through to Tuscumbia as soon as possible. This he very successfully accomplished and brought me a report of every command there was in the valley and on Apr. 13th I wrote a

letter to General Oglesby setting forth what this movement was and the troops I had to meet. The letter is as follows:

. . .

Corinth, April 13, 1863.

Gen. Oglesby:

I suppose you were apprised of the proposed movements in connection with Gen. Rosecrans. It was planned some time ago, when but a few troops were at Tuscumbia. Now we shall meet about 6000 of the enemy and eleven pieces of artillery. It is agreed that Rosecrans shall have a force at Eastport, by steam, of 1500 men, while I join with five or six thousand, and that we attack the enemy at Tusc mbia and Florence defeat them, and then rush a column of cavalry to Decatur, and into Georgia to cut the railroad. Rosecrans' Cavalry is to go to Georgia white I hold line of Tennessee River. They are to return through the mountains to this place. At the same time a movement will be made south, by Gen. Hurlbut, and also one in front of Rosecrans.

Matters and forces have so changed since the plan was formed that a part of it may be impossible. The enemy are moving continually towards Rosecrans' right, and also on to my left, and have made extensive arrangements for crossing the Tennessee river. I have placed scouts on their telegraph and railroad lines, and they will cut and destroy as far as they can. This may disconcert them. I also propose to fall upon the force at Bear Creek, take their out-posts and secure the crossings. They no doubt will make a determinate stand on both, Little and Bear Creek. If everything works well I shall have the line of Big Bear tomorrow. I take 4000 infantry, 1500 mounted infantry and cavalry, and twelve pieces of artillery."

When I moved out on this campaign, my advance was led by Col. Cornyn in command of a brigade of Cavalry. I had to live mostly off of the country and when the reached Iuka to live mostly

order to the citizens:

"Edict #2. Camp Cross April 16, 1863.

The citizens of Iuka, loyal and disloyal will furnish forthwith cornbread for the patriotic heros of this command. This order will be obeyed immediately as the heroes are hungry. Florence M. Cornyn."

This campaign was very successful, and is set forth very fully in my paper on "Campaigns up the Tennessee Valley," page 111 (Inserted on P3 101) of my booklet, "The Battle of Atlanta and other Campaigns." My instructions were to destroy everything in the valley that would be of use or subsistence to the enemy, especially the cotton, grain, etc. but to protect private property. The enlisted men took a great many privileges in the valley and commenced burning private residences.

As soon as I discovered this, I issued the following drastic orders which put a stop to it immediately:

Headquarters, United States Fprces. Little Bear Creek, Ala. Apr. 29.1863

"General Order No. 1.

During the march today houses have been burned and pillaged against, and in violation of, the most strict orders and military discipline. This has, in some instances, been countenanced by officers. To prevent the further wanton destruction of private property, it is ordered,

1st, That any man detected in burning a house, vacant or occupied, will be immediately shot by an officer detecting him in the act.

2nd. Every soldier or officer visiting a house, except by order

of Brigade commanders, will be arrested by any officer who may see him. 3rd. At every helt of the command for rest, the roll will be called, and every absentee who cannot be properly accounted for will be arrested and reported to these headquarters.

4th. To a certain degree, commanders of regiment and brigades are responsible for the wanton destruction today. They must keep control of their men, and take the necessary measures to preven t it. I call upon them to carry out the order in all its parts, unless they are desirous of disgracing themselves and the division.

This order will be published and read at the head of each regiment, battery, company and detachment tonight."

General Roddy's forces that had been driven north of the Tenne ne nessee concentrated at Florence where they were large mills nad stores accumulated for the benefit of Bragg's army. In this position they were also in touch with the right wing of Bragg's Army.

I arranged with the Mosquito fleet on the Tennessee to cross my forces for a quick raid upon Florence and Col. Cornyn with his Brigade of cavalry consisting of the 7th Mo., 7th Kansas., 15th Ills and the 9th Illinois regiment of midnted infantry volunteers left Corinth on the 22nd and crossed the Tennessee river at Ham burg and immediately marched very rapidly to Florence, meeting quite a large body of the enemy and defeating them. They destroyed seven cotton factories, one of them containing 300 looms and employed not less than 2000 persons. They burned some 200,000 bushels of corn, captured 69 prisoners, 200 head of horses and mules and 300 conhtabands of both sex and all aged followed them back to Among the prisoners was one Major, one Captain, one Assistant Surgeon and three Lieuts. They also destroyed all of the corn cribs, forage, etc that had been accumulated along their To protect his flank, Col. Cornyn sent Capt. Carmichael with two companies of the 15th Illinois to Savannah and they were attacked by Col. Biffles' rebel regiment who ordered them to surrender but they refused and stood their ground, defeating Col. Biffles. When Col. Biffles' sent his flag of truce with a flag of surrender, he never stopped to receive their answer but retreated

When my Command turned to return to Corinth it seemed as though every negro in that broad and fertile Tennessee Valley They came with their families loaded in all followed us. kinds of vehicles that they took from their masters, -coaches, carriages, farm wagons, - with mules, 'oxen and cows hitched to them they were the most motley and picturesque crowd that I ever saw, and it was estimated there was over 2000. They made a column two miles long and I was at my wits end what to do with When we reached Corinth I camped them on an abandoned Plantation near our entrenchments, placed over them the Chaplain, Alexander, of the 27th Ohio Infantry and guarded them with details from the Command. The white soldiers objected to guarding negroes and several conflicts ensued when our sentinels shot one or two of the contrabands, and Chaplain Alexander said to me if I would furnish him arms and equipment he would raise two companies of negroes to watch and guard the camp. There was no authority for this and the ordinance officer would not issue the arms but would deliver them to Chaplain Alexander on my order, which I gave and this solved the problem. The families were put to work on abandoned plantations to raise their own The friction with the white soldiers was avoided but my action in arming negroes, the fear of them in that part of the country caused constant criticisms, and was reported to Washington, but Genl. Oglesby, my Commander, approved my action but made no report upon it.

to Col. Biffles

and Col. Cornyn wrote a letter from Savannah dated May 30th in which he said: "Your pompous memand for the surrender of one squadron of cavalry (15th Illinois regiment) occupying this place, and your cowardly retreat before you received Captain Carmichael's intrepid reply, suggested to me the propriety of visiting upon the traitor citizens here (who tried to assit you in the capture of that gallant little band), a little of the legitimate vengenace of my Government. Therefore, in the name of our glorious republic, I hereby make good the grand exordium of the Declaration of Independence, i.e. "That all men are created free and equal," and today I free and take with me from this town every colored creature who inherits with the human race everywhere the image of his Maker, and an immortal soul."

the man; high-strung, very active, quick to anger, but very brave.

This letter called forth great protest from the southern people and also from their Government and the press had notices that if General Dodge or Col. Cornyn were captured they were to be hung. The following is my report on this expedition - Insert = (7+10). Soon after this time I was called to Washington by an order from General Grant to report to the Adjutant General. He gave no seasons for my going there. ((I could not but think that they were going to call me to account for the action I had taken in arming the negroes and I went with a good deal of anxiety until I reached Washington and reported to the Adjutant General and he informed me that the President withsed to see me and he made an appointment with President Lincoln for me. I went in and met the President, who greeted me very cordially and learned from him that I had been called there for the purpose of a decay him in determining the point on the Missouri river where the Union Pacific Railroad should have its terminus. He remembered our interview on the Pacifia House Porch and called my attention to it. When I heard this, it m 1859 was a great relief to me. I sat there with him and we discussed the terminal question very fully, for I saw he was thoroughly posted on the sentiment of the country locally, as every town from Sioux City to Kansas City, were contending for the location. people who were citizens here so that time, possible encoher what

Union Pacific should be coated. From an engineering point of view, I pointed out clearly to the President where the line should start and what our surveys had determineds He listened and discusse this question with me for a long time, and I saw from his talk

Mens las

BY.

After our discussion of the Terminal question President Lincoln expressed his anxiety to have this road built and was disappointed that so little work had been done. him that it was almost impossible to obtain the funds to build the Road by private enterprise that it should be built by the Government. I also called his attention to the fact that it was impossible to sell the Railroad Bonds as they were a 2d Mortgage the Government having a first lein. He stated the the Government had its hands full now with the Rebellion but that the Government was willing to give all possible aid to private parties who would undertake the job that they would consider the making their bonds a second / After quite a discussion I said I would go to New York and see the Company and tell them what he said. I thought it might aid them in forming plans to take hold of the work. I went immediately to New York, saw the officers of the Company, Gen. Dix, T. C. Durant and others, and stated to them what President Lincoln had said. They were greatly encouraged and went before Congress and obtained amendments to the Charter in 1864 but were unable to make much progress in the Building of the road until the Ames took hold of it in 1866.

and his indication that his views coincided with mine, and I have no doubt made his decision at the time as recommended by me and soon after made his first order, on Nov. 17, 1863:-

Jag 1

"I, Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, do hereby fix so much of the western boundry of the State of Iowa as lies between the north and south boundaries of the United States township within which the city of Omaha is situated as the point from which the line of railwoad and telegraph in that section shall be constructed."

This order was not considered definite enough by the company and on March 7, 1864, President Lincoln issued the second executive order as follows:-

"I, Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, do upon the application of said company designate and establish such first named point on the eastern boundary of the State of Iowa, east of and opposite to the east line of Section 10, in township 15, south of Range 13, East of the 6th principal meridian in the Territory of Nebraska."

on the 17th day of November, 1863, he had located the "Eastern terminus of the Union Pacific Railway within the limits of the township in Iowa opposite to the town of Omaha." Since then, he says to the company has represented to me that upon additional survey made, it has determined upon the precise point of departure of the branch road from the Missouri river, and located same within the limits of designated in the order of November last.

On my return from Washington, I organized the 1st Alabama
Infantry, known as the 1st Alabama A. D. and I instructed Chaplain
of 2700 love.
Alexander who had been in charge of the contrand camp to collect
all the negroes at Corinth or surrounding there and enlist those
that were willing to go into the service and the rest to place
upon the abandoned plantations.

Before General Grant made his main movement to the rear of Vicksburg, he communicated with me and asked me to send a spy to Meridian as it had been reported to me that there were a large number of cars and locomotives concentrated there for the purpose of moving large bodies of troops over the railroad. For this had been doing similar service duty, I selected an entist man by the name of Coe who went on the trip and gave me the information that we wanted. We found that the cars entered there were the equi ment that had come off of the

" Terrish

ar COmir

Mobile and Ohio road and the road leading from Grand Junction to Vicksburg and that they had been run out on wooden sidings for storage with no intention of their being used.

Some years after, when I was in Denver, a Lieutenant who had served under me brought me a letter written by Coe at the time to his brother, giving a detailed account of his trip. It is interesting as showing the experience of a real spy and is as follows:-

Bethel, Tenn., April 12, 1863.

Dear Brother James:-

I have just returned from the South Confederacy. I found a letter from Gan that the boys had opened and snwered, for which I am under obligations, you write a splendid letter, far better than I can, or ever could.

It has been a long time since I wrote to you or any of my friends, and for neglience in this I can give no reason for, I have you all and think a great deal about you and wonder how you look and whether our good Mother is still alive. I wish I could be certain of seeing her once more, but I don't know that I ever shall. I sometimes think of good sister Sarah and wish for one of her good letters just such as she can write. I think Sarah beats any one for a good letter.

And now a few words about my trip to Dixie. Of course I cannot give you the full particulars, nor for what purpose I went, as that would be considered contraband for the present. In the first place, you must know hhat I have been acting as Scout for the post of Bethel, for the last 5 months. My district had a range of about forty miles. I made a great many acquaintances. It was my business to watch for the enemy, o see that everything was going on tracket, and when the guerrillas did any damage to the Union men, I had to levy fines on the Secesh to the amount of the damage done, consequently I had to dealwith all classes of people, and I never made but one enemy, even the Secesh all liked me, for when I took their property or collected fines, I explained it in such a way that I was only doing my duty, just as I was ordered, and I nature left was only doing my duty, just as I was ordered, and I waways left them with good feelings toward me. Now all these men would have business with General Dodge, the Commander at Corinth, and they would often speak of that Coe, how he did and what he said, etc. On the 20th Day of Feb. last, I received a dispatch from General Dodge to report to him immediately. I took the cars and went right down to his headquarters. Pumpg handled to General and said my name is Coe. The General looked me all over and then said, "Coe, you have been recommended to me as man who has traveled a good deal and understand human nature pretty well. Now do you suppose that you can go into the southern confederacy one hundred and fifty miles and do what I want and get back safely." I told him it was uncertain for I did not know what he wanted done. He then went on and told me what I told him I could try, and would do so for big pay. He it was. said he would make that part satisfactory. He told me to fix my story and get ready to start by the 1st of March. I got all ready, though I did not leave our lines until the 3rd. I was mounted on a mule, and when I bid good bye to our pickets, I felt a little "like the boy." I then searched my pockets for papers and threw away the boy." I then searched my pockets for papers and threw away everything that was likely to trouble me, except a little map of the two states of Mississippi and Alabama. This was in small form and was little less than five inches long, and about three inches This I was obliged to have to travel by. On the 4th, I sold my mule for fifty dollars in Confederate money as he proved to be not fit for travel. I was then inside the enemy's lines and concluded not to buy an other until I saw some rebs. I knew the country was full but still I could not meet with any. So I concluded to stop until they came along. I stop ped at a man's house by the name of Stevenson, he was a very quiet, good man, and I could not tell whether he was secesh or not. He was so near our lines that he stood

Kons Add - 1 was

in fear of expressing his sentiments, but I soon struck up a chat with the old lady and was satisfied they were secesh. I then tole her I was a deserter from the Yankee army and that I wanted to find some Confederate scouts who would take me prisoner and parole me as I wanteddoc make my way to Georgia to stay with an Uncle I had there until the War was over. People are always willing to believe what they desire to believe, consequently she swallowed readily. I was very much afraid of the Yankees following me, so I kept a looks out for them. hile she went to a neighbor who had a son in a company of scouts and was at this time at home, she told him that there was a Yankee at her house who wanted to be taken prisoner, he started off and the next day at four o'clock, five secesh cavalry gode up and came in and told me to go with them. They took me on to their headquarters and their Captain quised me and searched me. He found a cappy of the Chicago Times and two letters directed to Bragg's Army. The Times had a good look to him for it is just their politics. Then he asked me how I came by those letters. I told him that a man near Bethel, Tenn. (I was then in Miss.) had a son in Bragg's Army whom he had not heard from in eight months and that I had told this man I was going to desert and go south and he had me to take the letters for him and mail them when I got a chance. This he swallowed for it all looked very reasonable, especially, when I had the Chicago Times. The map he did not find.

I stayed with them two days after they paroled me. Then I bought a horse, for \$220.00, a cheap one, for a good one costs from \$400 to \$600. I told the Captain I wanted to go to my Uncles in Georgia, and asked him if he would not give me a letter of recommendation which he did. It read something like this. "All good Southern men will treat the Bearer with respect, on his way to Georgia, as he is a deserter from the Northern Army and has come here

for our protection. T. W. Ham Comdg. Confederate Scouts."

On the 7th I started on my hourney. On the 8th I stayed all night at Dr. Owens, a leading man among the Secesh. He inquired all about me and was glad to see one Yankee who had some enough to know that they could not whip the south. I pleased this old fellow so well that he wanted me to stay a day or two with him which I did, and it was a lucky thing I id as the Sequel will show. On the 11th, I started on and met with no bad luck. My letter of recommendation served me well. I met soldiers every day. But had no trouble to Still I was not satisfied. My mind was uneasy all the time. go on. I would try and reason with myself -- now no person on top of the earth knows my secret and I have had no trouble so far, but then I would think how the d--1 am I going to get back; that I must do, but I concluded to borrow no trouble. I always had gotten through the world so far, and I would try still to do so. On the 18th, I got to my journeys end. The Uncle story must play out now, so I was taken unwell and not able to travel. I engaged board for a week or two until I could get able to do something. I intended to go to work doing something for a living, provided I could find anything to do. This was what I told. My orders were to stay there until I found out what I wanted to know. I can tell you were it was that I went, and you look on a War Map, and you will see it was at Meridian where the R.R. running from Vicksburg east crossed the Mobide and Ohio R.R. Right on the State line of Alabama and Mississippi. On the morning of the 21st, things began to look as I wanted, but I stayed until the next day to make certain that I was right. The General told me to stay until the 1st of May, unless I sound out before, and if not, by that time to make my way back as well as I could. But I was datisfied that I was right, and I started back, now comes the Pinch. When I came down, I traveled mostly in Mississippi on the line of Alabam, but I must not go back the same way. I struck East into Alabama or rather North-east, and then due north, about fifty miles east from where I traveled on my way down. Before I changed my course north, and while traveling East, I met some soldiers twice who asked me which wa I was going. I told them that I had deserted from Grant's Army at Vicksburg and I was making my way to my uncle's in North Carolina. That was all right and I went on. I stopped to stay all night at a

private house. The man of the house was very talkative and I told my story. He was a man well posted and a reading man, for I found a late Macon paper, this which is an uncommon thing in the south. He told me that some General had issued an order that all deserters from the Yankee Army should leave the Confederate lines in thirty days or be subject to the conscript. How I thanks that General, up my sleeve, for that order, but I let on to him that I felt very bad about it for I had deserted my own army to get rid of fighting and would rather go back, if I had to fight. I asked him if he had seen the Order. He said he had; that it was in his last paper. He got it for me and I read it. The editor went on to say that it was a good order and ought to have been out in force before, and the Yankees would have so much knowledge of what was going I asked for the paper and he gave it to me and this on down south. served me to travel on until I got to the outside lines. I got up near Tuscumbia when I was taken prisoner as a spy. They took me to their headquarters which happened to be within thirty miles of my old friend, Dr. Owens. They searched me and found nothing but about three hundred dollars in Southern Currency and one hundred and twenty dollars in gold. I started with \$1000in southern currency and \$120 ingold. The General told me that if I should get in to trouble, to use the gold to bribe hhe guards with. They had a trial and cou d prove nothing at all that looked suspicious. I told the officer that I could not stay in the south unless I went in to th service and rather than do that I would try and slip past our lines and get home to Ills. for I did not darate go back to my own Co. for fear they would try and court martial and hang me. He said he thought that I was alright, but the better place would be to send me to Bragg. I thought I was gone up then. After he kept me two days, I told him that if he would send for old. Dr. Owens, I could prove my character by him although I had not much acquaintace with him. He sent for him at my expense and the old fellow was glad to see me, though he said he did not like to vouch for a man that he had no better knowledge of than he had of me. But I worked myself in to his good graces so much that he told me that if I would

go and stay with him and give him my word and honor that I would not leave, he would take me provided I would pay my board. accepted his proprosition and went home. They watched me very closely a day or two, but on the second night report came that the Yankee Cavalry was within a mile and a half. Thus when they came up I was up in the loft. I heard the nigger boy tell the Dr. I jumped up frightedn out of my wits, rushed downstairs told the Dr. to hurry and we took to the bushes. How I did want to see them come along the road, but they did not come and we found out it was a false alarm. After this he did not watch me I could go off all day to the creek fishing, come home and it would be alright. I wrote letters for the whole neighborhood, to their husbands and friends in the army, and they thought I was the smartest kind of a man. There was one woman in the neighborhood whose old man had gone to the Yankess and she told me she would like to go herself ifshe could only get her goods through but the neighbors had threatened to burn her goods if she starte . I told her she would not need any goods. I was then within fifty miles of our pickets and the hardest part of the trip to make. For the purpose of keeping conscripts from running out, I told this woman (her name was Martin) that if she would go out, the Yankees would take care of her. She had a small child five years old, a little girl. I promised to meet her at Crdar Creek, ford early in the morning and that she must tell that she was going on a visit about ten miles from there, and if there was any one at the ford she must ask me to The next morning on the help her on a piece with her little girl. 8th, we started off, Iswam across, got the skiff and set her across. It was then five miles to Bear Creek. When we got there the skiff was on the other side. I swam over and got it, set the woman across, and then let the skiff go down the stream. We then took to the woods and traveled on until dark. We sat down, ate a little corn bread and had quite a rest. Bythis time, the little girl was so tired that she fell ableep. I took her in my arms and on we went. We had made bout twenty miles; about ten o'clock we lost our road. We wandered all around. I carried the child until my arms achied,

so I thought I would give out. The woman told me she knew the country so well that she could go to our pickets without taking the road. did well until about ten o'clock, when she got lost and could tell nothing about where she was. We walked constantly until daybreak, when we again struck the right path and were only about ten miles nearer than we were the night before and I am certain that I walked twentyfive miles. I felt certain they would follow me, and I knew that it was impossible for them to catch me unless they tracked me with nigger hounds and every dog that would bark, I would quicken my pace. The little girl walked pretty well and about one l'clock, we came in sight of our pickets. I then bid the woman goodbye, gave her twenty dollars in gold and twenty in paper. I was halted by our pickets, and they took me prisoner and marched me to Head quarters. The General grasped my claw and gave it a good shake. He was glad enough to see me and hear what and I had to tell. My report was very satisfactory and he then told me to go anywhere I chose for a month and gave me a free pass on all the roads. I think I shall go to Ills. next week, and when I get back I shall probably continue in the same service.

Now I have given you as well as I could a sketch of my trip to Dixie, though there are a good many incidnets that occured that might be interesting to you but am too tired to write more. I have written carelessly, but if you have as much patience to read it as I have had to write it, you will please me. You wanted to know how I looked. Well, as for that, I am homely enough, thank God. I am six foot and a little less than an inch high, weight about one hundred sixty pounds, a little bald headed, if I don't take pains to comb my hair so it wont show. Tell Lottie Downs if I thought I would ever be pardoned for neglecting to answer her letter, I would write now. My love to mother, and Sarh and all the rest of the friends. You can write to me and direct to Co. I. 11th Ills. Cavalry.

Yours truly, E. D. Coe.

I will send this letter to Lib and that will save me from writing to Lib will send it on to you.

I was almost in constant communication with General Grant in relation to the movements of Gen. Johnson's forces. I had spies posted at Jackson, Meridian, Mobile, Selman and Montgomery. It was very hard to Genl. Grant for them to get through the enemy's lines but it was very easy to comm-I sent the communications to Memohis and they went on unicate with me. down the river to General Grant. Two of these spies, in their attempts to reach General Grant, were killed. One of the spies, who was with General Johnson's army, reached General Grant just before the battle of Champion Hills and gave him accurately the position of General Johnson and the force he had, which was not one-half the number that they supposed. General Frederick D. Grant, now a Major General in our Army, was preent with his father at Champion Hills when this spy reported and at a meeting of the Society of the Army of the Tennessee, made a statement in relationt o it. This spy's name was Sanborn, but he never came back to me. We never knew what became of him. As General Johnson assembled his army that he proposed to relieve Vicksburg by attacking General Grant in the rear, I kept General Grant posted as to the forces that he was concentrating and of their

Insert (8).

Page 107.

The Arminot Negroes and organizanthem into Companies and Regiments was being advocated and urged for by Gen. Lorenzo Thomas. He visited Corinth and I assembled the command to listen to him. The following account was written by one of the soldiers present.

Corinth, May 10, 1863, Editor Hawkeye: This has been a great day for Corinth. Adjt. Gen. Thomas arrived here yesterday evening and today reviewed and addressed the troops. The speaking took place from a covered stand erected at the edge of the beautiful park in front of Gen. Dodge's headquarters, aroung which the troops were massed in close column. The day was clear and beautiful, with a light cool bre eze to modify the heat of the sun. Gen. Dodge's brass band composed entirely of Iowa Boys, discoursed delicious music, whilst the troops were assembling by the thousands. Gen. Oglesby arrived at noon, by a special train from Jackson, when the speaking began.

Gen. Thomas, after paying a tribute to the 2nd division, which he called the Old Guard of the army, introduced his business, which was the organization of negro regiments. He gave his plan, and also narrated what he had accomplished down the river. He said he intended to organize a number of regiments here to be officered by the bravest most exemplary and best drilled men in the service, and he had orders to dismiss any officer, no matter how high his position, who opposed the policy. This was received with tremendous cheers. He said he wanted men to apply but those whose hearts were in the work; those who will not strive only to make their commands a terror to the enemy, but an honor to the country. He spoke about three quarters of an hour, and was applauded many times during the delivery of his speech. The meeting, or rather the army, was addressed by Gens. Oglesby, Dodge and Sweeney and Cols. Cornyn and Bane who only arose in answer to calls from the troops. Gen. Oglesby spoke for more than an hour. Richard was himself again in spirit but not in strength, for his lungs are still suffering from the effects of the wound he received on the bloody field of Corinth. ercises closed with three deafening cheers, from everybody for the President; three for his policy; three for Gen. Oglesby and three for Gen. Dodge, after which the troops passed in review. Gen. Dodge is said to be already almost overrun with petitions for commissions in the black regiments. The world moves. Let the copperheads wail."

movements. The rebel papers gave the force as 60,000 and a good many of the reports of the deserters gave the same, but the reports that our spies brought to us showed that there was somewhere between twenty-five and thirty thousand, so that General Grant called first upon General Schofield in the Department of the Missour, to send his spare forces to him so that he would not have to detach from his army in front of Vicksburg to meetthis force of Johnson and as General Grant says in his memoirs, he gave the command of this force located near Black River Bayou to General Sherman and as fast as General Johnson concentrated his forces, General Grant also received reinforcements until finally drawing from General Burnside, commanding the Deartment of the Ohio, the 9th Army Corps under General park, who reached Vicks burg and moved out to General Sherman's command sometime before the capture of Vicksburg. Insert (f).

On June 8th, I was ill and had been, for some little time, and I applied for a leave of absence of sixty days with a view of having a rest and going to Iowa for the purpose of attending to my business affair's and wind them up. They needed my personal attentio but I was not given the leave until August.

The Confederate authorities raised the question of the treatment of negro soldiers when captured. They indicated that they would not treat them as prisoners of war. Our government immediately made known its policies that they would retaliate for any cruelties or any treatment of those prisoners different from the white soldiers and finally on June 11th, a test came, when a megro, Lt. and 12 enlisted men, who had, they claimed committed depredations and arrested citizens, were captured at Grand Gulf and taken to Jackson, Miss. There was a great deal of excitement and threatening to administer the lynch law to them, but under the direction of the Confederate Government, they were turned over to the military forces to be dealt with as they claimed to be United States troops and were treated as pris ners of War. This occurred at the capital of the President's own State and settled the

On June 16th, the first regiment of Alabama cavalry, A.D. had become fully organized and were mustered into the service, mustering about 900 men and were as fine a body of men as I ever saw.

The organizing of these regiments gave me a great opportunity to reward enlisted men and officers in my command who had distinguished themselves. I took the field officers for this regiment from commanding officers of the companies, while the Captains and Lieutenants I selected from non-commissioned officers who were recommended to me as being very competent and they proved themselves to be so. This regiment had built large and commodious barracks and were being thoroughly drilled and upon the muster in of this regiment, we immediately started in recruiting the 2nd Albama Infantry A. D. There was a great change in the sentiment of the army after they saw this regiment organized, drilled and on duty and there was a great many applications to me from officers in the white regiments for authority to recruit other regiments. The regular white troops at the Corinth obtained a set of colors and they were presented to the colored regiment by Col. M. M. Bane of the 50th Illinois Infantry. His speech to the regiment was eloquent and pathetic, urging them to defend their colors to the last extremity. Two colored soldiers responded, fixing the attention of all who could hear. One had made his way to Corinth over 200 miles only a few weeks Among other most appropriate and witty remarks, he said to his colored friends that they had often heard of the old banner, and longed for the freedom it promised. And although they could not deny having had plenty of "stripes" they had certainly never before received the "stars." These colors he exhorted his fellow-soldiers to bear aloft, never allowing their rebellious masters to trail them in the dust.

COl. Weaver of the 2nd Iowa Infantry also spoke very eloquently telling the colored soldiers that since their masters had given them the "stripes" it had now come their turn to make them see "stars."

In addition to the great number of negroes who flocked into Forinth, there also came a very large number of white refugees from the northern part of Alabama and Tennessee. They were all loyal and the able-bodied men entered the 1st Alabama Infantry but it left the women and children without support. I could not take care of them at Corinth but I raised by an assessment from the sympathizers of rebellion and the top to the people, quite a sum of money and sent them north to

be disposed among the loyal people there. General Buford was in command at Cairo and he distributed some 500 of these women and children, sending them to Quincy, Decatur and Centralia in Illinois. The Mayor of Centralia on June 24th, wrote a letter to Gen. Buford which was as follows:- "By what authority do you force upon the people of Centralia the one hundred and twanty paupers you sent here by yesterday's train? You are respectfully requested to arrange for their transportation south. Samuel Storer, Mayor."

Gen. Buford who was a very sympathetic and loyal man sent him the following letter from me:

"I send you five hundred women and children refugees from the south. They are loyal people. Their husbands, fathers and brothers are in the army doing their duty and I ask as a lavor to me as well as a justice to them, that they be made comfortable and settled down in the northern States It will be well for them to scatter to the different towns where they have friends.

They have already suffered more than death and have been kicked about, till they are disheartened, many of them, to die. I could tell tales of their suffering under Jeff Davis's tyranny that would make every loyal man and woman's heart bleed, but all they now ask is a place where they can live comfortably, and in peace until the war closes and their protectors can join them. I once more bespeak for them your well known kindness and efficient aid. I am, very Respectfully, Your obedient Servant, G. M. Dodge, Brig. Gen."

The action of the Mayor of Centralia brought down upon his head the severe denunciation and criticism of the entire north and there came applications from the different towns for such refugees to be sent to them and from that time on, we had no trouble in locating them and relieving our front of their charge.

During the month of June, my troops were very busy; there were continual attempts of the enemy to break our line of communication but we would not wait for them to reach us but whenever we heard of their concentration, we immediately went out and attacked them and my troops under Gen. Hatch had several very severe engagements, both south of the Memphis and Charleston railroad and north of it, which shown in the official reports in the war records. It. Col. Philips of the 9th Illinois, a splendid officer, was very effective in this work.

On June 2nd, I received a letter from Gen. M. M. Crocker who, after General Grant's army had been concentrated a ound Vicksburg, was given a leave of absence on account of his health. General Crocker was a very able officer and was held by General Grant as one of his

ablest division commanders. He wrote me from Des Moines as follows: Des Moines, Iowa, July 2, 1863.

General Dodge: I came home in time to be present at the Republican Convention. I found them hell-bent on nominating some military here, Warren and Stone were both on hand urging their claims. I could have been nominated but declined pereimptorily. I told them that if they must nominate a military man, to select one who had seen the enemy and who had a good record and suggested your name, but when asked if you would accept I was compelled to say that I did not believe you would, with your views and prospects, consent to sever your connection with the army. Had I felt at liberty to give any assurance in your name, you would have been easily nominated. They did not want to nominate Stone, but preferred Stone to Warren. So did I, and I gave Mr. Bri So did I, and I gave Mr. Brig. Gen. Warren all the grief that I possibly could.

The Copperheads talk about nominating Tuttle, but Tuttle wont accept. If he does he has not the sense that I have credited him with and I will cut on him."

I had no knowledge of these matters and would not have considered the question of leaving the front, going to Iowa and running for office. General Oglesby, who had been in command of the Left Wing of the 16th army Corps and who was my superior officer, had been severely wounded at Corinth and in his general order #21, dated Memphis, July 6th, he bade good-bye to his command on account of his physical infirmities, stating that he had resigned. While he was relieved of the command of the Left Wing, 16th A.C., he was so fine an officer that the President declined to accept his resignation and he was put on temporary duty in the north. On July 8th, 1863, I was awsigned to the command of the Left Wing 16th Army Corps which consisted then of three divisions, reaching from the Tennessee river along the line of the Memphis and Charleston road to Grand Junction and beyond and north to Jackson, Tennessee.

On July 6th, we received news of the capture of Vicksburg, which brought great gratification to the whole army and changed the whole temper and feeling of the people of the north.

Col. Biffles regiment, of General Roddy's command, captured my camp of convalescent and unserviceable horses and mules, on the west of the last line of works thrown up by Gen. Pope's right, in the advance on Corinth. It was guarded by one company of the 39th Iowa, numbering 36 men under Capt. Loomier. The captain and twenty of his men were captured. Col. Cornyn with his brigade followed; them and at Iuka fought quite a battle, defeating Gen. Roddy's bridgde and driving them across Bear River.

At the same time Col. Phillips of my command moved north to attack a force that had crossed the Tennessee river, with a view of capturing Jackson, Tennessee. They attacked this force about the time it reached Jackson, defeating it and drove it across the Tennessee River.

On July 11th, I received the following letter from Silas Hudson who was a cousin of Gen. Grant and had been with him during a portion of the seige and capture of Vicksburg:

Memphis Tennee. July 11th, 1862.

General Dodge:

I have just arrived here from Headquarters and am on my way home with Master Fred, the General's son, who will remain semetime north for the benefit of his health,

Before leaving, I had a confidential interview with the General and it gives me pleasure to be able to inform you authoritively that your name will head the list to be sent forward by him for promotion to Major Generalship. I am also authorized to say to you that his recent success gives him more real pleasure and gratification because it enables him to advance the interest of meritorious officers in his command who have nobly stood by him, and have so largely contributed to his present fame and position, than from any other consideration. And although he was known you but little except in an official capacity, you have his full confidence, and he approves your management of the

duty addigned you fully and completely.

We have taken 31,277 prisoners, one Lieut. Gen. and 14 Majors

and Brig. Gen. and about 60 Cols. etc.

So far as we are able to obtain record by actual count, we have 66,000 stands of arms, 173 field and large guns, 660 bbls flour corn in quantities, five million dollars in clothing--their invoice, 250,000 lbs. of sugar, large amou ts of bacon, &c. &c. and ammunition sufficient for years, and of the best quality as are their arms, 30,000 of which have never been used, and which we will exchange our for, and so make the calibre used by us uniform."

This letter was, of course, very gratifying to me but I had known from the letters of General Tuttle and of General Crocker that Gen. Grant intended to promote me. General Crocker wrote me about this time saying that General Grant takes every occasion to speak in highest terms of you and myself as the two Iowa men in whom he takes stock. He may be mistaken but it is nome the less a compliment to us." As stated in Hudson's letter, General Grant in his recommendations for promotion at Vicksburg, recommended me first to be made a Major General. He recommended many of his officers to be Brig. Generals, among them his chief of staff, Colomel John A. Rawlins These recommendations were taken to Washington by Colonel Rawlins and one would have supposed that after such a great victory as that of Grant, any request of his would have been acceded to but the only promotion that was made was of Colonel Rawlins who captivated the cabinet with his eloquent speech and description of the campaign and capture of Bicksburg. None of the rest of  $u_{\rm S}$  were promoted for a year. As t

War Records show General Grant endeavored time and time again to have me promoted because as a Brigadier General I was holding a Major Generals command and it was difficult to hold me in such a position as there were often officers commanding a division who ranked me and they would have to be changed to allow the troops they commanded to serve under me.

My commands had been very free from desertions although there had been some and in August, a member of the 1st AlabamaCavalry, by the name of A. J. Johnson, had deserted from our army and joined the confederate army and was captured by on a our troops. The regiment appealed to me almost unanimously to make an example of Johnson.

I give an account here os his arrest, trial and execution as written by a person present.

"Corinth has today been the scene of the saddest and most impressive of all military spectacles—the execution of a soldier. Private A. J. Johnson of Company D. 1st Alabama (Federal) Cavalry, on the 18th of June last, was stationed as a vidette on the road leading from Glendale to Burnsville. This duty is one of the most responsible of all a soldier's duties. From this he deserted and went over to the enemy. To have simply deserted his post at such a position would have merited death, according to the laws of war; but to take the very arms and property that Government, he had sworn to serve, and turn them against that Government, made his the highest crime a soldier could commit.

On Saturday last, I think, the 5th Ohio Cavalry surprised the camp of Capt. Carpenter, a rebel commander of a guerrilla band, some distance south of Corinth, and captured a number of prisoners. Among them was this deserter. The facts were so plain and the offense was so glaring that it was determined to deal summarially with him. A special commission was appointed and he was tried immediately, and found guilty. The sentence could be nothing less than the extreme one of death. Gen. Dodge approved the finding and sentence, and appointed nine & clock today as the time for the execution. This sentence was communicated to the prisoner today. Short time indeed for the unhappy man to prepare for death, yet long enough to allow him to suffer more than the pain of a hundred deaths in anticipation of the one.

PREPARATION.

This morning the sun arose on an unclouded sky, but soon a haze obscured its brightness, and threw a kind of funereal shadow over our garrison. The news of the coming execution was not published yesterday to the troops, nor was it fully known until nearly night. This morning however every one knew of it, though it seemed to be avoided as a subject of conversation. Gen. Dodge intended to not only have the sad duty performed with all due dignity, for the sake of the condemned, but also to make it as fully impressive as possible to the troops of the entire command.

As early as seven o'clock the fifes and drums of a regiment were heard as it took its way to the head-quarters of its brigade. By a sort of cruel fatality, this regiment with its sounding music marched directly past the place where the condemned man was confined. What a fearful reminder of the preparation for his doom. Soon other regiments were marching and the artillery and cavalry began to move.

THE GROUND.

The place selected for the execution was a large open field southeast of the town of Corinth. The troops were formed into three sides of a square-the fourth, open side, toward the east. The

infantry, in four ranks, on the west side, and the artillery on the north side. Behind the infantry, and at the flanks of the artillery and cavalry, were gathered titizens and others not in the regular arms of the service, in wagons and ambulances, on horses and mules and on foot.

ARRIVAL OF THE PRISONER.

The line was completely formed by half past eight. The soldiers were unusually silent, and all were anxiously looking forward the centre of the unoccupied side of the square, where the execution was expected to take place. All at once the solmen notes of a mournful air by the division band attracted attention to the procession slowly advancing toward the south-west corner of the square, from the direction of Corinth. It was the prisoner and his escort. First came Provost Marshal General Branhill, under whose direction the sentence was to be executed. He was accompanied by one or two officers mounted. Then the band on foot. After it a detail of twelve men of the prisoner's own company, under a sergeant, who were to be the executioners. They marched as infantry. Next was the wagon which contained the prisoner. Two soldiers of the Provost Guard, as a funeral escort marched with arms reversed.

It was the first opportunity I had of seeing the prisoner, and I was surprised at his apparent intelligence. He was a tall man, of spare figure, dark hair and fair complexion. He appeared to be not over thirty years of age. Seate on his coffin, with one hand he was grasping the back of a chair, while with the other he kept a handker-chief closely to his eyes. He seemed to be deeply affected and was weeping distractedly. Rev. James Houng, Chaplain of the 21st Ohio, was sitting on the coffin beside him, but the poor condemened man seemed too much occupied with his own wild emotions to listen to anything from the minister. Thus he rode along to the right of the cavalry, which was the south-east corner of the square.

THE DEATH MARCH.

Here the wagon stopped- the prisoner and caplain got out, and the pall bearers took out the dark coffin, and a new procession on foot was formed. First, Lieut. Colonel Barnhill, accompanied by Capt. Barnhill, Post Provost Marshal, then the band followed by the executioners. Next the black coffin borne by the four pall-bearers. Following this was the prisoner leaning on the arm of the chaplain; last of all came the funeral escort with arms reversed.

what a death march was that! This condemned man is to march to his execution in the centre of the unoccupied side of the square, by passing around the other three sides in front of the troops. It is a distance of nearly a mile. But the sad procession moves. The vast assemblage of soldiers and others, with the stillness of death, catch the wailing sound of the dirge to which the slow procession marches. To the condemned man, what an agony, worse than death, must have been that long march-silent, except when broken by the almost sepulchral death-notes of the music. Is it wonderful that he leans heavily on the chaplain's arm, or that he is bathed in tears, or looking on the ground at his feet? What to him were the long lines of troops before which he was passing? He sawonbie of them. Like one walking in a dream he walks to where he shall waken in another world.

THE LAST.

The procession reaching the centre of the eastern side of the square, halts, facing west toward the troops. No chair, or post or block marks the place of execution. The provost-marshall's attendant stepped forward and with his foot drew a line on the ground where the coffin should lie. The pall-bearers placed it there; the band and the executioners faced about, and the escort that had been in the rear of the prisoner, passed to the front and in the rear of the executioners. During these movements the prisoner stood by the side of his coffin in evident distress. He could be plainly distinguished by his dress. He wroe no coat, but had on a black hat, black pants and a white shirt. The position of all being assigned, the prisoner in a composed and audible tone requested to see his picture which had been taken in the morning. It was a photograph and of curse there had not yet been time to print any from the negative. His request could not be granted. The prisoner, and the chaplain by his side, then knelt upon the coffin; the soldiers and others of the little groupd reverently uncovered their

heads, and the chaplain reverently offered the last prayer for the prisoner. During its utterance the big tears of sympathy for the accused as a fellow being, and not as a culprit, coursed down the cheeks of even his executioners.

The chaplain, in a few and simple words, prayed for the salvation of the soul that was so soon to be freed from the body; he prayed for the mother of the prisoner, for his wife and for his child. He asked that this terrible lesson might be productive of good to the army and finally he prayed that the time might soon come when the white dove of peace should return to our distracted land, and these scenes of bloodshed no more be enacted within our borders.

While the prayer was being offered, the orders giving the action of the court in the case- the charges, finding and sentence, and their approval- were read by the different adjutants to all the troops.

The prayer ended, the prisoner shook the hand of the chaplain, and the provost-marshal in silence, and then, upon an intimation to that effect, stepped over his coffin and took a seat upon it. The attendant produced the wide white bandage which was to hide from his view the men who were to be his executioners, and tied it over the eyes and face of the prisoner. This done, the hands were tied behind him - and there was nothing to do but the last. Oh, could there not come a swift rider, with his glad reprieve, at the last moment? The chaplain and attendant move backward toward the soldiers, leaving the free space for the deadly bullets. Only the reporter stays near to catch the last words of the prisoner. They are few, simple broken utterances of prayer- "O, Lord, have mercy on me. O God, save me. Protect my soul, O Lord."

The Provost Marshal draws his word and command, "Ready". The vast concourse suspends its breath - "Aim." The deadl barrels are leveled. Will no reprieve come? There is no flying horsemen approaching. "Fire." Too late now for the reprieve of man- the soul has gone to its maker.

It was a positive relief to know that death was certain. There was not even a struggle or a groan. The doomed man dropped easily backward, and all was over. His limbs were composed, his hands folded on his breast, and then, lying beside his coffin on the ground, he was permitted to be seen by every member of the whole command, as it was marched by the fatal spot.

Thus ended the first military execution in the army of the Tennessee. What a commentary on the discipline and the spirit of this

vast army is found in this act.

We had a very important spy, a southern man who is still living whom we had kept inside of the lines and who was very reliable. He had gone to Richmond and came out of Richmond with Longstreet's Corps on its way to join General Bragg in front of General Rosecrans. He left Richmond the first week in August and got to a telegraph within our lines when he telegraphed me that he had come through with Longstreet's corps, had left them in Eastern Tennessee and that they were on their way to reinforce Bragg. I immediately sent this dispatch to General Grant and also to General Rosecrans. General Rosecrans sent me a very sharp reply stating that he had different information and that my information was not correct and indicated that he would not want me to report to him direct. I sent this dispatch to General Grant

Jag !

and heinstructed me to hereafter send such dispacthes to him. It is a very sin-ular fact that General Rosecrans, when he had notices of the approach of Longstreet from several sources, would not believe them and did not pay any attention to them. General Wilder, in command of Wilder's Brigade, gave him information to the same effect four or five days before the battle. General Wilder claimed to have captured a prisoner from Longstreet's corps. General A. D. Atkins of Wilder's command, informed me that he took a prisoner from a Virginia regiment of Longstreet's corps two or three days before and look bresses the battle of Chickamaugua to General Rosecrans and he told te prisoner, who was very frightened and timid, that he was a liar and scared him so that General Atkins had to interfere to protect him. General Sheridan also captured a prisoner or through his own scouts ascertained that Longstreet's corps was in their front and notified General Rosecrans of that fact but General Rosecrans had a dispatch from the War Department which assured him that no forces had left Lengt theirs front, and he depended more upon that dispatch than upon the reports of the officers in his own command which was a fatal mistake. General Rosecrans did not concentrate to meet this large reinforcement of Gen. Bragg's army until it was too late. If he had acted upon these dispatches and concentrated his army, the battle of Chickamaugua, no doubt, would have had a different ending. This shows the importance of paying attention to the information that comes to you, no matter from what source. In our a my, we never failed to follow up any information we had until we ascertained whether it was true or not; especially such information as I gave Gen. Rosecrans, coming from a man who had been withthe corps and whom I knew was reliable in every way.

After the execution given about, a very sad affair occurred at Corinth and one of my best Cavalry commanders, Col. Cornyn was killed by his Lt. Col. during a court martial. There had been a great deal of friction between Lt. Col. Powen and Col. Cornyn. Col. Cornyn had preferred charges against Col. Powen and he had been arrested and placed in close confinement by order of Col. Cornyn. I had relieved him of this and given him the liberty of the post. During the tiral the two men met in the ante-room, when

an altercation ensued between them and Lt. Bowen drew his Col.Cornyn pistol and shot him in three places, killing him instantly. There was great excitement among the soldiers of the 10th Missouri but no further trouble occurred. Col. Bowen was tried by court martial and was acquitted.

On August 8th, General Crocker wrote me telling me of an interview he had with General Grant who gave his reasons placing me first on his liest of promotions for Vicksburg although I was not present in that campaign. He told General Crocker that my services in holding his flank at Corinth and in posting him on all of the movments of the enemy in his rear and relieving him of any anxiety and my always going out to attack the enemy before they would reach my lines, had relieved him of all anxiety as to that flank and that my action had been of as great service to him as any of the officers directly under his command. This information was very gratifying to me but I had received from General Grant, directly, in his telegrams and letters, indications that what I was doing met his approval.

While I was in the service, I never received any criticism of any kind from General Grant of any of my acts. In sending me an orde > General Grant always left it to my discretion, or would ask me if such or such a thing could be accomplished. His suggestion was an order that I always acted upon promptly.

I had with me on my staff, J. W. Barnes, Lt. of the 118th Illinois Infantry, who had been acting as an A.D.C. Colonel George E. Spencer who had been my Chief of Staff, was now relieved to take charge of the organization of the 1st Alabama Cavalry, of which he was to become Colonel and I asked the appointment of Lt. Barnes to be a Captain and A.A.G. in place of Spencer, which the war Department granted. General Oglesby, who was a very fine orator, on arriving in the north, was called upon by the people there to make speeches and answer the copperheads who were attacking the army and the politics of the government. On Aug. 19th, he wrote me the Gollowing: E Decatur, Ill. Aug. 10, 1863.

I received your first and second letters; also copies of published orders No. 21, my series, all in proper time. Your letters give me more satisfaction about the state of the country

Whales !

in Tennessee and north Mississippi than any other channel. You have doubtless connected with General Rosecrans' right before this, and must be freed from so much annoyance from that direction upon your left and rear. I am glad Hatch thrashed them at Jackson. Does Capt. Spencer still run his flags of truce? Spencer has a good style. He goes with a truce in one hand and a revolver in the other. Since my return I heave endeavored to remain quietly at home- have generally done so; a few times, however, I have consented to go into the worst holes of copperheadism, and those few limes I have not spared them.

A bold front terrifies them. Their impudence has gone unrebuked until it has become insufferable, and to be boldly called traitors and challenged to fight at once, makes them very angry but does not make the villians fight-dirty cowards, they have but to be boldly met to be eternally disgraced. They are not so many nor so blatant as they were. They were never so numerous as thought to be. I shall use all my spare hours to practice upon them. The President did not see fit to accept my resignation nor to give me six months leave. A little firm talk by union men was all that was necessary. The talk has been "Wait until our soldiers come home they will put down treason." I repudiated this talk at once and told union men to say "We will put it down without wiaiting for our soldiers to return." This spirit alone will save the country. I send you two letters which I hope you will have no hesitation using in my name; send the m at once to General Grant to go forward, unless you have some reliable friend to trust the matter to,

At the same time I received a letter from Thomas S. Withronz who was the chairman of the Republic State Committee of Bes Moines asking what the feeling of the boys in my command was? He said there was some dissatisfaction in two or three regiments at Vicksburg but nothing we have reason to believe that will amount to anything. "Tuttle has been put in nomination by a Mahony State Central Committee, with the hope that he can carry the army vote. He is on identically the same platform occupied by Vallandingham in Ohio, and is the candidate of a more intensely disloyal organization than ever before existed in this State. We have newspaper rumors this morning that he is at home and delcares his purpose to decline. He will do well for his own reputation by pursuing that course."

I was perfectly astonished to hear of the nomination of General Tuttle by this party and more astonished when I received the following letter of General M. M. Crocker:

Hd.Qrs. U.S.Forces Natchex August 26, 1863.

General Dodge:
General Tuttle, I hear, has accepted the nomination of the
Copperheads. I did not expect this of him. The day he left
Vicksburg he called on me and stated most positively that he would
not accept the nomination on any terms. I am afriad that he has
not as much sense as we gave him credit for. In fact, his conduct
in this whole matter has been that of a weak old nincompoop with about

as little sense as Thompson's cold.

Well let him go. He is dead, deader, deadest and I have written his epitaph which I am going to send him. It is Billy Pringle's epitaph on his pig:

"While he lived, he lived in clover, But when he died, he died all over." I have been transfered from the 13th to the 17th Army Corps and am here with my Division and Ransom's Brigade commanding the District from Grand Gulf to the Louisiana State Line. My duties as yet have not been of a very arduous or trying kind. I have not had any information from General Grant as to what he intends to do this fall."

I had sent Lt. Col. Phillips with a large command to Grenada to meet the forces moving from Vicksburg under direction of General Sherman to Grenada for the purpose of capturing and destroying the large amount of equipment that had been caught there by the movements of the two armies during the seige of Vicksburg. I had found that in these raids in tearing up the railroads and destroying the equipment, &c. that they were not effective and I had instructed Col. Phillips, in the destruction of locomotives, instead of breaking off the side bar pistons, &c. todestroy the fire box by lighting the fuse of a shell and bursting it inside. The confederates had the machinery to replace the side pieces of the locomotives but they could not replace Col. Phillips and his command reached Grenada found a large number of cars and locomotives there which they destroyed. The raid was a great success. Insert here

On August 17th, I was taken very sick with a congestive chill and was sent north to recuperate. While I was in the north, Mr. T. C. Durant wanted me to resign from the army and take charge of Regy the surveys and construction of the Union Pacific railroad, but this I declined to do. I wrote that that as soon as the war was over, I was perfectly willing to go back on the road and take a place under Mr. Dey, who was then in charge.

R. 12 malles

118分 On aug. 17-1863 I was taken very sick with a conjective chill, and was sent home. The Citizens of Council Bluffs gave me a very cordial reception and look this official action. was stret home. WHEREAS, We have learned with pleasure that Gen. G. M. Dodge is about to visit his home in this city, to recruit his health, which has been seriously impaired by long, faithful and arduous service in behalf of the country, and WHEREAS, it is just and proper that some appropriate acknowledgement of welcome and of our regard and esteem should be made for so accomplished, brave and modest a soldier as General Dodge has proved himself to be; and as such, he commands our entire confidence and profound respect; therefore, Be it resolved by the Common Council of the city of Council

Bluffs that in the name of the city, and for and in behalf of its citizens, that we bid General Dodge a cordial and generous welcome to his home.

That we thank him for his constant care and generous treatment of our citizen soldiers and entrust them to his care, and for his brave gallant and soldierly conduct in the field; that by his bravery, he has conferred additional and lasting honor on the already glorious name of Iowa, and won for himself by honorable and generous competition among the most brave and gifted of our gal lant army, a name in history worthy of the palmiest days of the repub

And be it further Resolved, that the Mayor and City Recorder be constituted a committee to receive him on behalf of the city and to communicate to him the unanimous adoption of these resolutions. W.G. Crawford, City Recorder."

The program of the exercises of the reception is as follows:

1st. Citizens desiring to participate will assemble in front of Clerk's office at the firing of one gun.

2d. A procession will be formed by H. C. Nutt, Marshall, in

the following order:

1st. Capt. Kirscht's Council Bluffs rifles.

General's carriage; with reception committe, together with Mayor and Common Council in carriages.

3rd. Provost Guard, Captain Bell.

4th. Artillery company, Captain Tostevin. 5th. Citizens on horseback and in carriages. 5th. Citizens on horseback and in carriages.

The procession will march up Broadway and be formed in proper order by the Marshall for the reception of the General. After he shall have been received by the Committee and entered his carriage, the procession will return to the place of starting, when Gen. Dodge will be formally received by an address and a salute. Upon the conclusion of reception ceremoinies, the procession will escort the General to his residence.

Our citizens are cordially invited to unite in this mark of respect to our distinguished fellow citizen who now returns home on a brief visit, in consequence of wounds received in the battles before Atlanta.

By order of Committee on Arrangements.

D. C. Bloomer, Chairman.

Mr. Crawford, in the name of the city, bade the General welcome home, in the following words, to which General Dodge respondes as below:

Mr. Crawford's Welcome.

"General Dodge:- I have been charged by the unanimous voice of the City Council in the name and behalf of its citizens, with the pleasurable duty of bidding you a cordial and generous welcome to your home. To condole with you in view of your seriously impaired health, consequent to your long and arduous duties in the field, while standing new the flag of our country.

nag Impolan

\_\_P7\_F\_

To communicate the hope that health and vigor may soon return to you and that you may live long to enjoy the evidence of their entire confidence and profound respect you have so nobly won and so meekly wear.

I have been charged to thank you for your courteous and kindly generous treatment of our citizen soldiers, entrusted to your care and whom you have seen cloven down by your side, in the tempest of battle, upon the bloody slopes of Pea Rardge, and upon the plains and in the valleys of Tennessee- to whose valor on the field and faithfulness in the camp you have so often and eloquently paid honorable and generous tribute.

I have been charged to thank you, Sir, for your prudence and soldierly conduct upon the field of battle, by which you have conferred additional luster upon the already glorious escutcheon of Iowa, and won for yourself a name in history, that must and will live as long as liberty and good government are loved, and depotism

usurpation and tyranny despised.

In the crypt of St. Paul's Cathedral in London, is the tomb of Sir Christopher Wren, the architect of that noble structure, and the felicisous inscription upon it runs thus: "Reader, if you seek his monument, look round." And so we say this day to the world, and let the depotism of the old world behold and tremble. If you would see how well the American people love the government of their fathers, "Look around". Behold the old man trembling with age, but with the flame of patriotism burning brightly in his bosom, casting The young man away his crutch and grasping the deadly fire lock. upon whose cheek still lingers the spring bloom of infancy nerving himself for the conflict as if he was a veteran of some of our proudest victories. The sister taking the sword of her dead father, and placing it in the hand of her brother as she does so casting away the scabbard. The mother taking her only boy and pointing where the battle rages, tells him to go and to return with honor or come nor more.

And how well have Iowa soldiers kept the oath, they registered in heaven. Go read ye upon the graves of our early dead- upon the speulchral stones of our Tuttle, Kinsman, Mills, and the hosts of our unreturning brave. But eulogy greets not the cold dull ear of death; let us hope when the Angel of Death prevents us with his scroll that our death my be as glorious as theirs, and our memory worthy of the fame and honor theirs now enjoy. General, I bid you welcome to your home, in behalf of this large assemblage of your admiring fellow ditizens, with the hope that repose will soon restore your impaired health and fit you for the further performance of the high and responsible duties imposed upon you; that your future may be as remunerative of honors as your past has been, and that you may long enjoy the confidence and respect of the people you have done so much to serve and honor."

## General Dodge's Reply.

Ladies and gentlemen:- If I had the mental, I have not the physical ability to make a proper response to your generous welcome. It was General Scott, I believe who said: "That there was nothing dearer to a soldier than the approbation of his countrymen." I know that there is nothing dearer, when it comes from his own home, and from his nearest Briends.

It is more than two years since I left this city, in cormand of the 4th Iowa Infantry. We promised the people of Western Iowa we would endeavor to do our duty. We felt our honor was at stake in upholding Iowa's good name. The record of the regiment issbefore you. It is your right and your privilege to priticise it, and say how far they have kept their promise. It is a long time since I parted from the regiment, but I can truthfully say I am proud of its record. It bears a name in the army, and a fame as bright as that of any other, and stands forth prominent among all those brave Iowa regiments whose deeds have immortalized Iowa soldiers.

The army today is in excellent condition. It is loyal to the heart. It has fears only of dishonor- never of death; and all that it asks of you is that generous support which all soldiers have the right to expect and all Governments have a right to demand of its citizens. It believes in the present policy of the war, and says to

the right to expect and all Governments have a right to demand of its citizens. It believes in the present policy of the war, and says to you who are all anxious for peace, that there is but one way to obtain it, and that by hard fighting- dealing of swift, determined blows. No mild polciy will accomplish it. Nothing but the utter defeat and breaking up of the rebel armies will ever bring peace. We say to you, fill up our ranks - send us good cheering words at all times - give us your heartym undivided support, and we will soon place this rebellion in a condition that you can read its downfall and destiny in words as plain as the hoonday sun.

I have come home to regain my health and build up a constitution badly shattered. It is my desire, and I shall return the moment

my surgeon marks me for duty.

I have buried my best friends and bravest men in the south, and I intend to stay there until you and I and everyone can visit their graves in every State under the peaceful protection of that flag which every loyal citizen loves to honor, and every soldier fights and if necessary dies for.

There is a monitor here, that tells me that I have already gone too far. I wouldlike to take each one of you by the hand tonight but my feeble health forbids, and I trust you will take my good in-

tentions for the deed."

Before I left Corinth, I had raised four companies of the 2nd Alabama Infantry but they had not been mustered in. Soon after I left there, General Hurlbut ordered the officers who had been assigned to these companies, to be relieved and sent to their regiments and for the men to report to Memphis to fill up an artillery regiment that was being organized there. My authority for raising the troops had come from the Adjutant General, Lorensa Thomas of the Army.

When Captain Barnes received this order, he did not consider it as being as important as my order and was also a great injustice to the young men whom I had commissioned in these companies but had not mustered in. I therefore had the mustering officer muster them in and then forwarded them as United States troops to Memphis. I believe General Hurlbut recognized the mustering officer but had the company changed from Infantry to heavy artillery.

While I was at my home in the Bluffs convalescing, my attention had been called to criticisms of some of the people in relation to the Aid Societies, Sanitary Commissions and other organizations that had done such wonderful work and had been so beneficial to our soldiers. I was appealed to to answer a charge that was made in the Des Moines Register by Dr. A. Y. Hull of Des Moines. My letter to the Register was as follows:

Council Bluffs, Sept. 12, 1863.

Editor of Des Moines Register:

In your issue of September 11th is a letter addressed to the "Ladies of Des Moines" by Dr. A. Y. Hull, which, if allowed to go before the people of Iowa uncontradicted, will work a great and vital injury to our sick andwounded soldiers in the field.

It has been my good fortune to have under my command many Iowa Regiments, and there are very few that have left the State that I have not seen, and conversed with some of their officers, in relation to the generous aid our army has received from Sanitary Societies. And of all the regiments I have met, I have not seen one that did not receive great and lasting benefit from the noble efforts of the Ladies of Iowa through the Sanitary Commission.

I have two letters from the late Col. W. H. Kinsman of the "23rd Iowa Infantry," the regiment specially mentioned in Dr. Hull's letter and in both of these he speaks in the highest terms of the efforts of the Sanitary Commission, and he thanks them for what they have done for his regiment. And I say, without any fear of successful contradiction that not a company or regiment has left this state, but what has received great benefit from them.

this state, but what has received great benefit from them.

The ladies of Iowa, as well as those of other states, by this channel, have saved the lives of thousands of soldiers. There is not a hospital in an Iowa regiment, not a General Hospital in the army, that the Sanitary Commissions have not remembered, for the aid given, in the prayers of the sick, wounded and dying soldiers.

In my command, we have been well supplied, not only by the

ladies society in Des Moines, but by all others in this and other states. Their organizations are so well conducted that we now find Sanitary Stores are needed. They may not be issued as coming from

in my communi, we have been well supplied, not only by the lautes society in les Edimos, but by all others in this and other states. Their organizations are so well conducted that we now find any particular Society, but all sent through the authorized agents reach the army by the proper channel, and are dealt out to our sick and wounded with a generous hand. I have met most of the agents of our State, and I know that they are honest. They have worked long and hard, and we can never

repay them for the great good they have done us.

co rue gairtere: wee se lorrosa:

.

I do believe that Dr. Hull or any other person who seeks to fatally stab the efforts of these societies, and thereby work injury to the soldiers, which can never be repaired, cannot do it from any good or loyal motive. I trust that his letter will not discourage any loyal woman from giving her aid and her mite. I assure them that no soldier in the field who had lain on his cot, sick or wounded, and received the delicacies thus furnished but will remember them. They can now only thank them by nobly doing their duty, in the future as they have in the past.

the has doined portains by or . A. I. built of one somes. In telest

error from two peak certag to districtable of once of the proble has

but hed the company chapped from Intendity to beavy extillery.

in the figure of the news to the little consequential and

then in any then inrested than as United States process to hea-

obd not mustared in . I therefore and him minuterial of lines mus

short deplain Carnee received Lill opear, is did not don-

Traine to the grant man show I have considered in these comparing

arget to we period or interprete so whorepre and with order and with

usur rear non partial culturings overer . Al accompany for the estable run

and for the men to respond to demonia to till up applicant rult-

arthug in ciase of sheatens in he intreven and bear as real infinitely

Belote I feld desport I this balled loss consource to

. (tert there, cristal nurleur ornered the cities in the had been be-

I will proported to to absert a charge that was made an

one and house them beneforty demands on any pale of any and policy that

G. M. Dodge, Brig. General. Town which are considered and the constant of the constant of

Council Sinffs, Novi, 12, 1868.

lung may not be tasked as coulded iron

While I was resting at home, the question of the Pacific Secure Railroad and its organization came up. I received a letter from the Yeller Mr. Peter A. Dey on September 11th in relation to the appointment of a Government Director. He recommended Mr. Caleb Baldwin, but the authorities at Washington had selected Mr. Carter.

My staff at Corinth were continually writing me and were very much disturbed in relation to the orders that General Eugene A.

Carr, who was temporarily in command of the Left Wing of the 16th

A. C. was issuing. They thought he should endeavor to carry out

my policies inaugurated there but they seemed to think that his

whole desire was to reverse it.

On October 20th, I received a letter from my Commissary of Subsistence, Captain C. C. Carpenter, which said he had been ordered to accumulate one million rations at Corinth to supply General Sherman and his command when it arrived there. That was the first news we had of the proposed movement of General Sherman from Vicksburg to Memphis and from there eastward.

I also received letters at this time from Mr. T. C. Durant urging me to come to New York to consult with him in relation to the Union Pacific road. They had written me asking me to resign and take the position of Chief engineer with a salary of \$5000 per year. I declined this and they said they would hold it open until the next Spring and urged me to visit New York before I returned to my command.

Con September 29th, I received a letter from Hon. John A.

Kasson who had learned of this proposition of the Union Pacific and he requested me not to decide until he could communicate with Washington; however, I had made up my mind that I would not leave the service. I decided to go to New York, however. I arrived at Des Moines on September 30th, where I was given a very cordial reception. There was a great deal of excitement in the State in relation to the coming election and at Des Moines I met a good many of the leaders of the party. They seemed to be nervous over the prospects but my own judgment was that there was no doubt that the election in Iowa and all over the country would be very favorable to the Republicans. I felt that the great victories in the West would insure this. Col. Wm. Stone had been nominated for Governor

Sell !

nes

and Gen. McClernand, his division commander had written a very strong - letter in relation to his services in the army, which had been vigorously attacked.

On my arrival in New York, I met Mr. John A. Dix, Mr. T. C. Durant and others connected with the Union Pacific Railroad. They in the field had already placed Mr. B. B. Brayton and Peter A. Dey, who was in bharge of the surveys from the Missouri River west, one starting at Bellevue and the other at Omaha. There was still a good deal of anxiety in relation to the terminal as the President had not yet issued his order and they were very anxious that I should go to Washington and see him again but I was so certain that he had made up his mind in this matter and where it would be that I convinced them that it would not be good policy for me to interfere farther in the matter, as I had avoided any preference for my town or city, stating the results in an engineering point of view in dequenting the location and I did not want to place myself in the position of advocating the interest of any of the towns.

Since my visit in May, there had been a good deal of talk in relation to who could control the organization and the New York parties were very anxious to accomplish this as they had made up their minds to go forward with the work depending upon ob-. taining a change in the law as promised by President Lincoln. returned directly from New York to Corinth, arriving there on October 15th, but was still unable to perform my duty. I was suffering with neuralgia and confined to my quarters. I on y weighed 126 pounds. As soon as General Sherman heard of my return, he came to Corinth to visit me. He had a letter from General Grant, which he read to me. While General Grant was very complimentary, he also instructed General Sherman to take my command with him. General Sherman was anxious to know if I was able to go. I immediately answered that I was. knew that going into the field would cure me quicker than anything General Sherman also told me of the attempt of General Chalmers and his command to capture him enroute from Mephis to Corinth and how close they came to it. Hard fighting alone saved them. General Sweeney of my command had heard of Gen. Chalmer's approach and had gone out promptly with Col. Hatch's command of

Jal.

turit news that to we .

cavalry to attack Chalmers before he reached the line of railroad following our polciy in that matter but Chalmer avoided both his command and Hatches and got on the road of Colliersville; however, Col. Sweeney and Hatch both, as soon as they found that Chalmers had escaped them, followed them so rapidly that he was forced to leave and before he had made a capture of the station.

On October 19th, I got up and went to Iuka to visit General Sherman. General Sherman's forces were then across Bear Creek. destination at that time seemed to be simply the Valley of the He had no orders to go any further. His statement was that his occupation of that valley would draw forces away from Gen. Bragg, especially his cavalry force and he proposed to fortify some of the prominent points in the valley. I consulted him in relation to the secret servcie men whom I had in the south. I found that during my absence, the scouts had been badly scattered and I immediately arranged to gather them together again and get my men posted; one at Mobile, another at Okolona and the other at Atlanta. One at Jackson, Mississippi and another at Columbia. General Sherman was very anxious to have all the information I had in relation to the position the forces south and the reports of the scouts and I wrote him w letter giving him a full statement of it and on October 22nd, he wrote me the following letter:

Juka, Tenn., Oct. 22,1863.

General Dodge:

I thank you for the budget of news which is most serviceable as we can approximate the truth. Of course here I am balked by Bear Creek which is a worse break than was presented to me.

I have my three leading Divisions across Bear Breek, and all hands are busy at the bridge and trestles. The enemy skirmished brisk ly the day before yesterday and yesterday. We have lost eight killed and about 35 wounded in all. Among the dead is Col. Torrence, 30th Iowa. I think it well established that Lee who came from Jackson Clinton and Canton with about 4000 good cavalry, is to my front with Roddy's brigade; and I think also that Wheeler's cavalry has been driven out of Tennessee and is now resting between here and Decatur.

If all this cavalry turns on me, I will have a nice time, but can thelp it and if Porter gets me up some boats to Eastport I will check-mate them. The Tennessee is in very fair boating order for four feet, and I expect daily a boat up from Cairo- also a ferry boat. I have had the river examined well, and am more than satisfied we cannot ford, even on the shoals.

Of course, I don't believe the report you send of the capture o Banks, and 15 regiments. Dick Taylor was somewhere west of the river between Alexandria and Shreveport. That is ground familiar to me, and I know Dick Taylor cannot get to the east side of the Mississippi with anything like an army. After the capture of Vicksburg we relaxed our efforts and subsided. The Secesh, on the contrary, increas-

ed theirs amazingly. The rascals display an energy worthy a better cause, bad as it is, but when they come to the finish they don't fight equal to their numbers. Chalmer's dispatch is a sample. He captured the camp of the 7th Ills. off on Hatch's expedition, and nothing else of moment; but he may again attempt the road, yet Hurlbut has plenty fo checkmate him if he doesn't attempt to follow but anticipate and interpose between the R.R. and Tallahatchee.

I propose to finish the bridge and move on Tuscumbia, but in the end may actually cross at Eastport. My orders are fully comprehended in their drawing from Rosecrans the cavalry that have heretofore bothered him.

bothered him.

I had a regiment at Eastport. A party crossed over who, saw no one but hear the river was patrolled so as to report all our movements. I will fortify this place somewhat, so that if the enemy's cavalry attempt to operate against it, they will catch more than they bargain for. Corinth is too formidable a place for them to dream of an attack, but you should keep a couple of retiments disposable to take the offensive. I am much obliged for all information, and will impart all positive information to you. Keep me well advised from day to day of Fuller's approach. I have one brigade at Burnsville--two here and three divisions front of Bear Creek.

Yours, W. X. Sherman, Maj. Gen.

On October 25th, he issued an order for me to take from the troops in my command and such others as are on railroad guard duty, not belonging to any of the organized brigades of Hurlbut's corps, I was to command the movement up the valley of the Tennessee. He said, "Our object is to secure absolute footing up the valley of the Tennessee and the river, giving us a certain supply to Eastport now, and Florence very soon. We can risk the railroad, or use it as long as we can. Is your health equal to it? Come up and see me on the subject."

I immediately went up to see Gen. Sherman to consult with him as to the numbers of troops I should take and what I should leave. While I was there, he received an order from General Crant to drop everything and move with all of his command and mine immediately to Chattanooga. This message was brought by onr of the scouts. He came down the Ternessee river in a skiff, nearly all the way inside the enemy's lines. I then arranged to concentrate what gunboats and steamboats and other means of crossing the Tennessee at Eastport and Gen. Sherman immediately commenced crossing his command. He concluded to move up the north side of the Tennessee instead of the south, thinking that he would meet less opposition from the enemy.

On October 27th, I received a special order #31 as follows:

"General Dodge's division and Fuller's brigade of the 16th Army corps will forthwith fitted out for field service and will move east of Corinth; hold for the time being, Iuka & Bear Creek and the moment the command is fitted for the field, will move forward and report to head quarters, where ever they may be."

I immediately concentrated my command, which was the Left Wing

of the 16th Army Corps, consisting of the 20th and 39th Iowa, 7th, 50th, 52nd, 64th, 122nd, Ill. Infantry, the 18th Mo. Infantry, 16th Ind. Inf. 81st Ohio Infantry, Fuller's Brigade, 27th, 39th, 47th, Co. E. 2nd U. S. Art. 53rd, 63rd Ohio Infantry and the following batteries, Battery I and Michigan A. H. ifrst Mo. Artillery. 14th Ohio, 2nd and 3rd Megiment batteries and the 9th Ill. mounted infantry. About 10,000 men in all.

Before leaving Corinth, I mustered in the first Alabama Cav. and also Battery D, first Alabama colored Artillery and left them at Corinth. The spies reported that on the 6th of October Loring, Lee, Chalmers, Feruson, Gohlson and Ruggles had been ordered to woncentrate at New Albanay for the purpose of breaking up the railroad and they claim that their available force to do it would be 25,000 men. And it also appears that Johnson was not then aware of Sherman's movements. As soon as he ascertained this fact, an entire change was made, Loring, Lee & Ferguson went to Bragg and the Tennessee.

On November 3rd, I received the following letter from Mr. T.C.

Durant: New York, Nov. 3, 1863.

General Bodge:

We carried the election of directors- and have organized the board. J. A. Dix, Pres--T. C. Durant, Vice Pres.--J. J. Cisco, Treas.-H. V. Poor, Sec. -- and H. and H. J. Interest howl because they could not have it all their own way.

The papers for Baldwin came too late. Carter was appointed October 1st as it was then promised him at that time. If Dey will only get his preliminary surveys on here at once we will make a bold stroke for the location.

We must get at work immediately on the line and have a good force on before Congress meets.

I think I shall write Hoxie or telegraph him to come on and help look after the location at the starting point. There will be an effort made to get it north and also south- I note what you say in regard to this and am much obliged to you for posting me. Will write you in a day or two."

This letter shows that the New York parties were successful and a few days before I had informed them that there was no doubt as to the President's decision on the location and that it would be issued that month.

On November 8th I crossed my forces by steamboat over the Tennessee river and on November 9th received the following letter from General Sherman:

RR. - malle,

Fayetteville, Tenn. Nov. 9, 1863.

196

Brig. Gen. Dodge: -

I arrived here yesterday and your letter of the 5th to General Blair was sent forward to me. I also received a dispatch from General Grant dated Chattanooga, Nov. 5th, as follows: "Leave Dodge's command at Athens until further orders and come with remainder to Stevenson or until you receive other directions. I have given directions for putting the railroad from Nashville to Decatur in running order. That road is now only guarded to Columbia and the force left by you will have to guard the balance with the aid of the cavalry from Thomas' command until other arrangements can be made. It is not my intention to leave any portion of your army to guard road in the Department of the Cumberland when an advance is made and particularly not Dodge who has been kept constantly on that duty ever since he has been subject to my orders. Your army being the smallest army in the field would be another reason why it should not be broken up guarding railroad." You dee at once General Grant's kind feelings toward you.

Gen. Grant on the 5th supposed we were moving on the Athens and Huntsville road but by this time he is differently advised, and may somewhat modify his orders, but should he not I dispose

of your command as follows:-

At Pulaski feel with your cavalry to Columbia up the pike sending a commissary with sufficient wagons to get you bread, salt, sugar, coffee, Etc. Then move down to Elkton or Prospect and put parties to work on the Richland and Elk River Bridges until the regular repair trains come up from the rear. As soon as those bridges are advanced far enough for you to be assured that supplies can reach you by that road, move to Athens and await orders, guarding the road as far as Pulaski. Whilst delaying at Prospect you will find abundance of meat and corn up and down the Valley of the Elk River, which use freely, leaving barely enough for the inhabitants, and let them feel and know that by breaking up communications they force us to eat them out. Elk River valley has heretofore contributed largely to supply the enemy, and to be fair the people should do as much for us. You will find that the 15th Army Corps in passing up this valley have already made a deep impression but still a vast amount of corn and meat remain.

Gen. Crook is with a strong cavalry Division at Majorville near Huntsville and understand General Elliot has another division at Winchester near De . What is at Columbia I have no means of knowing, but from General Grant's dispatch I infer there is a force there competent to construct and guard the railroad forward to Pulaski.

I found all the road up the valley of the Elk very bad, but

I found all the road up the valley of the Elk very bad, but I have not yet had a full report of the condition of the road from Florence to Pulaski or from Pulaski here. When you write give me exact information on these points as I should like to know the condition of all roads leading back towards the Tennessee."

This letter was a great disappointment to me and to the command. We thought we were going to enter the field and remain in it.

On November 11th, I wrote General Sherman as follows:-

Pulaski, November 11th, 1863.

General Sherman:

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of Nov. 9th, enclosing General Grant's dispatch of Nov. 7th. My advance is eight miles east of here, my rear three miles west. There are in this section of the country some 1,000 rebel cavalry, guerrillas, robbers, &c. and the moment they see we intend to repair the railroad they will begin to give us trouble. I therefore wait your orders, shall take immediate measures to guard that portion from Lynnville to Athens and the entire road as it now stands as follows: Placing my largest

brigade at Prospect with one regiment of mounted infantry at Athens holding two brigades here and putting one at or near Reynolds. have with me ten days full rations of bread, and 14 of small rations and will store here and send trains to Columbia. All the brigades will be put to repairing the railroad and getting it in running order as soon as possible. I think General Grant will not leave me long, but while here I will make every effort to carry out your instructions, and get the road running as soon as possible. I judge from your letter that as fast as the road is repaired from Columbia south, General Thomas' troops will relieve mine and I am to work south until I get all my force in Athens. I shall communicate with Columbia often and your dispatches will probably reach me quickest by that route. I will, tomorrow or next day, give you fall description of the route I have travelled. I did not come by Florence but took the direct road from Gravally Springs to the military ford of Shoal Creek, nine miles north of Florence, thence to Lexington, thence here, and found a good practicable road most of the way. My troops are all in good condition, excellent health and finely equipped, and are all very desirous of joining you in the field. I do not like to sendforward the lllth Illinois alone, General Blair is so far behind, it might be greatly annoyed, probably used up. I will hold it sending it by way of Columbia or directly forward as you may direct. They are a green regiment and are not much used to bushwhackers. My column has been attacked several times, but no damage except a few wounded. I should have some cavalry as soon as possible.

General Sherman also wrote me in a private note that the sooner I got the railroad completed, the quicker I would get something for my command to eat. I immediately distributed my forces along the railroad lines from Elk River to Columbia and after looking over the situation I found that I had three problems before me to solve. The first was the feeding of my command; the second, the repairing of the railroad and the third the watching of the line of the Tennessee river from Huntsville to Eastport, a distance of over 100 miles. I made my headquarters at Pulaski, and occupied a very fine residence owned by Mr. Jones, who was in the Confederate Congress.

As I had a thoroughly organized Pioneer Corps, as soon as the troops were located, I set them to work upon everyone of the prominent bridges. I ordered details from all the commands of all officers and enlisted men who were mechanics, or who had been engaged in any such work, axemen, graders, etc. to report and they were assigned to the Pioneer Corps, enlarging it so that I had two or three thousand men at work withint two or three days after we got located. I also immediately organized the foraging parties, issuing very strict instructions against any depredations and ordering that each party should ben accompanied by an officer.

I changed the policy of the government entirely in the obtaining of provisions. I issued a circular notifying all of the citizens no matter whether their riews were union or southern that if they brought in their produce, forage and everything we had to have. and sell it to us, we would pay for it. If I had to send for it, only receipts would be given. I also notified that those people of southern views who brought in supplies would not have to take the oath. There were several mills adjucent to the line. I took possession of all those and made details for running them and I also brought into the line all the blacksmith shops and all the carpenter shops and everything that had tools that could be used in the construction of the road. I put the guarding of the Tennessee River from Huntsville to Eastport in charge of Lt. Col. Phillips who was in command of the 9th Illinois mounted infantry and instructed him to gather up horses and mules sufficient to mount two other regiments. I had to be very particular in my orders and instructions to the troops from the fact that I was occupying a portion of another department, the Department of the Cumberland, commanded by Major General George H. Thomas and I was reporting to the commander of another army, General Sherman. General Thomas' forces occupied the country from Columbia to Nashville and were expecting to rebuild the railroad between those two points. I was to complete it to Decatur. I knew General Sherman's orders in relation to depredations were very strick.

I needed every team I had for use on the railroad and for supplying my troops with forage, food etc. As soon as my forces had gotten well to work, I made a trip, on November 14th and 15th, over the entire line from Columbia to Decatur and saw all the parties that were at work. I took with me Captain Armstrong, who was at the head of my Pioneer Corps and some of the principal officers in charge of the bridges. I induced a good deal of competition among them, who should get their work done first.

On returning from Pulaski, I reported the condition of the road in the following letter to General Sherman:

Pulaski, November 16, 1863.

General Sherman:-

As I telegraphed, I have made a thorough examinat on of the railroad from Columbia to Decatur; also of the different pikes and dirt roads leading to different parts of the State. The commanding officer at Columbia informs me there are seven bridges north of that place besides Duck River Bridge. A bridge at Lynnville Station over Robertson's creek partially destroyed, another bridge over this creek 3 1/2 miles south of Lynnville Station is partially gone. At Reynolds Station a bridge over Richnaldn Creek is badly damaged; also another over the same three miles south of Reynolds is partially These creeks were formerly crossed by truss bridges, 100 feet span. We shall put in trestles, but it will need truss by the time fall rains are hereat Richland Creek, near Richland Station bridge is gone 200 feet by 36 high. At Tunell Hill, three miles south of Richland is a trestle work 600 feet by 40 feet high, all gone. Elk river a bridge 600 feet long and 40 feet high is nearly all out, trestle will replace this, but by Christmas truss bridges 150 feet ppan will be required. Two and a half miles south of Elk River trestle bridge over small creek 300 feet long and 30 feet high all gone. The Bridge over White Sulphur Creek 8 miles north of Athens is completely destroyed, length 600 feet--hiehgt 72 feet. A small trestle work at Athens is out; also Swan Creek bridge 10 miles south of Athens is all gone. Spring Creek bridge 10 miles south of Athens is all gone. Spring Creek bridge five miles north of Decatur and bridge over bottom near Decatur are all out, 700 feet of trestling will repair the road between Decatur and Athens.

I have placed my workmen detailed from regiments at nearly every break from Elk River to Columbia-I believe in ten days I can

repair the road from Pulaski to Columbia.

The telegraph wire from Decatur to Columbia is in a pretty good condition, few breaks only, and can be repaired in a very few days, provided I get material. I have sent for it to Nashville.

The principal dirt and pike roads leading from Lynnville, Pulaski and Prospect to Columbia, Shelbyville, Fayetteville, Lawrenceburg, Savannah, Waterloo, Florence and Lambs Ferry are good with plenty of water and forage, streams now fordable. The road leading south to Athens via Elkton it good, except crossing at Elk river at times is fordable, but from here to Elkton thence to Huntsville, is also good except as stated above, also #oad leading from Prospect to Athens, and Huntsville high water would retard an army moving over the above road, as all bridges are gone.

I shall have no difficulty to supply my command with bread, meat, forage and supplying my mounted men with stock, if the people bring it to me, I propose to pay them. If I go after it, shall only give a certificate. I now have mills running, which will furnish all I need. I believe that I should have an order, authorizing my Q. M. and C. S. to purchase to supply the command, and would like to have the chief A.Q.M. and C.S. of Dept. send the price that we shall not exceed, as I prefer to pay one price from one end of the command to the other. I have some difficulty in getting supplies promptly, because General Grant has not ordered it, this, no doubt ere this, has beendone.

There is considerable number of rebel bands scattered through the country, they do what damage they can and run. Lee and Roddy are south of Tennessee. At Decatur they have a battery Cotton bales. At Huntsville is also reported rebel cavalry. My

mounted infantry have gone there.

I do not consider it prudent, or being practicable to put infantry south of Elk river, until we get bridges over that stream. I therefore keep mounted men south of Elk River.

This railroad is, except as mentioned, in fine running order, a good road bed, fine rail (strap-joint) plenty of spare rail along the road, and good cedar ties its entire leggth, it lackes new water tanks only. If you can send me a good topographical or sectional map of Tennessee, it would be of great aid, I have none; also, if there are any engineers, topographical or civil, off duty any place, one would be very acceptable, and I could get up maps of this country that might bef of benefit in the future.

---

I trust troops will soon relieve me, and that I can go forward. A small division would guard the road; it now has good stockades at nearly every bridge, and with a neuclus to fall back to at Athens, Prospect, Pulaski and Columbia, the road would be comparatively safe and supplies of beef, pork, forage and stock could be gotten and sent to Nashville."

In answer to this letter, I received the following from General Sherman:

Pulaski, November 16, 1863.

General Dodge:

Your disposition of your command meets my approval. If you were to see the desolation of the whole country and the wretched condition of the horses and mules you would be contented with your lot. Keep your mounted men active collecting horses and mules. Mount your regiments. Watch Lambs ferry close, and handle the country back of Florence and Savannah without gloves. The moment guerrillas are quiet, change your policy, and pay A.Q.M. vouchers for corn and meal."

I had three brigade commanders under me whom I was very anxious to have promoted and I thought that now was a good time to appeal to General Grant and on November 16th I wrote him the following letter:

Pulaski, November 16, 1865.

General Grant:

I desire to respectfully call your attention to three officers of my command and earnestly recommend them to your favorable consideration for promotion.

Col. Aug. Mersey, 9th Illinois Infantry, commanding 2d brigade 3rd division, 16th A.C. one of the best brigade commanders in the army; han old soldier; he has participated in every battle up to the Vicksburg Campaign and has always so conducted himself in the battlefield as to win the approbation of his commander. He has commanded a brigade since I held a command in the department of the Gennessee.

Col. M. M. Bane, 50th Illinois Infantry, commanding 3d brigade 2nd division, 16th A.C. Col. Bane lost an arm at Shiloh. Has commanded a brigade over a year- Is in every way competent. Of fine habits and always ready. You never will regret asking his promotion.

Lt. Col. Jesse Phillips commanding 9th Illinois Mounted infantry-every inch a soldier. The best officer of m ounted infantry I ever met. Never refuses a fight; always handles his men with good judgment and success. To him I am greatly indebted for successfully holding the railroad that I have guarded. He is active, energetic, untiring and is really entitled to most of the credit of the success of all the cavalry fights in our front. Reaching from Tuscumbia to Grenada and Majorville. Had he the rank and a mounted c mmand, he would be invaluable to us. I am very anxious to get him rank and a mounted command.

Since I have been under your command no officer under me has ever received promotion by the President except General Sweeney, and his came from services before rendered, and although they did not participate in the Vicksburg campaign, yet they did all in their power to aid and dustain you. I believe that I never have asked the promotion of but one other officer before. I do this out of simple justice to these officers unbeknown to them and without the masking. I know the great pressure for promotion and lay their cases before you, asking that you will give them the consideration that you deem most beneficial to the service."

General Grant answered me by telegraph as soon as he received my letter stating that he had forwarded my recommendations with the strongest endorsement he could place upon them, and I made this known to these officers but, unfortunately, not one of them received the promotion.

I only had Roddy, Patterson, Hannan and some others in my front,

Soon after General Grant send me his dispatch, I received a private letter from General Sherman in which he told me of a conversation he had had with General Grant and he made this statement:

"It is not my intention to have any portion of your army to guard roads in the Department of the Cumberland when we advance and particularly not Dodge, who has been kept constantly on that duty since he was subject to my orders. He is too valuable an officer to be any where except in the front, and one that you can rely upon in any and every emergency." You see Grant has not entirely forgotten you."

I took the precaution to send a copy of all my orders and instructions to my troops to General Sherman as fast as issued so that he could see whether or not I was infringing in any way on the Department of the Cumberland and on November 18th General Sherman acknowledged receipt of them in the following letter:

Bridgeport, Nov. 18, 1863.

General Dodge:-

perhaps not more than 3000 men.

Your letter enclosing copy of your orders is received. I heartily approve your order and think it right to make citizens earn good treatment. They can suppress guerrillas— I know it, and on my threat at Florence they brought in a man captured by guerrillas at Gravally Springs. Keep your infantry so that you can concentrate and let your cavalry watch well down to the mouth of the Elk on both sides. Don't let the enemy drawany supplies from north of the Tennnessee.

I have been up to Chattanooga. Their poor mules and horses tell the tale of horrid roads and no forage. I hate to put ours up in that mountain gorge. Two divisions have gone forward and two more follow tomorrow. I go again to Chattanooga tomorrow and think many days cannot elapse before we bring on a fight. It is intended to ack quick as Longstreet isgone up to East Tennessee.

General Grant says that everything has been done to push the work on the Nashville and Decatur Road, north of Columbia, but work on that railand moves slow.

on that railand moves slow.

Write me fully and frequently and send me all statistical information, that I may stow it away for the future. Your sketch of your route shows Pulaski a good point from which to operate. I wiltry and get you some more cavalry from the north."

There flocked into our line from middle Tannesee and northern Alabama, a large number of negro women and children and with the work I had before me, I could not take care of them. I therefore issued the following order disposing of them:

"It being impossible to feed the large number of negro women and children coming to our lines and it being a part of the policy of the government to protect them, it is hereby ordered that the oommander

of Posts and Provost Marshals place them upon plantations, with written instructions to the proprietors to feed and protect them. Stock, produce and forage will be left on such plantations in sufficient quantities to support them. Where negro women and children come from so great a distance that it is impossible to return them, they will be quartered upon deserted farms, and given abandoned stock and sufficient supplies left to support them. When abandoned farms are not convenient they will be quartered upon known rebels. All able bodied negro men will be received and disposed of as heretogore ordered."

Thos who were used to handling the axe, I put to work on the road, most of them in getting out cord-wood for the use of the locomotives as soon as we commenced running them. There was no fuel on the road whatever.

We had hardly gotten settled when the enemy's guerrillas and scouts inside our lines commenced their depredations. I had "ith md a very bright young man as chief of my scouts, James Hensal of the 7th Kansas and I detailed several men who had been on those duties and turned them over to him. The first capture he made was a very important one. It included Same Davis, Captain Shaw, who was then Captain Coleman who was at the head of the Coleman scouts, operating in my lines, Joshua Brown and some others. I knew nothing about any of them except Davis. I found upon him very important information which he was taking through to General Bragg--maps, letters, etc, and while the others were taken in as prisoners of war, he was held as a spy and on November 20th, I sent the following letter to General Sherman acquainting him of this capture:

Pulaski, Nov. 20, 1863.

General Sherman: -

I enclose herewith copy of dispatch taken from one of Bragg's spies. He had a heavy mail, papers, &c. and Capt. Coleman is pretty well posted. I think I will have him in a day or two. We have broken up several bands of mounted robbers, and confederate cavalry in the past week, capturing some five commissioned officers and one hundred enlisted men, which has been forwarded. I also forward a few of the most important letters found in the mail. The tooth brushes and blank books I was greatly in need of and therefore appropriated them."

I was very anxious to capture Captain Coleman who was then in my hands but I did not know it. I had Davis brought to me. I found him to be a young man not over twenty years of age, tall and soldierly and very respectful. I hnew what had been found him and I desired to locate Capt. Coleman and his command and ascertain who was furnishing the information, which I saw was accurate and valuable to General Bragg.

Davis met me modestly. He was a fine, soldierly-looking

young man, dressed in a faded Federal soldier's coat, one of our army soft hats, and top boots. He had a frank, open face, which was inclined to brightness. I tried to impress upon him the danger he was in, and that I knew he was only a messenger, and held out to him the hope of lenient treatment if he would answer truthfully, as far as he could, my questions.

He listened attentively and respectfully to me, but, as I recollect, made no definite answer, and I had him returned to the prison. My recollection is that Captain Burnhamms, my Provost Marshal placed in the prison with him and the other prisoners one of our own spies, who claimed to them to be one of the confederate scouting parties operating with in my lines, and I think the man More, whom the other prisoners speak of as having been captured with them and escaping, was this man. However, they all kept their own counsel and we obtained no information of value from them.

The reason of this reticence was that fact that they all knew Braco's Chief of Seouts
Colonel Shaw was one of our captives, and that if his importance was made known to us he would certainly be hung, and they did not think that Davis would be executed.

Upon Davis was found a large mail of value. Much of it was letters from the friends and relatives of soldiers in the Confederate Army. There were many small presents—one or two, I remember, to General Bragg—and much accurate information of my forces, of our defenses, our intentions, substance of my orders, criticisms as to my treatment of citizens, and a general approval of the way I paid for my supplies, while a few denounced severely some of the parties who really was Capt. Shaw who had hauled in supplies under the orders. Captain Coleman, mentioned this in one of his letters.

There were also intimations of the endeavor that would be made to interrupt my work, and plans for the capture of single soldiers and small parties of the command out after forage.

After my Provost Marshal had reported his inability to obtain anything from Davis, I had him brought before me again and I then informed him that newould be tried as a spy; that the evidence against him would surely convict him; and made a direct appeal to him to give

me the information I knew he had. He very quietly, but firmly, refused to do it. I therefore let him be tried under therfollowing order:

Hd. Qrs. Lft. Wing. 16th A.C. Pulaski, Tenn. Nov. 20, 1863. General Orders, No. 720. A military commission is hereby appointed to meet at Pulaski, Tenn. of the 23rd inst. or as soon thereafter as practicable for the trial of Samuel Davis and such other persons as may be brought before it.

Metail for the Commission: 1. Col. Madison Miller, 18th Missouri Infantry Volunteers. 2. Lt. Col. Thomas W. Gaines, 50th Missouri Infantry Volunteers. 3. Major Lathrop, 30th Ohio Volunteers Infantry-Captain Geo. A. Elliott, 39th Iowa Infantry Volunteers teers, Judge Advocate. The Commission will sit without regard to By order of Brig. Gen. G. M. Dodge, J. W. Barnes, Lt. and A.A.A.G. This commission found Davis guitty as a Spy and ordered him hanged,

I approved the findings of the Commission and ordered the sentence to be carried into effect on Frieday, Nov. 27th, 1863 between the hours of 10 A. M. and 2 P. M. Brig. General T. W. Sweeney, commanding 2d division, will cause the necessary arrangements to be made to carry out this order in the proper manner.

A great interest was taken in young Davis by the Provost Marshal and Chaplain Young, and considerable pressure was brought to bear upon them by some of the citizens of Pulaski; and I am under the impression that some of them saw Davis and endeavored to induce him to save himself, but they failed. Mrs. John A. Jackson, I remember, made a personal appeal to me in his behalf. One of my noted scouts, L.A. Naron, known as "Chickasaw," believed that he could prevail upon Davis to give the information we asked. He took him in hand and never gave it up until the last moment, going to the scaffold with a promise of pardon a few moments before his execution.

One of Captain Coleman's letters, found on Davis was as follows:

Giles Co. Tenn., Thursday morning, Nov. 19, 1863. Col. A. McKinstry, Provost Marshal General, Army of the Tennessee, Chattanooga: - Dear Sir: I send you seven Nashville, three Louisville and one Cincinnati Papers with dates to the 17th- in all eleven.

I also send for General Bragg three wash-balls of soap- three more tooth brushes and two blank-books. I could not get a larger size diary for him. I will send a pair of shoes and slipers, some more soap, gloves and socks goon.

The Yankees are still camped on the line of the T. & A.R.R. General Dodge's Head Quarters are at Pulaski- his main force is camped from that place to Lynnville- some at Elk river and two regiments at Athens. Dodge has issued an order to the people in those counties on the road to report all the stock, grain and forage to him and says he will pay or give vouchers for it. Any refusal to report he will take it without pay. They are now taking all they Dodge says he knows the people are all southern and does not ask them to swear to a lie.

All the spare forces around Nashville and vicinity are being sent to McMinville- six batteries and 12 parrot guns were sent forward on the 14th, 15th and 16th. It is understood there is hot work in / front somewhere. Telegrams suppressed.

Davis has returned- Grieg is gone below- Everything is beginning to work better. I sent Roberts with things for you and General B. with despatches.

I do not think the feds mean to stay here. They are not now repairing the main points on the road. I understand part of Sherman's force has reached Shelbyville- I think a part of some other than Dodge's division came to Lynnville from the direction of Fayetteville-I hope to be able to post you soon. I sent Billy Moore over in that country and am sorry to say he was captured. One of my men has just returned from there. The General impression with the citizens is they will move forward soon some way. Their wagon train has returned from N.

Davis tells me the line is in order to Somerville. I send this by one of my men to that place. The despatches sent you on the 9th with papers of the 7th, reached Decatur on the 10th at 9 P.M. Citizens were reading the papers next morning after breakfast. I do not think the Major will do to forward them from reports. I am with high regard, Capt. E. Coleman."

At the appointed time, the Provost Marshal of the place executed Davis upon the scaffold erected for that purpose. A few moments before his execution, Chickasaw went up to the scaffold and endeavored to save him, promising parton if he would comply with my request but Davis absolutely refused. I had made every effort to save this young man and it was with great regret that I had to allow him to be executed.

I did not know until some years after the war, when Joshua in New York Brown, then a broker, came to me and gave me the facts in the case. He told me that Shaw, who was Gen. Bragg's chief of scouts, was also Capt. Coleman who was the one who had given all these papers to was among those I eaptured with Davis Davis and Davis was the messenger to General Bragg and that Davis died to save his chief. It is hard to conceive of a braver act. Cols. Shaw, Joshua Brown, a man by the name of Smith and others who were captured at the time, I sent north as prisoners of war and they were afterwards exchanged. Brown said that every time I sent for Davis, Shaw was greatly disturbed for fear he would give him up and save his own life but he did not and this is where Davis showed himself a true soldier. He had been intrusted with an important commission by an important officer who was imprisoned with him and died rather than betray him. He knew to a certainty, if he informed me of the facts, that Shaw would be executed, for he was a far more important person to us than was Davis.

During the war I had many spies captured; some executed who were captured within the confederate lines and who were equally

meder

To San My weigh

brave in meeting their fate. The severe penalty of death, where a spy is captured, is not becaused. There is anything dishonorable in the fact of a person being a spy but only men of peculiar gifts for such service, men of courage and cool judgment and undoubted and the service the perform entitles them to great honor. are selected, The fact that the information they obtained patrictism are selected, is found within their enemey's lines and the probability of great danger to an army is what causes the penalty to be so very severe. A soldier caught in the uniform or part of the uniform of his engmy within his enemy's lines establishes the fact that he is a spy and is there in violation of the articles of war and for no good purpose. This alone will prohibit his being tried as a prisoner of war when caught as Davis was in our uniform with valuable documents upon him. That sealed his fat. I appreciated fully that the people of Tennessee and Davis' comrades understood his soldierly qualities and have honored his memory by raising a monument to him in Nashville, Tenne., and I took great pleasure in contributing my mite to that tribute to his memory although the service he performed was for the purpose of injuring my command, but given for the faithful performance of the duties he was as signed to.

On November 21st I received a distpatch from General Grant telling me of the necessity and his desire that I should put all the forces that I could obtain to repairing the railroad to Columbia to impress all negroes and in fact giving me a cart planche to do anything that would advance the work. I had applied to him for a Civil Superintendent of railroads and he said he would send me one soon. I made answer to this dispatch to General Grant the same day as follows.

Pulaski, Nov. 21, 1863.

I have heavy details at work on all bridges from the Elk river to Columbia and amusing every tool in the country. Between Columbia and the end of the railroad is Duck River bridge, a very important work and nine other bridges out. A pioneer corps is stationed at Smith's station, but have no orders and the last I heard from them they were doing nothing. I have tried to find some one who had authority to set them at work. They should be at work on the bridges up to and including Duck River. I will have my work done before they and then move south and build to Decatur. I hold the road to that point now."

I became very anxious about the work north of Columbia; there was no progress being made upon it. There were six how truss bridges along that line that had been destroyed and I learned that Mr. Boomer

to Mash ville.

of Chicago had the contract for replacing them. I knew him as a bridge builder and immediately got in communication with him and found that he did not expect to furnish these truss bridges for two or three months. I communicated these facts immediately to General Sherman and suggested that temporary false works be put in over all these streams strong enough to carry trains and that this false work could be used in erecting the bridges and urged that orders for that purpose be given. General Sherman immediately answered me saying that he had applied to General Grant to have that portion of the road placed under my command.

On November 23, I wrote General Sherman stating that I had 12,000 men in my command and desired to reorganize them, making two divisins and asking that General T. E. G. Ransom be placed in command of one of the divisions. I received orders to organize the two divisions but did not receive the services of General Ransom who was in another command.

On November 23rd, I wrote General Sherman as follows:
Pulaski, Nov. 23, 1863.

General Sherman: -

I am in receipt of your letter of Nov. 18, written at <sup>B</sup>ridgeport. If a fight comes off at <sup>C</sup>hattanooga, and we are not in, we shall be sadly disappointed, but take it for granted that it is for the best. Burnside is no doubt fighting before now, as Longstreet and Hill left long ago.

The Tennessee is so low that Roddy fords the river, runs over and back. He has one regiment on this side near Florence. As soon as I get my regiments mounted, I will use him up. As it is, I have to watch all points from Decatur to Florence. It keeps my mounted men busy!

This country is loaded with corn and wheat, not a pound of bread or meat do I draw, but run the mills, gather the stock, and if you require I could supply your command from here, when cars run, wi h all the forage you need.

I had failed until today to wake up anybody north of Columbia. I assumed command over that pioneer corps and told it to go to work. My bridges are all well under way, and had I have had the tools when I halted here, would now be done. I have sent a mounted regiment through to Eastport to be gone eight or ten days. My infantry are so I can concentrate in 12 hours, and I at the same time hold the road from Columbia to Decatur. My troops are very healthy only seven real sick men.

I have picked up already stock to refit 350 teams to remount one and nearly mount two infantry regiments and have about 300 in corral. I will soon have all my teams driven by negroes, relieving \$00 enlisted men. I have heretofore forwarded my prisoners to Nashville, got your order tonight and they will hereafter go to Cairo.

It is not safe to send couriers through to Eastport by Florence. I heard of a Lt. and five men going through. I trust they got in, but fear they were taken.

I often hear from Bragg's rear, but the news is eight or ton days old. They were evidently trembling and prepared to fall back.

The products collected in Coosa Valley show that.

They appear to fear an advance by Grant, by way of Gun tersville or Decatur, more than any other way. The rebel forces on the south side of the Tennessee are obliged to forage on this side and we now have got most of their boats and several of their teams."

On November 26th, I received the following dispatch giving the conditions at Chattanooga: "All right with us. Wedefeated Bragg completely on Missionary Ridge, and our troops are pursuing. I started at ones for the head of the column. Keep your troops well in hand and I hope soon to come to you and we will then make all right south and west of Decatur."

W. T. Sherman.

My troops in their foraging for supplies for the command, had, of necessity, ignored some of the orders of some of the officers of the Army of the Cumberland between Columbia and Nashville and I received a very strong protest from Col. Mizner and I made answer as follows:

Pulaski, Nov. 27, 1863.

Col. Mizner:

I regret that any of my soldiers should be guilty of acts in violation of the laws of war. When officers and men are not designated it is almost impossible to fasten it upon the guilty parties. I will endeavor to do so in this case. My orders are that my troops shall live upon this country, my trains are supplied by stock from it, but that it must be done in an orderly and legitimate manner. I propose to eat up all the surplus, and perhaps the entire crops in the country, take all serviceable stock, mules, horses, &c. so that when we leave here no rebel army, if it should ever get here, can live a day. These people are proud, arrogant rebels who beg our protection, but wish to be allowed at the same time to oppose our armies and our government. The hands of all federal officers should fall justly but heavily upon them, so that they should respect us, not from love (for they never will do that) but from fear of the power of our government. Now I propose, so far as I can, to let these people know that we want war, that we are in the country of rebels and that they must support my command, respect and obey my orders, and that all they possess, belongs legitimately to the United States government. If they bring it to me freely, I propose to pay for it, not that it is their right but that it is cheaper for us and for the government. If I go after it I never pay. I never ask them to take the Oath, but treat them as they act. Every rebel takes the oath to save his property. I know no Union man in this country unlesshe openly declares, and shows by his acts that he is willing and ready to shoulder a musket in our cause. My soldiers know the penalty of any violation of orders, they also know what is right and proper, and if detected in wrong doing, will be punished to the extent of the law."

Under the direction of General Sherman, I sent Col. Rowett of the 7th Illinoas with a detail from each regiment to Corinth to bring forward all our camp equippage and the property belonging to the soldiers which was left there. Col. Rowett crossed the country to Eastport and from there crossed the Tennessee river and went on to Corinth. He met Johnson's 4th Alabama of Roddy's brigade and routed them, taking 35 prisoners. He also reported that Col. Cypert who was raising a regiment of loyal Tennessee men had 123 men and were established near Waynesboro. He brought news that they were greatly fri-

· 🗝 7000

ghtened at Corinth, looking for an attack but Gen. Forest was at Okolona and his and Lee's troops were concentrated for an attack, but I did not believe, myself, that Cavalry would attack the four or five thousand men behind the intrenchments at Corinth. General Stevenson in command there concentrated his troops in the forts and moved all his siege guns and ammunition to the forts. There were also reports that Roddy was crossing the Tennessee river in connection with General Wheeler for the purpose of attacking my line but I wired immediately to General Grant to find out where Gen. Wheeler was and found that he was north of Chattanooga and ho where near us; therefore paid no attention to the continual reports that were floating up and down my line.

I sent cut Col. Phillips to follow down the Tennessee river to Florence and get the actual condition of matters both south and north of the river. He reported on December 1st that he had performed this duty, going as far as Florence, that the forces crossing the Tennessee were very small and generally to obtain forage and that there were no large organized forces on the south of the Tennessee river and that all the confederate cavalry were concentrated at Okolona under General Forrest, whom they claimed was making preparations for an extensive raid. He captured five officers including General Bragg's inspector General and 35 enlisted men.

On December 2nd, I received a dispatch from General Grant in relation to the work north of Columbia informing me that Mr. Boomer was to build the bridge for Duck River and the prominent bridges for the whole road and that he would telegraph the commanding officers in the army of the Cumberland, located on the road, to immediately put their forces to work rebuilding it north of Columbia and for fear no one knows anything about that kind of work to obey instructions from me. I had made another trip over the road and was not very well satisfied with some of the work that was being done and on December 3rd I wrote to Capt. Tiedeman, my engineer, the following letter:

Pulaski, Dew. 3, 1863.

Capt. Tiedeman:

I am very impatient at the slow movement of the corps, by one excuse and another, they appear to see how slow they can work.

You have had ample time to put in all the bridges, one says he "waits for a plan" &c&c. Now if you have got an officer in charge who cannot put up a common trestle without a plan, report him to me and I will relieve him. They must got to work and put up something that will take cars over, and when a detachment is sent to a bridge, my orders are they shall go to work and put up something that will do.

I am told you are rafting stone to fill the cribs, these cribs will sink themselves and can be filled any time. What we want is action, practical sense and strong bridges. Every lieutenant under you can go and put up a bridge without a plan or any order except to put the bridge in, and hereafter when you send a squad of men to a work, give them such orders, and let "plans" go to the "dogs."

I must have more energy, more working and more accomplished by the corps than has been done. All your spare negroes not at work on bridges, set to work getting out cord wood for the road."

In answer to General Grant's dispatch placing the forces north of Columbia under me, I replied on December 3rd as follows:-

Pulaski, Dec. 3, 1863.

General Grant: -

I start one hundred bridge builders for Duck river this morning, but I would suggest that as the bridge for Duck river is on the cars in Nashville, and has be n for three weeks that Mr. Boomer send a maperintendent to take charge of putting it up. I will furnish him the men. It is an endless job at this stage of water to put in a trestle, and we can run the truss right up; between Duck river and Smiths station (end of the cars) are five small bridges that should be put in, so as to get the cars to Duck River. If Gen. Rousseau would detail two hundred men and put them to work on these bridges it would help us. There are hundreds of men in every regiment that can build a common trestle. I will have thirteen bridges finished in a week, when I ought to move south of Elk river. Some very large ones. Every bridge on the road is entirely destroyed. Please answer about Boomer and Duck river, so I may know what to do. I will go up there tomorrow."

On December 4th, I received a dispatch from General Grant that General Hurlbut reported that Forrest was approaching Corinth and for me to immediately mover the forces I had at Eastport to Corinth.

I sent Lt. Roberts with 25 men to push the ough to Eastport, and arriving at 10 amilion the 6th leaving on Dec. 4th, at 9:30 P. M. Col. Rinecker immediately moved with his command to Corinth. On his return he ran into several bands of guerrillas, capturing more men than he had with him and returned, delivering his prisoners without a single man missing. At one time he was surrounded by a regiment of the enemy but made his escape.

On December 8th, I made examination of the line north of Columbia to get accurate information as to the work required there to complete that portion of the railroad. I found that there were three bridges over Ruthenford Creek from two to three hundred feet long and from thirty-five to forty feet high; two bridge over Carter Creek two hundred feet long and thirty feet high and the bridge over Duck Creek which required two hundred foot of Howetruss and two of 100 feet. Boomer was to furnish each of these, we putting in the false works.

I communicated immediately with General Rossedu, giving him the details he should make and urging upon him prompt action but I came to the conclusion that they were so slow in responding that I would send my own men to Duck River. General Rossedu answered me that he had organized a force of 100 bridge builders but said his own command had been drawn on so heavily in the way of details for guard and other duty that he had been forced to call upon Col. Andrews, the Supt. of the road to furnish a force of regular bridge builders. I had to put my forces on these bridges and build them.

Washington, telling me of an interview with General Halleck in relation to the delayl in my promotion that had been urged by General Grant and Sherman. Gen. Halleck told him that the promotioms in Gen. Grant's army were made just as Grant recommended them but there were no vacancies. As there had been several promotions made, this rather surprised me because General Grant had assured me that I stood first. When I met General Grant on December 21st at Nashville, I called his attention to this statement of Gen. Halleck and he was quite indignant and surprised and immediately wired the War Department in relation to it but they answered him that there was then no vacancies. Gen. Grant said they apparently paid no attention to his recommendations.

The recruiting of negro regiments had become quite active in Tennessee and officers detailed for that purpose acting under orders from the Department and Army of the Cumberland were coming down my line and recruited the negroes that I had brought in to work on the road and on December 9th, I wrote General Grant that in pursuance of his instructions I pressed all the negroes in this country and put them to work on bridges, cutting wood, railroad balkasting, so as not only to have the ready to run but to have material to run it with, which it is now entirely destitute of.

The recruiting officer for colored troops claims the right to

The recruiting officer for colored troops claims the right to open recruiting officer along my line. If this id done, I lose my negroes, which at this time is very detrimental to the service, so far I have refused to allow the recruit. I don't want any trouble.

make of the same

with them and have assured them that when we were through with the negroes, I would see that they go into serivce."

In answer to this dispatch, I received the following from General Grant, Chattanooga, December 9th.

"Your action in prohibiting the recruiting of negroes from those you have pressed into the service for repairing railroad and providing fuel for trains is approved. Put in arrest any who dis obey your orders."

That settled the negro question and the recruiting officers left my lines. The guerrillas and citizens were still annoying me, cutting my telegraph, which I had completed and interfering with the small detachments scattered along the roads. I instructed Col. Phillipas to ascertain if he could who cut the telegraph lines and to assess the nearestsSecash livin near where it was cut one hundred dollars; inform them if they allow guerrillas to interfere with telegraph of railroad the known rebels would suffer, and to pick out prominent influential rebels and make them pay for the work of repairing. This had an excellent effect and the guerrillas kept away from the line showing that the the depredations were generally committed by citizens who were right in our midst.

On December 10th, I had a letter from Col Spencer of the Lav.

Ist Alabama informing me that in the attack of General Lee on the Memphis and Charleston railroad at Salisbury and Moscow, that one of the regiments of negores which I had raised made a fight at Moscow and defeated the enemy. This being the first engagement they were in, was very gratifying to those in the army who believed in the negron regiments. There was still quite a difference in opinion as to how they would stand under fire but it generally depended upon how well they were officered.

On December 15th, I received a letter from Mr. Peter A. Dey from Omaha. In speaking of the excitement in Omaha on account of the location of the terminal of the Union Pacific he says:

"There are a great many speculations in Omaha, and men are as wild as they were in '56 and '57. Dr. Durant has the absolute control of this road and will manage it for the present as he pleases. I wish in some respects he was a different kind of a man. I shall have charge of the work for the present; how long, I have not the remotest idea. I sent Brayton to the mountains to run lines through thepasses. I judge he has suffered beyond measure from the cold and storms. Brayton's lines are quite as favorable as could be anticipated. Gets a cheap line through Cheyenne Pass without a grade



of over 100 feet to the mile. I would like to do some work here now but can get nothing in the shape of an order from Mr. Durant to that effect.

no b I feel deeply interested in the success of this work, and I want to begin not wait until the southern line gets the start and we shall have to work hard to catch up."

> On December 15th, I also wrote General Sherman as follows:-Pulaski, Dec. 15, 1863.

General Sherman: -

By dispatch from General Grant I learn you are expected at coga in a few days. I therefore report the operation of my Chattanooga in a few days.

command, since you left.

We have nearly all the road from Duck River to Elk Mount finished, putting in some very larges structures. I have fortified most of the important points. The command north of Duck river not commencing the repairing of that part of the road as expected by you, under orders of Maj. Gen. Grant, I have put a heavy force of mechanics and laborers on that part of the work, andwill soon have five large bridges finished north of Duck river, and I trust Duck river bridge will be finished by the 1st of the month. I am now moving my working parties south of Elk river, and with the exception of one bridge will complete that work in the first week of January, 1864. The bridge spoken of is 700 feet long and 72 feet high, a sub-trestle and is a very heavy job. I will put upon it all the workmen I can. Everything appertaining to the road, its running department, &c was destroyed. I am replacing everything, water tanks and switches and have also large working parties getting out wood.

So far as meat, bread and forage is concerned, I have lived entirely off the country. I have had to haul my small rations from Nashville. The demand towards Chattanooga preventing the supply of cars to me. I have mounted regiments of infantry, from stock taken in this country. I have refitted my trains and artillery and am now in fine condition. The mounted infantry have been employed watching the Tennessee river, and the country towards Eastport, and have captured in several skirmishes some 300 prisoners including 21 officers. The work upon the railroad has been immense, and the running of mills, guarding trains, &c., have kept the command very busy and very healthy. I have examined this railroad its entire length, and the N. & C. R. R. from its junction with this, opposite to Decatur to Huntsville. The bridges on that road are entirely destroyed, but can be soon replaced. If the command is to hold this country, as protection to its most southerly point, Decatur should be held by our forces. This could also give us a fine point to operate from with out cavalry and mounted infantry. The enemy how have a considerable force there, fortified with one full battery, and use it as a point to annoy us. Over Elk and Duck rivers I have constructed pontoon bridges, which will soon be ready for use."

On Demember 15th I sent General Grant a dispatch him that I had captured a party of rebels under command of Maj. J. Fontaine, They had been on a reconnoisance along the line of the Chattanooga They connected with the telegraph and and Nashville railroad. took off a number of dispatches and I guess got pretty well posted. Their orders were to examine thoroughly the railroad between Columbis and Nashville and no doubt they will endeavor to burn They are evidently posted on our weakness of forces our bridges. betwee Columbia and Nashville and I have a man in from Montgomery Alabama, eight days on the road. All troops in Alabama picking up

- e40...

conscripts are ordered to Hardee. All men between 16 and 60 are called out to replace them. Two brigades last of November went through to Bragg. This is all the force that so far has gone up. The boys met large numbers of deserters."

At this time, my chief of scouts, L. H. Narone, known as Chickasaw was given a leave of absence and James Hensal, a very noted scout of the 7th Kansas was put in his place. The continual depredations of the guerrillas on small parties, etc. made it necessary for me to immedaitley put up block houses to protect the principal bridge stations, etc. and I issued the following circular showing our method of the constructions of

these works: Pulaski, Dec. 15, 1863. Circular: To the commanders of troops guarding railroad, mills, outposts, &c. within this command:

For the purpose of better securing the safety of troops guarding bridges, stations, depots, mills and outposts within this command, the commanding officer of each regiment or detachment stationed thereat will immediately cause earth works, stockades, or blockhouses to be built for the protection of troops, and in such position as to most effectually and safely command the place to be protected.

Where comands consist of one or more regiments small earthworks on commanding positions are preferable. Where, of only a few companies, stockades are best. A ditch on the outside should in all cases be made, with earth banked up to the loop holes. Blockhouses should be surrounded by a small earthwork, conforming in plan to the blockhouse itself, and which will mask it wholly, or in part from the artillery fire. Where there are thickets, woords or heavy growth of weeds within rifel range of any work, they must be removed at once. Water should always be kept at hand, inside of works, so that it can be obtained at all times.

Where timber is plenty an abbatis of timber should surround the work at a distance of 100 yards from the work and under its fire. It should be carefully staked down, the points sharpened and canes and twigs removed."

I also issued the following instructions to Captain Taylor who was in charge of the work at Sulphur Trestle, a very long, high bridge:

Pulaski, Dec. 16, 1863.

Capt. Taylor:

As fast as working parties finish their work at other places, they will be sent to you, and I want men kept at work. Get up your sub-trestle, and then your main trestle. Sufficient posts are standing for you to ascertain the height of the old sub-trestle and work to it. Throwint out the lower mud sills and blocks, put your bolts right in the old places. All your floor beams, horizontal and lateral bracing and everything else that can be worked, have sawed out at Hayes saw mill. In putting up trestle don't wait to put in braces, unless they are out, and will not detain you. Establish a good blacksmith's shop, and det men to work on the bolts. If you have not enough send to Elk river and get the iron from the old bridge and work it up. Divide your men into parties, so as to have hauling, chopping, hewing, framing and raising all going on at once. Order all citizens having the old bolts to bring them to you. The plane you have will do to work to and I think is reliable and you have better work right to it, except as above stated.

If you think best to put in the double mud sillswith block do so. Do not let it detain you however. If you have more negroes than you can work, se t them to chopping cord wood near you."

On December 16th, I received an order from General Grant to report to him at Chattanooga. This order was afterwards changed to Nashville and on the 17th I reached that place and met General Grant, Sherman, Sheridan, Granger, the commander of that post of Nashville, Gen. Granger and Rawlins. an Allyoftus of the Army of the Tennessee were a hard looking crowd; none of us had seend Nashville or any base of supplies since we had marched from the Mississippi River to Whattanooga and we had been hard at work building railways and foraging. We arrived in Nashville late in the afternoon and General Sherman took us to Geeral Grant's headquarters. Gen. Grant suggested that we should call upon the Military Governor of Tennessee, Andrew Johnson, and pay our respects to him. We. of course, followed General Grant, and were introduced to Governor Johnson. I remember that our uniforms were greatly worn, one or two of us wearing blouses with Army overcoats, and he looked at us with a very quizzical eye, until General Grant said, to excuse us, that he had not given us time since we reached the city to change our uniforms; but Gen. Grant knew we had no others. Governor Johnson was then a very radical men and was very emphatic in informing us that while he was Military Governor of Fennessee, no rebel would receive much consideration from him and brought his fist down on a piant in the room with such force that the sound from it started us all. We lefttheirwith the idea that rebels in Tennessee had better get out; but I hardly ever got my hands on rebel stock or supplies that I did not find Governor Johnson trying to pull them off.

After our visit General Sherman suggested that we should all go to the theatre that evening and under his leadership, we went to the principal opera house to hear the play of Hamlet. We were all strangers in Nashville; even General Grant was not well known. We and took seats in the balcony paid our way in and found the threater crowded with soldiers going to and returning from veteran furloughs. General Sherman, whom you all know was a great lover of the theater, he sat alongside of

me and soon commenced criticising the play, earnestly protesting that it was being murdered. I had to check him several times and told him unless he kept quiet, the soldiers would recognize him and there would be a scene. We had entered late and there soon came on t the scene where Hamlet soliloquizes over the skull of Yorick. audience was very still, endeavoring to comprehend the actor's words, when a soldier far back in the audience rose up and in a clear voice called out, as the actor held up the skull, "Say, pard, what is it, Yank or Reb?" The house appreciated the point and was instantly in an uproar, and General Grant said we had better leave, so we went quietly out, no one discovering Grant's or Sherman's presence. Gen. Sherman immediately suggested that we should find an oysterhouse and get something to eat and General Rawlins was put forward as guide and spokesman. He took us to a very inviting place. We went in and found there was only one large table in the place and there was one man sitting at it. Gen. Rawlins in a modest way, without informing the man who his party was, asked him if he would change to a smaller table and let us have that one. The man said the table was good enough for him and kept on eating. General Rawlins backed out into the street again. General Sherman said if we depended on Rawlins, we would not get anything to eat and that he would see what could be done. He hailed a man who pointed out another saloon kept by a woman, and to this Sherman took us, and she served us what we then considered a very nice oyster stew. As we sat around the hable, we talked more than we ate and by the time we had half finished our supper the woman came in and asked for the pay and said we must leave, as under the military rules, her house must close at 12 midnighh and it was then a few minutes after that hour; so out we got and took our way to Grant's headquarters, where we bunked down the best we could during the night.

Some of the staff heard of our evenings adventures and gave the news to the press and the next morning before breakfast, all the parties were present to apologize to Grant, saying they did not recognize him; s we were out of our own jurisdiction and in that of the Army of the Cumberland but Grant, in his modest way, satisfied

them that he had no complaint; however, there poured in on him for all of us complimentary tickets and invitations to almost everything in Nashville.

After breakfast we all assembled in a large room at headaurters to hear what General Grant had to say to us. He took up with us the plan for a winter campaign. He proposed himself to take about 30,000 of the troops concentrated at Chattanooga and transport them by the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers to New Orleans and there take with him the troops of General Canby and go thence to Mobile and attack that place. General Sherman was to go to Memphis, pather up all the forces along the Mississippi River including the troops at Vicksbrug and Natchez together with the 17th Corps and, march from Vicksburg to Meridian and thence join Grant at Mobile. When that place was taken, it would open the Alabama river and enable a movement to be made on Atlanta using that as a base. take the 16th corps which was then located on the line of the Nashville and Decatur road, to go with about M,000 cavalry that Gen. Wr. Sooy Smith had concentrated near Nashville and sweep down to the Tom Bigbee River returning thru through northern Alabama, Northern Mississippi and Western Tennessee attacking any force of the enemy that might be met and destroying all the railroads and provisions that had been stoped in that country, this with a view of making it difficult for any of the confederate armies to again occupy the territory, so as to enable Sherman and Grant when the spring and summer campaign came on to utilize all the union troops that had been occupying that country.

That evening we were all invited to Gen. Granger's house for dinner and we met there Gen. Granger's mother, an old lady of the old army, who was very much disturbed at the methods we were using in making war. She criticised me first for the drastic orders I had issued against guerrillas and others for the protection of the lines of road I was building. I slipped out from any controversy with her by simply saying I was obeying the order of superior officers. She then turn ed on General Sherman and criticized very severely his orders and the action of the troops in their movement to the relief of Knoxville. General Sherman was so much of a

Mer

gentlemen and a soldier and tried to avoid any controversy with her but she pressed him so hard that he finally turned upon her and as I remember said, "My dear Mrs. Cranger. They had no right to send me to the relief of Knoxville. My troops had marched from Memphis do Chattanooga; they were without clothing, blankets and shoe and when I got into that country, I found it filled with everything the soldiers needed and I authorized them to take it and he said, you ought to know me well enough to know that when it came to the rebel citizen or question of feeding and clothing a union soldiers, where I would stand."

This put a very cold, wet blanket upon that dinner and very little was said afterwards.

While we were at Nashville, the Mayor of Galena came there and presented General Grant with a horse. (I think this horse was known as "Egypt".) We were all together at Gen. Grant's head-quarters when the mayor took out a very fine address upon parchment and delivered it to General Grant who seemed to be abolutely non-plused and not knowing what to say. I think he had written something and tried to find it, any how, his response was nothing compared to that of the mayor and after it was all over, General Grant said to me, "Dodge, if they send me many more horses, it will be necessary for someone to send forage."

On the 22nd, we all left for our commands to carry out the plans General Grant had given us. He reported them to Washington but President Lincoln objected because he was afraid if we took so many troops from Chattaneoga, that Longstreet, who was occupying Eastern Tennessee with his Corps. would return to Chattaneoga, or middle Tennessee and undo all we had accomplished in the Battel of Chattaneoga. General Grant had no fear of this but he made up his mind to go immediately to East Tennessee and take the forces there under General Foster, attack ad defeat Longstreet, and then come back and carry out his plans. He found after reaching Knoxwille that it was impracticable to concentrate General Foster's forces and others that would be necessary to make a successful campaign in time to accomplish what he desired, so he returned and had to abandon his

-842

general plan of campaign, only sending Sherman to Vicksburg, who matched out to Meridian and returned, while the 17,000 cavalry under General William Sooy Smith, who was to join Sherman overland, moved south fighting and driving the enemy until he reached West

Point where he met a superior force of the enemy and returned to Memphis. General Grant said afterwards that he ought to have carried

out his Knoxville campaign that there would have been plenty of time

to have done so and made the movement to Mobile.

On December 23rd, I returned to Pulaski and immediately made preparations to carry out my part of the plan, General Sherman had sent instructions to General Logan with the 15th corps to stretch out and occupy the country along the Memphis and Charleston road and to rebuilt it to a connection with the Washingleand Deca road, south of the Elk River and requested me to post Logan as to the condition of matters on that line as my forces had been occupying I wrote Gen in relation to our meeting at Nashville and that I had nearly completed the line from Nashville to Decatur, with the exception of three heavy bridges, which I proposed to cross temporarily telling him that the work between Huntsville and the Junction was light; that he would find all the bridges out, but would have no trouble in building as common trestles were sufficient; that for Limestone, a perminent bridge would be made in Chicago and put in after the temporary one was finished and the road running; also t that the country that he would have to occupy from Huntsville West was very rich, full of forage and meat. On December 28th, I received the following reply from him: Scottsboro, Dec. 28, 1863.

My Dear General Dodge:
Your letter of Dec. 24th was received yesterday. We are pushing along the road westward, the roads being almost impassible. But small quantities of forage and stock remain in the country and the little there is cannot be realized without great difficulty on account of the bad roads and weakness of mules. The Pioneer Corps are all at work corduroying and repairing bridges and will be kept

My command is in excellent spirits and a large number of them will enlist in the veteran corps, and I will, of course, lose force by the furloughing of 25 per cent. I will ride forward on the road towards Huntsville today and satisfy myself as to the condtion of things and make arrangements for the advance of the column and you may rely on my making the connection with you by the 1st of February if such a thing is possible.

The enemy cannot annoy us much on this side of the river, and we are provided with means of crossing whenever we wish.

I am tryly thankful for your kind offer of coOoperation and will always be ready to place at your disposal the 15th A.C. or any

portion of it whenever you may need its services. We all remember with admiration the activity and skill with which you and your command helped in the great march to the relief of Chattanoga and have no doubt but that your line of communication will be kept fully up to its requirements. Very truly, John A. Logan, Maj. Gen.

My movement south of Decatur was not to take place until my troops, which had veteranized would return, which would probably be the first of February or later. At this time there was a great deal of excitement and great anxiety among all the old soldiers to reinlist. The Government had given all those who would reinlist when their term of three years was out, a month's leave of absence and every regiment in my command, except one whose term of service was not expiring, reinlisted so that it reduced my forces to less than 4000 men and these troops were moving inorth, generally in regimental organization and there reception there was something wonderful. They all came back brining many recruits and greatly improved. The action of the Government was a very remarkable and successful stroke of policy. Under the excitement and the great number of re-inlisted regiments it carried with them a great many who intended to leave the service, so that there were very few in in any of the veteran regiments who refused to re-enlist and even some of those, after the others returned, re-enlisted. A great many of the regiments took advantage of the following instructions from Washington: -

First: That the term three fourths as used in connection with veteran regiments under existing orders is understood to mean three fourths of the organization serving, and does not include men absent in prisons, and General Hospitals, &c.

Second: That men belonging to veteran regiments who have not served two years and consequently do not come within the limits of re-enlistment, will be permitted to go on furlough with the main body of the regiment in case it goes as an ofganization, provided they show their willingness to re-enlist as soon as they come within the limits. The men, however, who come withint the limits for recruiting and yet decline to pe-enlist will not be granted furloughs.

Third: That no volunteer recruit shall be rejected on account of height, who is 5 feet or over. Present regulations being thus modified. James B. Fry, Pro. Mar. Gen. By order of Maj. Gen. U. S. Grant.

In writing General Sherman on the 25th in relation to the en-

listments in my command, I said:

"The re-enlisting of veterans is weakening my command very fast and much more than I suppose it would. The late order from the War Department allowing recruits to go with veterans, takes all. Out of twenty one regiments I have three that are not entitled to re-enlist as veteran volunteers, and of the nineteen regiments

every regiment will get three fourths of its veterans, thereby allowing under the new order the recruits with the regiments to take benefit of the furlough.

If I have 4000 of my command left I shall do well, and shall be forced to keep the lllth Illinois Infantry here until my regiments begin to return, when I will send it forward. It is possible that I may have to contract my lines, and bring all up this side of the Elk. In that case a brigade from the 15th A.C. could occupy Athens, but the contemplated movement to the west will, I suppose, render me safe for the present.

As matters now look I can hold my line in tact and get along very well, but any raid or movement this way might put me to my trumps and force me to concentrate suddenly and leave exposed all the works on the road. I do not anticipate any such move, but notify you of my exact condition that you can advise me if you consider necessary.

My regiments will begin to return about February 10th to the 15th, and then will come in pretty fast."

General Crook of a Cavalry Brigade that was to accompany General Smith in his movement into Mississippi came to me very poorly mounted and I turned over to him all the extra stock I had. General Smith wired me from Nashville urging me to give Gen. Crook at least six or eight hundred horses and to instruct him to take all he could find in the country.

A very singular occurrence in the promotion of Col. E. W. Rice commanding the 7th Iowa Inft. on my recommendation and that of General Grant and Sherman, the war Department had ordered his promotion. The Clerks carried out the order. Instead of promoting Col. E. W. Rice, they promoted his brother, Col. Samuel Rice of another regiment and the Commission had been issued to his brother and he accepted it, not knowing that it was intended for E. W. Rice. When this was discovered Col. Rice was ordered to Washington to report to the Adjutant General to endeavor to have the matter rectified and on December 27th I received a letter from him in which he says:

"I learn that your promotion was recommended by Grant and that on the 19th of August Halleck placed your name a' the head of his list of recommendations and Stanton endorses it "Approved." It now awaits a vacnacy only. My brother resigned his commission as Brig. Gen in my favor but the War Department would not accept his resignation and they have not yet made my appointment but I am assured that it will be made. All the officers through whose hands my brother's resignation passed disapproved of it as they had recommended his promotion after the battle of Helena and the War Department declined to accept it for that reason so that Col. Rice whom I had recommended was cheated out of it and did not receive it for six months or more.

On December 28th I sent the following dispatch to General Grant giving the location of the enemy's forces, reported to me by one of the spies who came into the camp. He says: One of our mentage in. Left Cove Spring the 19th, Says on the 16th Hardee had his headquarters at Dalton, with his army near there. One brigade of

infantry at Resaca. Kelly's division of cavalry was with Hardee. At Voce Spring there was a brigade of cavalry, Martin's division of the 1st, 2d and 3d Tennessee under command of Col. Wheeler of the First Tennessee. They were building barracks and expected to stay for the winter. In Rome there was a large force of State troops, estimated at fifteen thousand. Martin's other two brigades of cavalry were with Longstreet; on his way here, the spy passed through Gadsden, Somerville, Courtland, etc. and found no troops at those places.

On Dec. 29th, 1 sent another dispatch to Gen. Grantas follows: We captured a mail today from Bragg's Army. The letters all speak of going into winter quarters at Dalton, Resaca and Rome. Also of the appointment of J. E. Johnson to the command of that army. The Chattanooga Rebel of the 20th announces his appointment and states he would take command the next week." This gave us the first news of the Appointment of Johnson to the command of Gen. Bragg's army. I sent another dispatch to Gen. Grant on the same date, telling him that a scout had captured a dispatch from Gen. Roddy to Gen. Forrest, in which he said he had 16 boats below Florence ready to cross on. This was all important informa tion to our army and we immediately made preparations to meet Gen. Forest, should he cross. I immediately notified Gen. William Sooy Smith who informed General Crpok and the other cavalry forces moving in that direction; in fact the movement of Gen. Smith's forces stopped this movement of Forest and forced him to move south to concentrate against General Smith in his movement.

The correspondent of the Cinninnati Commercial gives this /6 Army Corps.
account of the Left Wing, at that time in middle Tennessee:

"I have seen tens of thousands of troops, but never any who, in my opinion, surpasses Dodge's in soldierly qualities. Gen. Dodge is of the same school as Gen. Grant; a plain, unassuming man but a soldier. He is distinguished for good sense and business capacity, as well as for fighting. You will, perhaps; wonder how a modest Brig. General, without friends in Washington, comes to have so large a command. The secret is, he stands high in the confidence of Gen. Grant, ranking next in estimation to McPherson, and Sherman. Dodge is famous for taking the responsibility. He caught a spy last week, on Friday and ordered a military commission for his trial on Saturday the case was finished on Wednesday, and he was hung at two o'clock today. I suppose he thought an example was needed here, and, to judge from the accuracy of the inforatmion found in his despatches it would seem so.

The General does not require them to take the oath of allegiance, but to conduct themselves as good citizens. Soon after his arrival at Pulaski, he was called on by a resigned officer of the Confederacy, a Colonel, who said to him: "I am a rebel. So are all people in this country, though they deny it while you are here. Now, what shall I do? I don't want to take the oath of allegiance." Said the General: "I'll tell you what to do; go home, and behave yourself; as long as you stay quietly at home, you will not be molested; but if you go to burning railroad bridges, or corresponding with the enemy, I'll hang you."

General Dodge is a man of his word, and he would not live about a little thing like that."

On January 13th a spy arrived from Gen. Johnson's Army and I reported to Gen. Sherman that Johnson's arm; was at Dalton and Resaca; not to exceed 25000 men. One brigade of Martin's Cavalry is at Cave Springs. The state militia at Rome. Roddy is in the Tuscumbia and Russellville Valley with not to exceed 1600 effective men. There are great desertions from the North Alabama and Mississippi Troops.

I also reported to him to that the work assigned to me on the railroad was vittually completed to the connection with the Memphis and Charleston road and that we were now waiting for the completion of the work north of Columbia.

I sent Mr. M. F. Hurd, who was an enlisted man of the 2nd Iowa but who was a very competent Civil Engineer and had had a good deal of experience in railroad builging and operating, to Louisville, Cincinnati and St. Louis with the engineering instruments of the corps to have them repaird and to get what information he could as to R.R. supplies, equippment, etc. at those places.

I received authority to raise the two 2nd and 3rd Alabama Infantry, A. D. and appointed the officers for the regiments from the different commands in the copps. The slacking up of work gave them a good opportunity to recruit from the negores whom I had working for me, who were now out of employment and they soon filled these regiments.

On January 9th, I applied to the Hon. E. M. Stanton, Sec. of War, for authority to raise one or more regiments of Cavalry from Alabama stating that there were large numbers coming to my lines and a better class of men than had ever come before, being men who have furnished substitutes when they drafted for the service. Beveral of them want

to raise companies and I have no doubt it could be easily done def.
They come to me because I recruited the 1st Alabama Cavalry at
Corinth, Miss, which is now nearly 1000 strong. I also asked
authority to appoint the officers which I would select from the old
regiments now in the service, stating my advance is opposite Decautr
and at points on the river easily reached from the Alabama Mountains,
from which these men seek our lines. We have to feed them and it is
no more than right that they should enter the service. Most of them
are anxious to do so but prefer to go into organizations of their
own.

On Jan. 12th, I wrote Gen. Sherman stating that all my regiments had remnlisted that would do so under the orders and that eight of them with three batteries had gone home; seven more are now ready congeston to go and have been for some time but the north of Nashville has stopped the transportation of all our troops.

Gen. Crook's Cavalry Division reported to me that a part had gone to Western Tennessee; some 600 head of stock that I had gotten for Gen. Logan together, I had to turn over to Gen. Crook as he came with 1500 dismuunted men. I said if we could make a lodgment at Decatur it would give an outlet to a large number of union people who are seeking our lines and who would join our Alabama regiment.

I also enclosed the following list of regiments that had be-enlisted, giving the number mustered and the number furloughed:

39th Ohio, mustered 474, furloughed 493; 43d Ohio, musteres 453, furloughed 454; 27th Ohio, Mus. 157, furl. 200. 7th Ohio, Mus. 236, furl. 284. 7th Illinois, mus. 266, furl 307. 52d Illinois, Mus. 289, furl. 304. 3d Michigan Battery, Mus. 50, furl 50. Co. H. 1st Missouri Artillery, Mus. 65, Furl, 99. Co. B. 1st Michigan Artillery, Mus. 40, Furl 80. 64th Illinois, Mus. 181, Not furloughed. 66th Indiana, Mus. 286. Total, mustered 3,395; furloughed 3,179.

The discrepancy between "mustered" and "Furloughed" arises from men who have not served 2 years. filing their re-enlictments and

The discrepancy between "mustered" and "Furloughed" arises from men who have not served 2 years, filing their re-enlistments and furloughs under authority granted by the Secretary of War."

On Ganuary 30th, I received a dispatch from General Grant that he had arrived in Nashville and hereafter that would be his headquarters. He said that he had had a very cold rough trip from Knoxville to Louisville; the roads were in a horrible condition, having been very muddy and then frozen so that it was almost impossible for a horse to travel but he had made remarkably good time, accompanied by his staff and an escort and was received through Kentucky with a great deal of enthusiasm.

-00-

He stated that he had avoided most of this admiration from the fact that everyone supposed he was an old men and his surgeon, who was a white-haired men, was picked out to be Grant, which allowed Grant to slip away and get out of the crowds.

I notified Gen. Grant that all my work was completed except the Duck River Bridge which Boomer was erecting and I feared the trains would be held there for two or three weeks.

On January 16th, I received a letter from Col. James M. Alexander of the 1st alabama Infantry, A.D. Corinth. He says:

"I suppose you still take some interest in the 1st Alabama. I wish to speak of it especially, that you may know how we are getting along. I am glad to say everything moves like clock-work and has ever since you left. It is given up by everyone that ours is the best regiment here, white or black. We have mastered every part of company and battallowirill. We still keep up squad and battallowirill every day when the weather permits. On January 1st, we were just 952 strong. Of this number only four in the hospitals; not one died during the month of December. Not a single man in the guard house or in arrest. Not a single officer or enlisted man has any charge against him in the regiment or out of it. Out of 39 commissioned officers, all are on duty in the regiment except Lt. Haskins, detailed in Memphis. Of the 35 commissioned officers, 34 do not use intoxicating drinks. I do my own punishing. I have six balls with chains, all weigh about 120 lbs. each without chains. The sight of these is all that is needed. Our men are in the best of spirits and are in good condition every way; none desert. Is there any way by which we can get into your command again?"

On January 18th I received a letter from Mr. H. C. Crane of the Railroad Union Pacific, New York, in which he inquires at to freight on iron rails from New York to Omha. He said he had just commenced shipping. This was the first rail going to the Union Pacific.

The farmers through Tennessee had come to recognize the freedom of the negroes and were willing to employ them and on Jan. 19th, I wrote the following letter to Gen. Lorenzo Thomas, Adjt. Gen. of the Army:

Pulsaski, Jan. 19, 1864.

Adjt. Gen. Thomas:

There are in this state a large number of planters who have decided to act upon the fact that slaves are free and that they can no longer hold them to labor; and they are anxious to have some settled plan upon which they can act in employing such negroes as the Government does not require. I have always encouraged planters and farmers to hire their slaves (such as I could not enlist) and in most cases they are anxious and willing; but to do it successfully the commander of the troops or the General Government must lay down some policy upon which the farmer can act, and by which they can hold the freedmen to live up to their part of the contract. Those that come to my lines I generally put to work on abandoned plantations; or hire out to parties to pick cotton, &c. But this is only a very small proportion of the slaves in the country who are not fit for the army, and I desire your views as to fair wages. What would be a proper method for making the slaves (after having voluntarily contracted to work a year) live up to their contract? A uniform price would be better, from the fact that it will keep negroes from running about to obtain higher prices.

I submit this matter as it is different, you see, from the method



pursued on the Mississippi River, from that fact that most of the plan tations are occupied by their owners and many of the slaves are still upon them. The policy once inaugurated that all the slaves in the State are free, and must be hired and their labor paid for, it will force all to adopt the policy. No matter whether those opposed to it agree to it or not, they will have to do it for self-protection, as negroes will go where they can get paid for their labor and Government will protect them in doing it. protect them in doing it.

I may state that I have already recruited, under your old order, two regiments in North Alabama, known as 2nd and 3d Alabama Infantry A.D and will soon have another under way. I find no difficulty in raising a few regiments whenever I happen to stopon any march, and would like authority to appoint from my command a board of officers to examine applicants from the command for positions in the regiments.

I will soon forward list of officers who have been appointed by me to the regiments named, that they may receive proper appointments from you!

On Jan. 10th, I received notice from Lt. Bailey that the trains were running from Nashville to Duck River, waiting there for the completion of that bridge before they could cross. I was very anxious to purbhase twenty acres where my house stands in Council Bluffs and instructed my brother to buy it for me if possible and on January 17th he wrote me that it was owned by Dr. Williams who lived in Missouri.

"When here last fall he would not price this tract; He further says: said he wanted to live on it himself. He says, The Pacific  $^{
m R}$ . R. Co. have done nothing as yet except to speculate off of the Nebraskians; after they got all the property they want and their charter territorial legislature work will be commenced. The President through, made a starting point on the river in Omaha township which gave the company privilege of making depot grounds either two miles north or south of Omaha City; they threatened to make it at Saratoga; then the Florence Land Co. made large offers if they would follow the river to their place and thence west, which would give them a chance to compete with Omaha. With these levers the company has drawn out of Omaha City property owners, one mile of front on the river, with nearly all the land between the bluff on which the Herndon House stands and the river. The location of the Pacific R.R. is having a most favorable effect on this section of the country."

Mr. Peter A. Dey wrote me as follows:

"Mr. Durant has got the whole thing in his hands, but is managing it as he has everything else that its in his hands. A good deal spread a and a good deal do nothing. He considers it a big thing, the Big Thing of the age and himself the father of it - while I am afraid that Blair of the Northern road, who is a systematic and persevering sort of amanwill use him as he chooses. Durant is now talking of connecting with them either at a point between Desoto and Canning City on the Missouri or at a point in the Papillion Valley directly west of that, whereas if he would run his line to Fremont by the shortest practical route they would make their connection at the Bluffs, for they never will cross the river without a decided advantage gained by it. I cannot make him see it, however, and if I attempt to put a little common sense in his head, he flies off in a fit of excitement. The last telegraph from him threatened to make the connection in Iowa. I advised him in that event to run up the valley of the Middle Coon and cross over into the Boyer as we originally talked of. He has also some idea of leaving the river at Bellevue crossing the Platte near the mouth of Salt Creek and running into the Blue and reaching the Kearney. If the geography was a little larger, I think he would order a survey round by the moon and a few of the fixed stars, to see if he could not get some more depot grounds or wild lands or something else, that he don't want, and he does no' know what to do with it when he gets it.

Doctor needs common sense more than anything else and I have been so completely disgusted with his various wild ideas, that I have been disposed repeatedly to abandon the whole thing. I hate to do it

as there is a great future in this thing, if judiciously and prudently managed.

We should have had all our ties and the grading under contract to Loup Fork, before this and anxious as I have been for this, have not been able to force him to any point at all.

Write me when you have leisure. I think a summer in the mountains would restore your health perfectly. Cannot advise you as to investment as the Doctor may want to connect towarms with the route through Mayor. as the Doctor may want to connect tomorrow with the route through Texas."

On January 20th, I wrote General Sher an requesting ormission to approve the sentence and order a court martial for the execution of a soldier in the 2nd Alabama Infantry A.D. stating it was an aggravating case of desertion and an example is needed to stop the desertions. regiment is doing "Fatigue Duty" in pioneer corps, as teamsters, &c. and many of them desert. An example will stop it all. This is the first man caught and now is the time to make it tell.

On Jan. 22nd, I received a letter from M. W. Robbins of the 4th Iowa stating that the 9th and 4th Iowa and 16th Ohio of the brigade had veteranized. He says: "Our men are fixed quite comfortably now. A part of them have built log huts with chimneys, and all of them that are in tents have chimneys and fire-places. The mud is the greatest drawback we have. When not frozen up we have the worst form of mud imagainable throughout the camp. A great many men come into our lines every day; their object is to keep out of the rebel army and to keep from starving.

An organization of citizens in connection with some men of the 18th Missouri had been formed for the purpose of stealing under the plea of foraging from my corps and it operated from about Lynnville to Nashville. Col. Mizner had complained a good deal of them, charging it up to my command. I set my detectives to work and on Jan. 25th, I wired Col. Mizner as follows:

"I have caught seven of the citizen rebels and detected the gang in the 18th Missouri down here and put a regiment in its place. About twentyfour men have done the mischief and they are connected clear through to Nashville, run horses, stores, etc. through. A part of the gang live at or near Franklin, but I cannot get their names."

It is evident to me that the enemy south of the Tennexxee River had discovered what a weak force I had along my line and they were preparing to make an attack upon it. I had no cavalry, except one regiment of mounted Infantry and a part of that had left.

On January 26th they crossed the river in two places attacking Athen I had received word of this movement and had sent Col. Phillips with his command down the Tennessee to attack the force that had crossed at Florence I reported the result of their attack to Gen. Sherman as follows:



Pulaski, Jan. 29, 1864.

Ma Gon W.T. Sherman: -

I have the honor to report that Gen. Roddy with Patterson's and Hannan's beginnents and two pieces of artillery attacked Athens, Ala. on January 26th at 4 o'clock, A. M., opening upon the town without any notice with his artillery. The shot and shell going through several houses occupied by citizens, and after two hours fighting was repulsed and defeated by Capt. Adams and 75 men of the 9th Illinois Mounted Infantry that being all the force then at the place. The plan of the attack as has since been ascertained by captured dispatches was as follows:

Col. Johnson and his brigade, stationed near Florence was to moved upon the Florence road and attack the twon from the north-west while Gen. Roddy in person, with the forces above named, was to cross the Tennessee river at Brown's ferry eighteen miles from Athens and ten miles below Decatur, with his men dismounted.

The movement of Johnson was defeated by Col. Miller of the 2d division, army of the Cumberland, who fought and checked him at Shoal Creek bridge 35 miles west of Athens the evening before the attack.

The force at Athens with a force from Pulaski had moved out towards Florence the day before the attack for the purpose of driving Johnson's force across the Tennessee river. Gen. Roddy did not know of this and moved up in accordance with his plans, but hearing of the force to the west of him, and getting Col. Johnson's despatch that he could not support him as he was checked by a heavy force in front, he regreated. We had no force to follow him.

Capt. Adams and his men displayed great coolness and judgment, and fought with determined bravery, checking Gen. Roddy's command and holding them some two hours, enabling us to send off all stores and transportation. The noble conduct of these troops saved all of our bridge parties, both north and south of Athens, as well as all the structures lately put up. Had the attack succeeded it would have been very detrimental to us and delayed the opening of the road for a long time. I think such instances of the repulse of so large a force by so few men without fortifications or artillery very seldom occur, and must resound to the great credit of our arms, while it equally disgraces the enemy.

Our loss was about 20 killed, wounded and missing. The force at Mooresville under Col. Briggs was notified of the attack at sunrise by Mmj. Park, superintendent of repairs on the railroad, who urged that officer to fall upon the rear of the enemy at Brown's ferry by a road leading direct to that place, down the river. Had this been done the entire force of the enemy would have been captured.

entire force of the enemy would have been captured.

Lt. Col. Phillips heard of the anticipated attack and returned promptly making direct form Browns ferry, but his advance arrived there only just in time to see the last of the rebels over. He marched all night and day until he arrived on the ground."

On January 27th I wired General Grant that Col. Miller of the Army of the Cumberland had had a severe fight near Florence; the enemey was repulsed and several prisoners taken. the Prisoners reported that Corinth had been abandoned. General Grant wired me that he thought this was probably true as General Sherman had already authority to withdraw his troops from it using them in his campaign will be thought necessary.

On January 26th, I sent my Military Record from Feb. 1, 1861 to Feb. 1, 1864 to the War Department in compliance with an order from the Adjutant General.

On Jan. 24th, I arranged with Gen. P. D. Roddy, commanding the troops south of the Tennessee for an exchange of prisoners.

On January 29th, I received an answer from my application to the Secretary of War to raise the 2nd Alabama Cavalry, through Gen. Grant, authorizing me to recruit and officer the regiment.

General Grant sent me a dispatch asking me if I had a competent officer for a special duty that I could recommend. I recommended Captain C. P. Chenoworth, my Inspector General. He performed this duty for general Grant and did it so well that General Grant sent me a dispatch asking me if Towas willing to spare him to go on his staff. I immediately answered him that while he was one of the best officers. I had ever had on my staff, that I would be pleased to see him get the promotion and he was taken away from me permanently. General Grant was so pleased with this officer's work that after he became President of the United States, he sent him to China on duty for the State Department, where he was of great service to the Government.

On January 30th, I wired Gen. Grant that spies sent me word from Montgomery and Mobile that no troops had left General Johnsons but all the scattering commands had been hurried to Mobile as well as troops from Charleston; that the rumor there was that there was a movement for the capture of Mobile; this, of course, was a concentration on Gen. Sherman's movement on Meridian.

On Jan. 30th I received the following letter from General Grant in relation to movements that I had suggested:

Nashville, Jan. 30, 1964.

General Dodge:

Mour despatch suggesting the organization of a mounted force sufficient to hunt down and drive the enemy's cavalry now threatening our railroads in middle Tenness ee, to a point beyond any immediate apprehension of danger is approved of, but owing to the expedition already ordered and in motion, our cavalry and mounted force is so reduced that it will be difficult to get up a force strong enough to cross the south side of the Tennessee at present. The enemy, however, must not be permitted to remain on this side. You will therefore, collect and organize at once, under a competent officer, all the mounted men possible, of your command, for the purpose suggested in your despatch and indicated above. The place for them to rendezvous and when and where to move, for the attainment of the desired object will be left entirely to your own mudgment and direction.

will be left entirely to your own mudgment and direction.

A copy of your despathh of the 19th inst. giving information obtained by the force of yours, from six miles west of Florence, the day before, was, on date of receipt, sent to General Chomas with the following directions, viz: "You will direct General Crook to organize an expedition at once, of sufficient force, and proceed without delay by the most practicable route and drive Roddy out from where he now

is, and destroy all boats and materials he can find, that might in any contingency be used by the enemy in crossing the Tennessee river."

No report has yet been had from General Crook. General W.F. Smith was to have moved from Memphis the 25th inst., via Okalona, with a large force of cavalry; General Sherman moving at the same time from Vicksburg eastward a formidable force of all arms, and General Logan has already thrown a pontoon bridge across the Tennessee river at Larkin's ferry, over which hewill cross in a day or two at farthest, moving toward Rome with all his command, leaving only his railroad guards be hind him. The forces at Chattanooga are not inactive. From all these expeditions and threatening movements it is hoped much will be accomplished, and especially in forcing the enemy back from within striking distance of our communications."

As I had received no answer from the Department Head up to this time, I had sent Col. Phillips with what mounted force I could collect down the Tennessee river with instructions to fight and drive out any enemy there was there and on Feb. 1st I answered General Grantss letter as follows:-

Pulaski, Feb. 1, 1864.

Gon. Crant:-

I am in receipt of yours of January 39th and so far as it contemplates driving the enemy south of Tennessee I have anticipated your orders. The force sent by General Thomas, struck the enemy on this side of Tennessee, 5th 11 feaving the enemy on this side of the river. I immediately fitted up what mounted men I could preferring to take the chances of getting whipped in the offensive of standing here to ge attacked at the pleasure of Roddy. This force moved out under Lt. Col. Phillips thursday morning, struck the enemy Friday morning and continued driving him Friday night. Johnson's brigade of Roddy's division recrossed to the south side of the river, Col. Phillips pursuing them so hard that he captured all their train &c. some 20 mule teams, 200 head of cattle and 600 head of sheep and about 100 head of horses and mules. He also burned Foster's factory and mill which had supplied them. This has cleared the north side of the The point we should in my opinion sieze upon as soon as posible and hold is Decatur. It is the best point to obtain information of movements of the enemy's force as well as for our cavalry to operate from, either south, east or west; and I do not beli ve this line of communication can be successfully used, unless that point is I notice what you say in relation to movements of General Sherman. He telegraphs all news to me and explaims the movements of troops toward Mobile which I telegraphed you yesterday and today. There no doubt but considerable force has gone in that direction. I think, however, only one division and one brigade have left Johnson.

Wou are aware that I have guarded our line of communications for a long time and I trust when the campaign opens General Grant will see fit to allow me to take part in it. I am always willing and cheerfully acquiesent in any duties assigned me, but like all others sometimes have a preference. I trust you will not consider it as out of place for me to express the above wish. I judge from your letter that the present movement is only tamporary. The reports and movements of the enemy look as though Johnson were now south of the Etowah river."

People were coming down from the north and endeavoring to go through our lines to buy cotton and to specualate in the country we had occupied and my brother had written me to know if I could not make some investments there myself and on January 31st I answered him saying, I am using the money I earn in New York speculating in stock. My friends are on the inside tract and are bound to make me some money.

My funds invested in St. Louis are doing well. I want to keep my spare money as far any from the army as possible as any used inside of the lines by an officer is misconstrued, no matter how legitimate the operation; therefore, I will not use any here."

On February 1st the scout arriving from Salem and I immediately wired General Grant telling him that he reported a division from Johnson's army and one brigade beside other troops spoken of in my former dispatch, had moved west towards Mobile and Meridian. This spy also said it was common talk that Johnson was to fall back behind the Etowah. This information rather distrubed General Grant as he was fearful that Johnson might try to concentrate on Sherman in his movement from Vicksburg to Meridian and he requested me to get all the information from that quarter that I could.

On Feb. 3rd, I received very grave complaint from Col. Mizner in relation to the action of my troops and I immediately wrote him asking for detailed particulars and he wrote me as follows:-

Columbia, Feb. 3, 1864.

Gen. Dodge:

The acts referred to have been complained of almost every day for the last two months. The best union Citizens here say that such disgraceful conduct has never been known in this section, by Federal or C onfederate troops. Men have run wild, and many officers have protested against it; 7th Illinois, and cavalry have acted in this way The very submistence has been taken from families who have taken the oath and given evidence of loyalty. These people Gen. Rousseau is determined to protect. I doubt if there is a smoke house that has not been robbed between Lynnville and Smithland. This by men who have rations. Major Hanna, 50th regiment Illinois infantry, sneered at my protection papers to parties where my jurisdiction extends and under pretense of leaving a team would turn out worthless stock he had with him while he and his men clearedout the smoke houses. This after you had assued me no more stock would be taken in Murry County. Gen. Rousseau has directed me to send Sergt. Major Henry under guard to Nashville, if he comes near me pressing negroes to be soldiers."

These complaints had become very aggressive and upon my own investigation I found that my troops had simply been obeying orders in taking stock, forage and in bringing the negroes in to work on the road; that so far as pillaging or robbing, it was mostly citizens or other troops that were moving up and down the pike without officers but In finally appealed to General Grant in the matter in the following letter:

Pulaski, Feb. 4, 1864 .

General Grant:

I enclose copies of two dispatches received through regular military channels from Col. Mizner. It has been my endeavor to do all I could in carrying out my orders not to encroach upon any officer. You are aware that I have had to feed 12,000 men while I have been here; also six thousand animals; that I have mounted three regiments of infantry with stock taken from the country and refitted my entire trains. When I arrived here I had no animals fit for service having turned over everything I had at Corinth to the 15th Army Corps before I was ordered to move, and when the order came I moved out with just what I had and could lay my hands on. That irregularities and depredations have been committed I have no Col. Mizner reported eight cases to me. I immediately made thorough investigation and found a gang existed in the 18th Missouri which was connected with a gang of citizens, ten of which I have in irons and every one of whom I will hang if convicted. enclose the orders in which I have managed the subsistence of my command; but very often my trains have been without meat and no doubt soldiers have taken it. Col. Mizner instead of sending these citizens to me heard their complaints, telegraphed me in general about them; and then turned around and abused the entire command to his superior officer. Most of the complaints are from citizens living south of the Columbia and Duck river. He claims jurisdiction over eight or ten miles of country south of there, and has gone so far as to arrest my officers taking cattle within that limit, claiming the were encroaching upon his rights.

Now, I submit, was it not proper and just the citizens should be referred to me, and I given a chance to punish the guilty? Or if

acting up to orders, so explain to the citizens?

The fact of the matter is, I have been locked upon here as an intruder and my command treated as such. See the orders he has issued having direct reference to us. It has always been my desire to help every command instead of finding fault with them. When General Crook of The Army of the Cumberland came here on his way to West Tennessee in December and January, I not only did what I could to aid him, but stripped my trains, and turned them over to him with 600 head of stock to re-mount him. Many, very many of his men committed robberies around us, but instead of denouncing his command, I took hold with him, but stripped my trains, and turned over to him 600 head of stock; we detected the men and he swiftly punished them. I assure you that I will not, on any account, shield or excuse a man who is guilty of disobedience of orders; much less those whose depredations reflect upon amentire command. It is galling to any officer to have his command designated as mobs, thieves and banditt, and have these sweeping charges go up through entire departments where he and his command are entire strangers. I do know that I am consider as being a bandit when I forage, subsist and mount my command out of the country, and especially when I press negroes to build railroads but my orders are positive in this. General Sherman said I must do so; and I consider it not only right, but that duty requires it. This entire country was full of everything when I came here and that was the only inducement to Bragg or any other rebel general to secure its possession again; and he never again will turn his army toward middle Tennessee. And not only this; Giles and Maury Counties were unanimously for secession. Protection papers I could not respect except so far as personal property was concerned that the army did not need. I hold that no papers protect against the necessities of a command, and I believe when you get outside of the atmosphere of Columbia you will find the citizens will say that my troops have behaved remarkably well, and that I have guarded rigidly against, and punished severely, all unauthorized depredations.

One thing more should be taken into consideration. The pike which runs along my command has been used daily by trains, troops and detachments going to the army of the cumberland and to the 15th A.CA, many of them without proper officers. Doubtless some of them have committeed such depredations as smoke house visiting, for meat, killing hogs, &c. I have institued rigid inquiry into these charges and have sent to Col. Mizner for names of all persons de-

predated upon.

© could say many bitter things in retalliation for the dis-

courtesies shown in these dispatches; and show that I have borne many indignities that gew officers would quietly bear. I care naught for them so long as they concern my immediately troops but when they become malignant attacks upon all and are sent out to

an entire army, stranger to me, it is another thing.

I submit the despatches and orders and trust that General Grant will at least order Col. Mizner to hereafter send persons who make complaints, which call out such outrageous attacks and so bitter, to me for redress."

Upon receipt of this letter General Grant gave orders for the arrest of the officer for disrespect towards General Dodge, and placed the following endorsement upon the papers.

February 15, 1864.

Your dispatch of the 11th of December, 1863, to Captain T. C. Williams, and one of January 16, 1864 to Capt. Polk, together with Brig. Gen. G. M. Dodge's explanation and remarks thereon, have reached these headquarters. Your wholesale attack upon Gen. Dodge, a gallant and superior officer, is uncalled for and improper. The authority you usurped to yourself in arresting officers acting under his orders, and outside of your guard lines, was unmilitary and in bad taste. The whole tenor of your dispatches show bad temper and is calculated to create hostility of feeling between troops expected to co-operate with each other. Enclosed you will find copy of Gen. Dodge's explanation."

I received the following letter from A. Kountz on Feb. 4;1864

"I hasten to write you as follows: A project which is almost certain to carry is on foot which if effected and carried out fully will completely ruin Omaha and Council Bluffs. It is this—the Miss. & Mo. R. R. and the Cedar Rapids Road are about to unite at some point in Iowa and in doing so propose to run a single line only across the State to the Missouri River in which case they will run to the Missouri at a point 10, 15 or possibly 25 miles north of Council Bluffs and I fear that our misfortunes will not stop here. I fear that a relocation of the starting point of the Union Pacific R.R. may be made and thus leave us forever without railroad facilities. I think T. C. Durant is L adverse to our interests and you may about as well make up your mind to such a result as to think of any other for I see nothing to avert this calamity. "

I had also received dispatches from Council Bluffs and from other people interested in Iowa in relation to the effort of Mr. Iowayleavine out Des Moines Durant to change the line of the M. & M. road across Council Bluffs and crossing the Missouri River At De Sota. I immediately wrote Mr. Durant the following letter:

Pulaski, Feb. 4, 1864.

I sent you a despatch today about location of M & M R. R. It was drawn out from several dispatches I received from Iowa in relation to fixing of terminus of railroad at Desoto. I did not believe you had any such idea and was under the impression it was a move to bring to your support some other combination or interest. But if you have, let me advise you to drop it. A change of such vast importance to western Iowa, and from its centre of population and t rade, would be met by so determined an opposition by all classes as would force you to terms in some way; it would carry with it the legislation and congressional influence for all time in direct opposition to all the company's interests. The fact is the M. & M. is considered all over the state as well as outside of it as having been located and its terminus fixed at Council Bluffs. It is on record. The company have drawn their bonds on that route, and the

public have acted upon it. To build up now any opposition that will be felt everywhere when you are just beginning a new project is not good policy.

But one thing sure, I say to you as an engineer (and Mr. Dey or any one who has examined the country will tell you the same) that it is not the route. Far from it; one of the worst you could accept. No present benefit that Mr. Blair or anybody else can promise you will repay the future detriment it will be to you.

The great block in the way in going west is now and for a long time will remain, the Missouri river- and you place your road up there where the valley is eight or more miles wide, four of which overflows; and less all the natural advantages of a valley only (2 1.2 miles wide, only 1/2 mile of which ever under any circumstances is under water and very seldom over 600 feet.)

is under water and very seldom over 600 feet.)

You also ignore the two most important towns on the Missouri River, Council Bluffs and Omaha, and for a long time, bring against you the legislatures of both states. The fact is whatever we have got in Iowa has come from the east, that western Towa, or Council Bluffs interest have always stood, like a rock for you and have swapped away every pet project to get votes for the M. & M.

Now you may think I have personal interest there; but not one word would I ever advance which I knew would be detrimental to the interest of either road. I look at the matter as it is, I know it better than any man in Iowa, or out of it; and I speak frankly, for I know you will give me credit for never advising or doing aught for the company but what was for their benefit and often for my direct injury.

Look this matter over well before you decide. Don't let any argument against big bends force you to climb more summits with 60 feet grades. From Fremont to the boundary in Iowa, the route will be in favor of Omaha. I know this and I defy any engineer to go into the field against me and beat it. The Boyer Valley is good but it does not do away with the practical test that has been put on all these lines. If you want to straighten

test that has been put on all these lines. If you want to straighten the M. & M., it is much easier and cheaper to run down the Turkey, strike Lewis and thence west. The north bend of the Platte is very little, north of the Bluffs. From DeSotos west it is broken, crooked and heavy. Any profile that shows different has been gotten up for the occasion. Now I believe I can read the plan and if, as I suspect the talk is for the purpose of getting influence on P. R. R., why, all right; but if in earnest, look well to these points, and while you hold the power you now do, let no threats draw you, as I said in my last letter, from the best, most direct and only route west. They must all come to your therefore, sacrifice no influence (especially such as C.B. & Omaha have) for any bargain or compromise with any other line.)

I believe this was simply a movement of Durant to accomplish some other purpose but I thought it was a good opportunity to let him know what he might expect from Iowa in maintaining the old location.

As a sequel to this, confirming my opinion, I received a letter from my brother in which the following was given:

"The scare in Washington was a stock operation by Durant entirely as I now believe. Durant run up Realistand to 149 and very quietly sold out all his interest and that of his friends for whom he was operating—and had men buying into Galena and Chicago. Goes to Washington and gets up a combination scheme proposing to them A location so far north as to make Galena and C.R.R. the direct connections. R. Island stock goes down to 111 and Galena up in propostion—when that change in prices is accomplished he buys back in R. Island

3

12/7

and sells out in Galena- in other words gets back home and makes the round trip for himself and friends \$5,000,000. It is the smartest operation ever done in stocks and could never be done again."

On February 4th, there were indications of a general movement of the confederate troops in my vicinity south. Citizens had suddenly been stopped from crossing the river to this side. I informed General Grant of this and suggested that it might be on account of to join Sherman the movement of General Smith's cavalry over-land which proved to be the case. There had been a great many reports from my foraging parties and others of the activity of many of the rebel citizens in helping guerrillas and for the purpose of stopping this, I thought it best to make and example and I issued the following order which had the desired effect:

Pulaski, Feb. 4, 1864.

officers of this command as being dangerous persons to remain within our lines (Being aiders and abettors of the rebellion) will appear within ten days from the date hereof at the Provost Mar. General's office in Pulaski, Tenn. and give bonds in the sume of \$5,000 each and take an oath to hereafter behave and donduct themselves as peaceable and loyal citizens, and to commit no acts that will tend in any manner to aid, or abet, or give comfort to the rebellion:

1. F. N. Williams. 2. W.R. Porter, 3. S. J. Matthes. Sr., 4. Stephen Shelton. 5. Joll Glossess. 6. John Wilcomsen. 7. Jilton. 8. A.A. Burney, 9. Robert Williams, (Tanner) 10. John Hammond. 11. Harvey Shelton, 12. Willis Johnson, 13. Amos Cox. 14 Murphy Nutt. 15. W. P. Holcourt.

This privilege is given them with the understanding that if not faithfully lived up to, they with their families will be sent south of the Tennessee river and their property be taken, and, if violated, they will suffer death."

On February 5, I received the following letter from Capt. Chenoworth, who was on General Grant's staff at Nashville:

Nashville, Feb. 5, 1864.

"I received your letter relating to Col. Mizner's dispatches to day. I had already heard of them through Lt. Col. Bowers, who treated them with utter contempt, but he and Gen. Rawlins thought they would send them to you to let you know what Mizner was doing. Gen. Grant arrived here last night and the matter was laid before him, and he gave orders for the arrest of Mizner for disrespect towards you. This was before you had written. Mizner has not been arrested yet because General Rawlins thought it best to delay the matter a litt, e but he told me today that Mizner's command would be taken away from Columbia.

You stand just as high as it is possible for you to do in the estimation of all at these head quarters, and anyone who endeavors to injure you only draws ridicule upon himself."

Upon receipt of this letter I wrote General Rawlins a personal note stating that I did not think it was best to arrest Colonel

Mizner that if the change of his command was made, it would be better. I told him I thought Col. Mizner's acts came more from the general policy of the officers in the Department of the Cumberland They had never been forced to live off of the country as we had; they had always been near transportation where all their rations, forage, etc. was furnished them on regular requisitions and that this was a new experience to them. It is a singular fact that Col. Mizner afterwards served under me in the Indian campaigns in 1865 and proved himself to be an efficient officer. Heoften spoke to me about his action at Columbia and explained it as same as I have to General Rawlins. He was stationed at Laramie and built there a very fine log quarters for his entire Regiment.

Mr. C. W. Hildreth of Co. I., 2nd Iowa, who had been detailed in my command, and edited a little army paper known as "The Chanticleer" at Corinth and Pulaski. This paper had quite a local circulation on account of its being a newsy sheet, he having picked up items of interest to the army. When Mr. Hildreth was discharged, he was ordered to Washingont and on Feb. 5th, I received the following letter from him.:

Washington, Feb. 5, 1864.

I have the honor to inform you that after spending a week or so in Washington City, I find everything founded upon a false basis. Treason and rebellion do not blush to assume the uniform and accept the pay of the United States. This is the secret of the series of failures which have always attended this army. I am most thoroughly disgusted with the capitol, and do not fear to assert that the Left wing of the 16th Army Corps will acomptish more in one week toward crushing the rebellion than the entire army of the Potomac has ever done. A few such regiments as the 7th Illinois Mounted Infantry and the 9th Illinois would teach the rebels in this vicinity a lesson which they have as yet had no intimation of."

Brig. Gen. of U. S. Vols. and he was assigned to the command of all the colored troops in the State of Tennessee with head-quarters at Wemphis. Col. Chetlain was a citizen of Galena and a particular Representative friend of General Grant and through the influence of ... Washburn succeeded in obtaining this promotion. He was a fine officer and I

regretted to part with him. He was a commander of a regiment and as I had recommended other officers of brigade for promotion, this shows that a member of Congress influence and pressure at Washington accomplishes what no one in the army, from General Grant down could bring about. This was very discouraging to the officers, notwithstanding everyone knew that Chetlain was a good officer and they were glad to see him promoted.

I had received a personal letter from General Grant telling me that as soon as I got my force, which had veteranized, back, to go forward and take Decatur as I had so many times recommended. After recieving this, I sent a dispatch to the Adjutant General of Ohio, where the 27th, 39th, 43d and 63d Ohio veteran infantry were having their furlough, asking him to return them to the command as soon as their furloughs expired as rapidly as possible.

I received another letter from Mr. A. Kountze, dated Washington Feb. 19th in relation to the action of Mr. Durant in trying to change the M. & M. Road. It shows the feeling existing in Omaha in relation to this matter, and is as follows:

Washington, Feb. 10, 1864.

Things are not yet looking very favorably for us. Durant is still bent on going north with his M. & M. road and thus leaving Council Bluffs and Omaha out in the cold. In order to enable the M& M. road and Cedar Rapids road to unite and form a new line of road, but to do so some congressional legislation will be required and unless they can secure this they will probably not go on with their plan of project. Rest assured of one thing, however, and that is that no effort will be spared to succeed with this movement. To convince you of this fact, I need only to state to you that Durant is now having surveys made from Omaha bearing north, almost directly so. After leaving Omaha, say 6 or 8 miles west, they bend the line way out of its natural course or channel increasing distance and expense greatly, but this movement will subserve the proposed project now on foot to slaughter us. How we are to arrest this formidable undertaking, I confess I don't now see."

I made a trip over the road from Nashville to Decatur to examine the work as completed and to see that every arrangement had been made for the operation of the road as soon as the Duck River bridge was completed. On Feb. 11th, I reported the condition in the following dispatch to General Grant:

M

Pulaski, Feb. 11, Mal.

I have just returned from opposite Decatur. Cars can run there as soon as Duck river bridge is done, say next Wednesday. Not much done west of Huntsville. Four pretty large bridges to build. I will get ready to move as suggested. I ought to have five or six regiments back now. The 2nd and 7th Iowa's time is out, also Fuller's Brigade of Ohio. If you could hurry up their return, I would be strong enough. The Tennessee is fordable in but few places, and the cavalry force has increased. I suspect that Davidson's division from Rome has been sent down into the valley. There was a pontoon bridged in Nashville when I was there; can I have it?"

This dispatch referred to the movement on Decatur and also the Gen Grant Memphis and Charleston line from Moresville to Huntsville which I had been urging the 15th A. C. to rebuild as they were occupying that country but they had not had the experience in rebuilding railroads that we had had and were slow in accomplishing the work.

I had to make preparations for putting in a pontoon bridge across the Tennessee river to connect with Decatur when captured. The railroad bridge, which was a truss bridge some 2400 feet long, had been burned, leaving the stone piers standing. I had some pontoons in the Duck and Elk rivers and I had applied to Nashville for others but I saw that I would have to build others and immediately sent Captain Armstrong, at the head of my pioneer corps, to mork, under the following instructions, and sending him plans:

#### Pulaski, Feb. 14, 1937.

As soon as you get through with bridges and as your men are relieved from work at it put them to work making a pontoon bridge. Make pontoons 26 feet long, 5 feet wide and 2 feet depp drawn in at both ends say one half, make centre for ten feet stringers. Where balks will rest, make balks stronger) twenty-six feet long- 4X 5 inches five to a bay and chesses (floor) twelve feet long and one and one half or two inches thick, one foot wide out of as light timber as you can find. The bridge when laid will have balys of 18 to 20 feet between boats, and the balks will lap at each end."

Captain Armstrong was a very fine officer and a very competent builder. He was a fine organizer and a rapid worker and had had charge of my pioneer corps for a long time and continued in charge as long as I commanded in that army and sme of the structures that he put up supposing them to be temporary were fine pieces of workmanship and a good many of them were left in their positions for many years after the war.

Notwithstanding that I was occupying Tennessee, the rebel citizens were plotting and planning to help the enemy and at every opportunity were showing their animosity towards Union men and the following order shows our treatment of them:

S. O. No. 42, Pulaski, Feb. 15, 1864.

VIII. It having been ascertained that the following named citizens were engaged in breaking up and driving out of this country Mr. J. W. Waldron, a staunch union man, and that they purchased a portion of his goods, when publicly sold by a band of guerrillas under the lead of one Capt. Emerson, it is hereby ordered that they pay to Col. J. B. Weaver, 2d regiment Iowa Infantry volunteers, commanding post of Pulaski, the sums set opposite their names respectively, and that Col. Weaver, turn over to the siad J. W. Walron or his family the amount so collected, and make report of the same in compliance with G. O. No. 4, 1864, head quarters military division of the Mississippi. Clay Stiumit, \$1,000. John Marks, \$800. Quartis Mayfield, \$300.

This order, and the one issued before, putting the citizens under bond, had the proper effect and after that I received no more reports.

On February 16th, I notified General Grant that the Duck River Bridge had been completed and that the railroad was finished and in running order and that trains could go through safely. I also informed him that there was a steamboat running on the Tennessee river dealing in cotton, paying, sugar, coffee and gold for it. It went to the Rebel Eastport and Waterlao. On the boat was a relative of General Roddy and had his protection. The boat runs to points inside the rebel lines. Gen. Sherman sent orders to gumboats on Tennessee River to stop this trading. The gang of thieves connected with the 18th Mo. had been tried

and the leader, John D. Vance of the 18th Mo. had been convicted and on Feburary 17th, I sent the following dispatch to General Grant:

"One John D. Vance of the 18th Missuuri infantry, the leader of a gang of robbers and musderers, has been tried, convicted and ordered to be shot. I respectfully request authority to carry sentence into effect. It is a just verdict and will have a good effect if promptly acted upon. He is a very bad man."

cases the officer in the field could not execute the order of the Court-martial but it must go to the Department headuquarters and from there to Washington, a recent order of the War Department requiring it. What became of Vance, I do not know, but the effect of the arrest of these citizens and the conviction of the men connected with the 18th Missouri had a very good effect on the command.

In response to a request from General Grant to give the facts and details of the arrest and conviction of Mr. Vance, I sent him the

following letter:

Pulaski, Feb. 18, 1864.

Vance is a private of Co. <sup>G</sup>. 18th Missouri infantry; he was found guilty of the charges of assault and battery with intent to commit a felony and of robbery. He is a very bad and dangerous man and has been the leader of a gang of robbers composed of citizens and members of the 18th Missouri infantry. The specifications to the charges of which he is found guilty, show that he went with his gang at night to the house of a citizen whom he robbed of all the money he had, and he himself knocked Mrs. Davis down several times by blows upon her head with a pistol nearly fracturing her skull. Also knocked Mr. Davis down with his pistol, dragged him out of his house some distance and beat him insensible for the purpose of getting him to tell where his money was. Mr. and Mrs. Davis are very old people (seventy years old). He (Vance) doubtless has been a professional robber and probably murderer."

On February 20, we received the first news of the movement of Gen. Sherman from Vicksburg towards Meridian. Lt. Col. Phillips who was watching the Tennessee river was often in communication with the enemy on the other side and he sent me word that the enemy opposite him said Sherman was in Meridian and that General Hardee commanded the confederate forces in his front and that the enemy were falling back before him, moving up towards Columbis, Mississippi.

On February 23rd, I made my official report of the work of the corps in the rebuilding of the railroad from Nashville to Decatur as follows:

"I have the honor to report the duty preformed by this command, in repairing the railroad from Nashville to Decatur.

The command arrived at Pulaski No 11, 1863 and was soon after scattered along the railroad from Columbia to Athens. Details of working parties were placed to work on all the bridges, every bridge on the road being out. I soon after received orders to take charge of the work north of Duck River and placed parties to work on seven bridges north of Duck River and also a heavy detail on Duck River Bridge, the piers of which had been destroyed. Since that time we have put in the following important bridges, all good solid structures, numbered from six up. 6. Carter's trestle, 225 ft. long, 32 ft. high. 7. Rutherford, Creek #1, 120 ft long, 19 ft. high. 8 Rutherford Ck. #2808 ft. Long 19 1/2 ft. high. 9 Rutherford Ck. #3252 ft. long, 29 ft. high.

10. Rutherford Creek #4272 ft. long 24 ft high. 11. Duck river 608 ft. long, 70 ft. high. Two spans Howes truss, two spans trestle, 1009 ft. long, 38 ft. high, 14 Grayces trestle, 630 ft. long, 43 ft. high. 15. Robertsons trestle, 112 ft. long 17 1/2 ft. high. 16. Richmand Creek trestle #1,192 ft. long, 27 ft. high. 17. Rich. and Creek trestle #1,192 ft. long, 27 ft. high. 17. Rich. and Creek trestle #2,175 ft. long 29 ft. high. 18 Richmond Creek trestle #3, 158 ft. long, 32 ft. high. 19 Richmond Cr. trestle #4,360 ft. long, 34, 50 ft. high. -2 Tunnerl Hill, 620 ft. long, 39 ft. high. 21, Elk river bridge trestle, 615 ft. long, 36 1/2 ft. high rests on 7 cribs. 22 Mill creek trestle, 315 ft. long, 30 ft. high. 23 Sulphur Spring trestle, 539 ft. long, 75 ft. high. 24 Athens trestle, 95 ft. long, 7 ft. high. 25 Athens trestle, 132 ft. long, 11ft. high. 26 Athens trestle, 72 ft. long, 11.5 ft. high. 27 Swan Creek trestle, 360 ft. long, 12 ft. high. 28 Swan creek trestle 114 ft. long, 11 ft high. 29 Swan Creek trestle swamp, 200 ft. long 9 ft. high, 30 Junction Trestle, 240 ft. long, 15 ft. high.

Two spans of the truss at Duck river were put in by L. D. Boomer

of Chicago, a deck truss being substitued for a through truss; the piers having been destroyed by rebels rendered it impracticable to rebuild to former height.

Elk river bridge was just built by me as a common trestle; a freshet in December washed it out and I substituted a bridge of 50 foot spans resting on cribs 18 feet high. It will do for a permanent structure and is finely built. There were also built two pontoon bridges, one over Duck river with twelve batteaus made from plank and timber found at a saw mill, length 240 feet; one over Elk river, 300 feet made of flat boats, so that they could be run into Tennessee river as ferry boats, if they should be needed; the timber for this bridge was standing in trees, as was all the timber for all the rest At Prospect a steam saw mill was put up; and is now of the bridges. ready for Government use. It is a fine mill, and will saw 3000 feet of lumber per day. At each of the bridges good substantial earth works or stockades have been built to protect the troops guarding them. The work upon them has been immense, and the works are very creditable ones. The water tanks, switches, track, &c. have all been rebuilt and put in order and some 2,000 cords of wood gotten out and put on the road, sawed ready for use; and the entire road put in perfect running order. All the work has been done by soldiers of this command and negroes pressed, in the country; and when the amount of work done is considered and the unfavorable weather is taken in actount, I think it must be looked upon as very creditable to the command.

The entire command during its stay has lived entirely off the

country, drawing nothing except sugar, offee and salt.

The mounted infantry has been kept busy watching Termessee river and the country west, and duging the time several skirmishes, and the fights at Athens, Florence and Cane's ferry occurred. Some 400 enlisted men and 42 officers have been captured and sent forward as prisoners of war. The health of the command is excellent; the sick not averaging 5 per cent of the total strength.

I cannot speak too highly of the industry, alacrity and interest the command has shown in taking hold of and finishing the work. No emergen y could arise but what some officer or man could be found to meet and master it. They all seemed to appreciate the importance of opening up the communication for the future operations of the army, and took hold of it with a determination that it should not be done at the

earliest possible moment."

During this work I had received the active support of General Sold Grant and he made known to me in many ways the satisfaction he had in many work and in his memoirs he makes the following statement:

"Sherman's force made an additional army, with cavalry, artillery and trains all to be supplied by the single-track road from Nashville. "All indications pointed also to the probable necessity of supplying Burnside's command in East Tennessee, twenty-five thousand more, by the same route. A single track could not do this. I gave, therefore, an order to Sherman to halt General G. M. Dodge's command of about 8000 men at Athens, and subsequently directed the latter to arrange his troops along the railroad from Decatur north toward Nashville and to rebuild that road. The road from Nashville to Decatur passes over a broken country, cut up with innumerable stream s, many of them of considerable width and with valleys far below the road-bed. All the bridges over these had been destroyed, and the rails taken up and twisted by the enemy. All the cars and locomotives not carried off had been destroyed as effectually as they had been destroyed between Nashville and Decatur and thence to Stevenson where the Memphis and Charleston and the Nashville and Chatta neogs roads unite. The rebuilding of this road would give us two roads as far as Stevenson over which to supply the army. From Bridgeport a short distance further east the river supplements the road.

General Dogge, besides being a most capable soldier, was an experienced railroad builder. He had no tools to work with except those of the pioneers, axes, picks and spades. With these he was able to intrench his men and protect them against surprises by small parties of the enmy. As he had no base of supplies until the road should be

No.

Saly on hand chief.

completed back to Nashville, the first matter to consider, after protecting his men, was the getting in of food and forage from the surrounding country. He had his men and teams bring in all the grain they could find or all they needed, and all the cattle for beef and such other food as could be found. Millers were detailed from the ranks to run the mills along the line of the army. When these were not near enough to the troops for the protection, they were taken down and moved up to the line of the road. Blacksmith shops with all the iron and steel found in them were moved up in like manner. Blacksmiths were detailed from the ranks and set to work making the tools necessary in railroad and bridge building. When these were not near enough to the troops for protection, they were taken down and moved up to the line of the road. Blacksmith shops were taken down and with all the iron and steel found in them were moved up. Axemen were put to work getting out timber for bridges and cutting fuel for locomotives when the road should be completed. Car builders were set to work repairing the locomotives and cars. Thus every branch of rail-road building, making tools work with, and supplying the workmen with food, was all going on at once, and without the aid of a mechanic or laborer except what the command itself furnished. But rails and cars the men could not make without material and there was not enough rolling stock to keep the road we already had worked to its full capacity. There were no rails except those in use. To supply these deficiencies I ordered eight of the ten engines General Mcgherson had at Bicksburg to be sent to Nashville and all the cars he had except ten. I also ordered the troops in West Tennessee to points on the river and on the Memphis and Charleston road, and ordered the cars, locomotives and rails from all the railroads except the Memphis and Charleston to Nashville. The military manager of railroads also was directed to furnish more rolling stock and as far as he could, bridge material. General Dodge had the work assigned him finished within forty days after receiving his orders. The number of bridges to rebuild was one hundred and eighty two, many of them over deep The number of and wide chasms. The length of road repaired was one hundred and two miles.'

General Grant's statement that the work assigned me was completed in forty days, is correct, but that did not include the entire road. The work at Columbia and north to Nashville, which was within the department of the Cumberland, and which they were to reconstruct, progressed to slowly that Gen. Grant finally put it in my charge, and I had to take hold of it after most of my work was done and build it; also the line from the Junction, of Moresville on the Memphis and Charleston east to Huntsville was not reconstructed as ordered by the 15th Corps until after my work was completed. If all this work had been placed under me at the beginning I would have had it all finished at the same time as I had the organized forces that could do it and I could have aided my workmen very much if I had had the line north of Columbia; I could have controlled the movement of trains south of Nashville which would have been of great aid in bringing forward material and supplies. Even after I got the trestle up at Duck River, that bridge was not used until after Boomer had pput up his two 200 ft. trusses. The railroad oprators would run their trains to Duck River and not cross them on account, as they said, of

the delay it would cause Boomer and we stayed at Duck River nearly a month while trains might have been running over the false work.

My letters and dispatches to General Grant and Sherman explained these matters very fully and I think many times I called their attention to the work. Finally Grant put all the work north of Columbia under me, but he insisted that the work from Moresville to Huntsville, should be done by the 15th Corps. They were posted at Stevenson and did not extedn west from there for a long time. The fact is it was some time in March before they had that line completed.

General Grant was very anxious to keep posted in relation to Generals Sherman's and Smith's operations and I had kept my secret services men and scouts very busy and I sent him numerous dispatches of their reports and on February 25th, I received word from the spy at Montgomery and sent General Grant the following dispatch:

"Dispatch from scout at Montomgery, dated 19th, says Sherman has reached M. & O. Railroad; that Polk has evacuated; that part of his force is north and part south of Sherman; that bulk of it has gone towards Mobile and fallen back behind Tombigbee river; that great consternation exists in all the towns; that all troops from there have been sent to Polk leaving only provost guard at Montgomery Selman and Tuscaloosa; that no troops had gone from Johnson's army since last report, but that everything that can be raked together is being hurried towards Mobile and to Polk; that our iron-clads have attacked forts at Mobile; says rebels have no idea of Sherman's destination; that he is destroying everything and negroes, mules and citizens are flocking east. He sent a messenger through to Sherman. No battle up to that date had occurred "

9n the same date, I sent him a report of the troops from Atlanta and Rome, Georiga, as follows:

"The fortifications around Atlanta are three lines of rifle pits; surrounding the place, and on the Chattahoochie river, eleven miles north of Atlanta, commencing at the Island they are putting up works running down to the railroad bridge. These works have been lately commenced and every tenth negro has been impressed towork upon them.

At Rome, Gen. Brown with a birgade of Infantry is at work on fortifications. Capt. Green is engineer building the birdge on Oustanoula river. On the east side of the river a large fort is being built, which commands approach from the west. Near it are some thirty-two pound guns, not mounted. This line of fortifications is laid out, but only partially built; runs up this river to the mountains north of town and connects with another fort, laid out but not built--that commands the road running in from the north between the two rivers. From this fort four lines of rifle pits, now being worked on, run to the Etowah kiver. Some distance above the bridge; over this river, a battery is built that covers the bridge and a small village on south side of the river called Lickskillet.

During the first part of February, troops, mostly Tennessee, North Alabama, Kentucky and Arkansas regiments, were moved to Mississippi to prevent desertions, and Southern Alabama and Mississippi

nor

troops were brought up to supply their place. This movement lasted till about the 12th. At Kingston, Cave Springs, Marietta, White River and Cross Plains are some 6000 cavalry, horses and some cavalry with them. The stock is in very poor condition. Grigsby(s brigade was relieved at the front by Hume's 1500 strong, and went to Oxfrod, Benton County, Alabama, the terminus of the railroad running toward Rome, Ga. from Selma. Forage is very scarce everywhere except in Cross Valley, where there is plenty of corn; meat also is very scarce everywhere, and the army at Dalton which, he says, is about 25,000 men strong, is on half rations. Where he was the new conscript act has not as yet been very bigorously enforced, but preparations were being made to rake up everybody.

All the State troops of Georgia have been turned over to the confederacy and on the 21st of January they were given 20 days furlough. Alabama has not yet turned over her state troops.

He gives troops stationed as follows: Atlanta 5000, Rome 3000, Oxford 1500, Grigsby's Brigade, Gadsend 2500, under Roddy and White Plains- three companies. In Will's Valley about 300 state troops. The scout from Montgomery says all troops have been hurried to Mobile and Polk, the corroborates the change of troops in the two armies, but thinks perhaps three brigades more went west than returned. Most all the planters in Floyd, Polk and Paulding Counties, Georgia have moved their stock, negroes and valuables south. They have no faith in the ability of their army to hold that portion of the country

The scout says the work at Rome does not look like a vigorous effort to make the place a very formidable one, but north of Atlanta he says they are very busy.

He saw advertisements of General Wheeler calling upon refugees to join him and enlist, as he should operate in Tennessee and Kentucky this summer. Breckinridge and Buckner are collecting together all the cavalry in East Tennessee and scout says that Hume's, Roddy's and Grigsby's brigades are all he could hear of with Johnson."

This information was all from reliable men and what they from their own observation knew was correct. What they learned from others was often greatly exaggerated and sometimes absolutely untrue. These spies collected the newspapers in their wicinity, which had any information in them and they were sent to us by messgnger.

On February 26th I commenced receiving pontoons from Nashville for my Tennessee River bridge.

Fuller's Ohio Brigade returned to me and I was making every preparations to capture Decatur.

On February 27th, I received a letter from Mr. Hoxie of Washington who was looking after the Union Pacific interest there. It was as follows:

"Allison introduced the bill for two reasons; one that he was on the Land Committee, the other that we wanted to commit him to its provisions. The bill provides that the railroad shall be built through the cities of Des Moines and Council Bluffs. It also provides that other railroads may connect and run over the same road and that they shall share in the land grants and shall pay their proportion of the expense. The Cedar Rapids folks had a scheme on foot some two weeks since, and tried to get an arrangement to have a bill pass that would allow them to leave Des Moines to the south, and cross the Missouri river at or near down the valley of the Boyer river than over any other. This matter was brought up and I was immediately telegraphed to and I at once came to the city. I shall stay till the 10th of March

Nor

and I hope by that time we will have our bill through the House. I wrote you on the subject some days since.

Doctor Durant is now in New York. He will return next Wednesday. He telegraphes me that he has made arrangements to raise one million dollars and says he will push the road at once through. The Doctor means to play fair I think. John E. Henry and E. Cook have been here but are now gone home.

Be assured, my dear General, that all will end well. did expect to return by way of Pulaski but have caught a man here

that I must take back to Iowa.

This letter shows that the question of where the M. & M. road should cross Iowa was still up and that the citizens of Omaha and Council Bluffs were endeavoring to fix the Location which gave the State the land grant. by an act of Congress, A I don't thinkanything ever came of this. The necessity of it had passed.

The 9th Iowa Cavalry under Col. Hamilton, 9000 strong who were ordered by Gen. Grant to report to me, and also the 1st Alabama Cavalry, which I had raised, were a long time coming.

On March 7th Captain Armstrong had completed the necessary work to finish the pontoon boats. He had built them on the Tennessee some miles above Decatur and on this date I issued the to Col. Fuller following order, placing the movement in charge of Col. Sprgaue of the 63d Ohio, a very competent officer:

"In crossing the Tennessee river tonight you will follow the following general directions altering them if in your judgment necessary:

1st. 63d and 43d Ohio regiments will take the boats at twleveo'clock at night loading from right to left each company and regiment by itself. The boats in moving down the river will keep place in column same as loaded and hug this shore.

When they cross they will move by the left flank and if possible strike the shore in regular line at one time. The troops will immediately unload, form in line and take possession of the high bank of the river.

The oarsmen will be held as a protection to the boats and as soon as a lodgment is safely secured one half of the boats will be sent directly across the river to bring over the remainder of the command. No firing will be allowed under any circumstances and after landing, unless attacked.

Should the boats fail to land in proper order, the troops will form as they land, until it is ascertained they have a secure lodgement when they can be changed.

As soon as it is light enough to see the troops will move to the rear of Decatur, connecting with Lt. Col. Phillips and covering all the roads except the Courtland road."

This order was carried out almost to the letter and I had arranged for Col. Phillips and the mounted men he had of the 9th Illinois to cross the river below Decatur on a lot of flat boats and canoes which he had collected there. Both crossed on time, surrounded Decatur and captured all the forces in it with very little loss

On March 11th, I moved my headquarters to Athens and in notifying General Grant of the phange, I informed his that after taking Decatur, I pushed my forces out under Lt. Col. Phillips. He captured Courtland driving the enemy out and followed them up, crossing the mountains, capturing Moulton, taking a number of prisoners and a large amount of stores, a large quantity of artillery and rifle ammunition, stock, etc. I also informed him that I had 2500 recruits unarmed now here and it was a great detriment to the service to keep these green men undrilled until we moved.

When we first captured Athens, we found two of the prominent citizens of the place and distinguished men in the Confederacy, Mr. Houston, who formerly had been a member of the U. S. Congress and Mr. Pror who was at that time a member of the Confederate Congress, in the public square playing marbles and when we came up to them. Mr. Pryor said to me that what they had been doing was what had caused secession -- idleness. Mr. Houston was considerably disturbed because he had sons in the Confederate army but I told him that all they had to do was to obey our rules and orders when theywere within tour lines and they would not be disturbed. He asked if he would be allowed to write to his sons. I said, "Yes," and he said he would bring the letters to me for examination but I told him that that was not necessary that I knew he would not send through the lines any information that should not properly go to the I said, "I don't think you could send any information to the enemy. the enemy which they do not already have." I told him we appreciated the fact that being in the enemy's country, we could not keep the information from going to them.

A day or two after we had been there, Mr. Houston who had a plantation outside of the lines was brought to my headquarters under guard of two negroes, his own slaves who had enlisted in one of the colored regiments. He seemed to take this a great deal to heart bul I told him it was the for tune of war and gave him a pass that would avoid any such humiliation, as he called it, again.

Were flying, at which we were all astonished and I asked for an explanation and they told me that a young lawyer, a citizen of the place when the question of secession was on in Alabama was a strong union man and he climbed that steeple and nailed the flag on it declaring that it should never be taken down but when the State seceded, this young man entered the Confederate service in a company that was raised in that town and no one had the nerve to climb the steeple to pullthe flag down so the remnants of it greeted us as we entered the town.

Both Mr. Pryor and Houston, were found by our officers living up to our orders and gave us good advise as far as local matters were concerned. They were astonished that I did not require them to take the oath and that I put so much confidence in them. I knew that such treatment would go a long ways in inducing the citizens through the country to bring in their supplies. They also used their influence among their own people against harboring guerrillas or encouraging them.

General Fuller had reported to me the arrest of some deserters and was desirous of punishing them and I answered him that it was best to drum-head the Deserters. If tried by regular count, the case has to go to the President.

On March 12th, we received official notice of General Grant's being assigned to the command of all the armies; of General Halleck being assigned to duty as Chief of Staff of the Army and the Secretary of War. General Sherman, as commanding the military divisions of the Mississippi; General McPherson, to the command of the Army of the Tennessee.

M

loss to themselves; in fact, they surprised the enemy so that they surrendered as soon as they saw the trap they were caught in. I reported this immediately to General Grant and he answered promptly congratulating us upon our success and often spoke of the movement as having been kept so secret and of its being such a surprise to the enemy. My own command even had very little knowledge of what was going on.

Insert ①.

(\ On March 4th, General Grant was called to Washington to be

given his commission as Lt. Gen. of the Army and command of all the forces. On his return to Nashville on March 17th, we were again called to meet him. I found there General Sherman, General Rawlins, General William Sooy Smith, and other officers. General Grant told us of his visit to Washington, his reception by the President and all the courtesies that had been paid him . He also told us that he accepted the commission of Lt. Gen, and commander of all the armies on condition that his plans should not be interfered with at Washington and that he should have command of the Staff Departments of the Army. These Staff Departments had always considered themselves independent of the Commander in the field; in fact, at the beginning of the war, the officers of the Commissary, Quarter Masters and Ordnance Department declined to obey the orders of their intermediate commanders except by order of their chief in Washington. General Grant soon settled this. The Vommissary of Substance declined to carry out one of his orders and General Grant said to him "hhat while he could not force him to obey the order, he could relieve him and put in his place one of the line officers who would obey all orders." This officer reported this to his chief in Washington and he changed his orders to that they were to obey the officers in the field but to report to their chief in Washington. General Grant said that President Lincoln in reply to his request for the command of the Staff Dept. said "that he could not give that to him legally but he said there is no on but myself that can interfere with your orders and you can rest assured that I will not

do that." We were all anxious to hear of his visit to the Army of

the Potomac and his opinion of that and General Sherman soon got him to talking about it. He said it was the finest army he had ever seen; far superior to any of ours in equipment, supplies and transportation. He said; however, that the officers he talked with considered he would have a far more difficult problems on his hands then he had in the West and he said to Sherman, naming an officer whom both of them knew, but whose name I have forgotten, "You have not faced Bobby Lee yet." As he said it, I could see that twinkle in his eye that we often saw when he meant mischief. General Grant after discussing the Army of the Potomac and having nothing but praise for it, informed us that he should make his head-quarters with that army and leave Sherman to command the armies of the West. He also proposed to take some of the Western officers East with him. Gen. Sherman strongly protested against this and it was finally compromised by his taking General Sheridan. General Grant laid down his plan of campaign, that ever army should move on a certain day against the enemy in front of him, so that Lee and Johnson could not detach any of their commands to reinfore the other. He told General Sherman that he would try to keep Lee from sending any force to Johnson but he said "If he does, I will send you two men where he sends one and I want you to keep Johnson so employed that he cannot send any force to Lee." It had also been Grant's opinion that all our armies should move together but that was objected to and it was the opinion of Halleck, Rosecrans and others that it was not good policy that it was better while one army was fighting to have another idle, so that if anything happened to the one which was fighting, they could call on the other for reinforcements and up to this time in nearly all our great battles, the enemy having our inside lines were able to put in front of our armies fighting as many fighting men as we had, but from now on this \$ Policy was to be changed. 11.

While here, General Sherman told us that in the movement in the spring, he intended to move the Army of the Tennessee from Decatur south and I received instructions to move all the citizens out of Decatur and to fortify it strongly so that it would be held by a brigade or a less number of troops.

When our visit with General Grant ended, General Sherman accom panied him to Cincinnati to talk over and complete their plans as General Grant was very anxious to get back to the Army of the Potomac. General Sherman, at a meeting of the Society of the Army of the Tennessee in late Yyears, pointed out to me in the Burnett House the room they occupied the night before they parted, spending the whole night going over their maps and concluding the final arrangements which inaugurated the two great campaigns---Richmond and Petersburg in the East and Atlanta in the West.

Before I left Nashville, General Grant informed me that he had made a personal request of Mr. Lincoln for my promotion and that the President had promised it and he was certain it would come within a very short time.

On my return to Athens I find awaiting mea letter from General Oglesby which confirmed what General Grant had said and is as follows:

Washington, March 15, 1864.

I have deferred an answer to your letter until I had something to write. I was glad to hear from you and your command. He is too

anxious to serve the cause and I believe does hos duty well.

I have this moment returned from a visit to Mr. Stanton; he says if I will present Adams' papers for promotion middle of April, he will nominate him in the Senate. I will do so and you will please say so to him.

I have been very anxious to aid in the promotion of Col. Bane, Col. Rice, Col. Hatch and Col. Mersey, for the latter I find no recommendation here. I would like to see Col. Fuller and Lt. Col. Phillips go up. I have seen Mr. Lincoln and talked freely about them all, but he seems unable to aid them now. He freely consents to the justice due them and speaks cordially of their merits but cannot, he says, find places for them.

Mr. Lincoln speaks freely with me; sees me often and is very willing to oblige me if he can. I have become acquainted with Mr. Grimes and your friends Mr. and Mrs. Kasson. I fear Grimes is mad at the President on your account. He spoke to me the other evening

very unkindly of Mr. Lincoln. The whole facts are these, no more, no less. Mr. Lincoln knows

you well; respects you highly and is exceedingly anxious to promote you and what is more will do so I think very soon not that he will not and perhaps has already sent other names in before yours very recently- on the special recommendation of General Grant. I told him that it was unjust to delay your promotion a moment longer if a vacancy could be found. At present there are no vacancies, not on e I believe. There is a report here that General Baldy Smith has been promoted at the special instance of Lt. General Grant and for a special purpose as intimated to take the Potomac Army. After all these talks to the President I went to Mr. Stanton this morning. I did not more than mention your name until he said: "It is not necessary to endorse General Dodge, we all know him." Grant recommends him and he is at the head of the list. He will be appointed as soonas it can possibly be done. I have seen fit to state these facts to you if for no other reason tha you may see you are not forgotten nor misappreciated.

I have refrained from recommending a single Brig. General from my own state that none should be in your way. I hope and believe you will go up and your services be fitly acknowledged. Go on and spare not. Pursue your own tactics, and run your scouts deep into the enemy's lines. You have found out the great fact that information

is worth more to a general than men. Remember me to all the officers of your household who ask about me.

It may be that after this court martial is over I will make a visit to your camp before my resignation is accepted. At the end of every month since I saw you I have regularly retendered my resignation but so far to no effect.

I am told there is a sword in your camp for me or perhapsy by this time in the rebel camp. What do the men of the 2d brigade wish about it- that I should come and get it or not? I will be through here in four weeks and presume I will then go home or where I please.

I shall be glad to hear from you before I leave here. has been here, made a good impression, stayed three days and left.

but I think to return very soon again.

Halleck is still here, books well as a man could with a wet blanket and very cold day; is good natured, however, and I have no doubt will help all he can to wind up the raid. We are strong enough to wind up the war in six months if to good generalship is added good luck. We have I think, for duty today 600,000 Rebels have not 300,000.

If your lady is with you I shall be pleased to be remembered

to her.

There was also a letter for me from Capt. Chenowith which was as follows:

Nashville, March 15

"I received your letter of the 12th just now. I had heard of your successful seizure of Decatur. I spoke to General Grant of the difficulties you have had in getting your wants supplied. He says whenever anything of the kind occurs your best way is to telegraph immediately to these headquarters.

He arrived here from Washington last evening. He says that you are to be the next major General appointed and there is

likely to be a vacancy very soon.

General Grant has no idea of being mummied in Washington. He said that he would not accept the Lieut .- generalship if it would take him from the field, and you see from what hasheen done that the authorities have allowed him to have his own way.

Whenever you want anything done that cican do let me know and

I will be at your service."

To carry out General Sherman's instructions, I immediately issued the following order for the removal of all citizens from Decatur:

# S.O.No. 72, Athens, 19, 1864.

The necessities of the army require the use of every building in Decatur for government purposes. It is therefore ordered: that all citizens living in Decatur or within one mile of the limits of the town on the south side of the Tennessee river shall move outside of the lines within six days from the receipt of this order. 2d. They will be allowed to go north or south as they deem best and take with them all their personal and moveable property. 3d. As fast as the buildings are vacated the commander of the post will take possession of them and see that they are preserved and no damage done them. 4th. No exception to this order will be made except in the case of families of persons in our army or employees of the government.

6th. Brig. Gen. J. D. Stevenson will cause this order to be immediately complied with."

In sending this order forward to General Stevenson who was in command at Athens, I wrote himas follows:

"I enclose you an order that no doube will cause some hard - ships. When persons desire to go north and are poor people you can give them transportation by railroad. If you have unserviceable worn out stock you can let families have a team when they have no other means of moving. Take particular pains that nothing is destroyed and that all property left is gotten together and stored with some responsible party.

We desire to cover all movements and therefore be very strict on your picket lines, and allow no person to come in, unless he is a refugee to join our army, or a negro whom we can use to advantage, except when in your judgement it is to our advantage; other all these

people should move as far south or north as possible."

Captain Armstrong had completed his bateaus for the pontoon bridge and we immediately put it in place. It was 2200 feet long. It was anchored by strong ropes, attached to the piers and was thrown across by the engineering corps very rapidly. An enlisted man of the 16th Ohio took a sketch of it as it was being laid and the next day brought me an vil painting of the bridge in place, showing the stone piers of the railroad bridge and both shores. It was a very accurate painting of the whole work and I still have it in my library and prize very much.

After we took Decatur, the deserters and citizens of northern Alabama began to come in there and there were all kinds of rumors and scares. They had Forest with a great force crossing the Tennessee with a view of attacking the line of railroad. They had the headquarters of General Grant and Sherman at Nashville very much alarmed. I kept sending out reconnoissances, kept my cavalry active all along the river but invariably found that the reports were based on un-General Forest had concentrated quite a force in Corinth but the forces that were centering around Decatur were simply for the purpose of watching us; however, I sent out, on March 22nd, a aaution ary order to my forces stating that in case of attack, no matter what the force opposing them, they were to remain in their po ition at their block houses or stockades and fight and under no circumstances to leave them. I knew a company in a block house or a stockade could stand off a regiment or two regiments until the reserves could reach them.

So many reports came in relation to Forest that I finally got a couple of my spies and scouts with him and learned that he was in the vicinity of Corinth with a force of about 4000. I informed General Grant of this and General Hurlbut who was in command on the

Mississippi was greatly alarmed and wired General Grant who instructed me to dispatch General Veatch who was coming up the Tennessee River with 4000 men to join my command, to land at Savannah and move to Purdy and intercept Gen. Forest. I sent a messenger to Gen. Veatch he landed at Clifton on March 29th, and he proceeded rapidly to Purdy. He reported he had seen or heard nothing of Forest.

On March 28th, General Sherman, McPherson, Berry, Allen and Smith visited me at Abhens, and we took up the question of supplies of and the condition mycorps for the movement that was to be made by the first of May. I informed them that the fortifications of Decatur were strong enough so that no force liable to come against them could capture them and that the pontoon bridge was strong dnough to carry any weight put upon it, which seemed to gratify them very much. I had had considerable trouble in getting rations to supply my forces when they started and General Sherman sent orders to Nashbille to aid me in the matter but it did not seem to have much effect because there were so many commands demanding rations that I could not keep more than a few days ahead.

On April 7th, General Veatch returned from Purdy and joined me at Prospect. He was assigned to the command of the 4th division 16th A.C. with headquarters at Decatur.

On April 10th I received the following letter from Caleb Baldwin giving me the condition of matters, politically and otherwise in Iowa;

Council Bluffs, April 10, 1864.

"Nate leaves for your headquarters and I thought I would improve the opportunity to write to you. I am at home and have a most miserable pen, and that always makes me want to get through quickly. Nate will give you all the local news of importance and I will not have much to write about. The war is yet on hand—this I suppose you have knowledge of. We have been so disappointed about its speedy termination that we begin to settle down under the conviction that it is going to take years yet to close it up. The spring campaign so far has not been attended with much success to the north. The failure of Sherman, for it is so regarded; the disaster in Florida; the failure at Richmond, have each had the effect to strengthen the hopes of the rebels north and south. Yet we have great reason to rejoice that our veterans have nearly all re-enlisted, and that so many new ones have gone into the service, and that our armies are today stronger than they were ever. Iowa has done nobly and ever, our county has done well. When called on to furnish 20 men, as her quota, she stood right up to the work and got the men within a week- Iowa is all right. She has more ablebodied men today than when the war began. She has got the will and the means to do all of her part in this great struggle, and nothing

does more to make her feel like doing her share than the influence of the proud part her brave boys have taken in this great struggle. The recollection of their b ave acts incites others to go and do likewise, and those that cannot go want to have some part in the

matter and they help those that do go. Iowa is a proud state today. As I expected this last legislature was not much credit to Bell did well, but Ross was a failure. He has no brains and dont know it. He ought to represent some such place as Lewis, Exira or Dalmanetha, as he has no idea of what a commercial point is. Because he used to live in Lewis and because the railroad did not run by that place, he thought he would show his hand against the railroads in the Senate. He failed, however. Bell stood up for us well. I suppose you are posted about our railroad prospects, if not, Mate will give you our hopes and chances for a road.

Since Chase has declined I think there can be no doubt about Mr. Lincoln's renomination and election. The Cops will run Little Mac, and he will come out about litke Tuttle in Iowa at least. Many voted for Tuttle believing he was a patriot, who will not vote for Mc Clelland, because they know that any man that would

indorse Judge Woodward, as he ddd is a traitor.

The Germans will not go very strongly for Mr. L. but as between he and McC. I think they wil go all right. The Democrat is apposed to L. and it has some cause for so doing. The only dark spots on Mr. L's history as President are those which come from his course toward the Radicals of Missouri and his border state sympathy. I suppose you have heard that a fourth judgeship of the Supreme Court has been created and that Bro. Cole has been appointed, this is all right. I will not write any more tonight; promising a longer one hereafter. I hope you will have a good chance to win laurels this season, but I hope you will come off safe; don't get hit, it might hurt you.'

On April 8th there reported to me one of our most reliable He was a southern man and was a union man but was in the employ of General Polk of the Confederate army and had been for a He remained most of the time inside the enemy's lines long time. and we allowed him, when he came through to our lines, to smuggle things through. I also instructed him that what information he to the enemy took through that it must be reliable and truthful and in that way he obtained the confidence of the Confederate forces. wardsd his report to General McPherson, which is as followst.

Athens, April 8, 1864.

"LeftRienzi, Mississippi March 15th, 1864. Met Forrest at Rupelo, he had rations issed to 4800 horses. Buford's division was with him, his troops are all Tennesseeians and Kentuckians. Left. General Polk's head quarters at Demopolis, March26th. Cars cant run. to Tibbee bridge on M. & O. R. R. Cars not running from Meridian to Selma but men are at work on it. Polk was to move to Meridian as soon as the road was finished. He has 10,000 troops. French and Lorings besides some 3000 Vicksburg prisoners in camp No troops have gone from Polk to Johnson since Sherman was there Nothing at Columbus, Miss. Lee and Adams are towards Vicksburg. Left Selma March 26th, nothing there. A good deal of army work going on there. Left Montgomery March 27th, nothing A good deal of there. Left Atlanta March 28th, considerable number of troops All state troops. General Morgan with his command left on War going up to Longstreet's army. the 26th going north-east. Said to have 6,000 men all mounted. Left Atlanta March 28th, went to Rome, Ga. General Brown's brigade at Rome, very small force

not to exceed 1500. Men are at work on battery covering the crossing of the Gostamanda. Passed 21 cars loaded with pontoon bridges at Kingston going to Dalton. They also had a large amount of pontoosn at Atlanta and were building them there, and at Selma and Demopolis. Johnson has about 45,000 men all told, infantry, cavalry and artillery. Most of his army, say 35,000 is at and about Dalton. It is the general impression that Johnson is getting ready to move. He has a considerable stock of provisions on hand ready. Johnson keeps his lines closed, allows no persons in or out. It is the general talk that Grant has taken a large force from our front to Washington. The movement in our right at Decatur, &c. they are watching closely. Have a courier line to Rome and do not know what to make offit. Went back to Rome to West Point, Ga., left there April 2d,

Went back to Rome to West Point, Ga., left there April 2d, came up and crossed Blue Mountains, left there April 2d; at that point, Martin's division of cavalry had just arrived to recruit, and move 15 miles south; also three batteries that had been stationed there to recruit had gone to the front. Few cavalry left at Gadsden. Clanton left Saturday, crossed the mountains at Summit, thence to Oostamanla, thence to Whitesburg, thence to Flint river where he was this morning. Our mounted force were skirmishing with him at Flint river.

Johnson is in good spirits, and at a 11 other points despondent. They do not increase the army by the conscript act very much. It is the general belief that Sherman intends to turn their left by way of Coosa Valley, but it is the general rumor that Johnson intends to turn our left. They believe Thomas has only a small force, that Grnat is accumulating some 250,000 men in front of Richmond and has weakened Sherman to do it. At Tome the scouts sa w an A.Q.M. who was collecting 1900 artillery horses, and he said Johnson was about ready, that he had 1000 wagons loaded with commissary stores. The scout also says that it was talked generally that Forrest was to cross to our right. Morgan on our left and break our communications. Morgan, Forrest and S. D. Lee were on consultation at Columbus, Miss. before Forrest moved north. This was from March 12th to 15th. So far what the scout saw the report is reliable and he is a shrewed observer and one of my best men. He gives the rumors as he heard them.

All the talk of officers was that Johnson intends to take initiative. All furloughs have been stoppd. No troops since March 11th of any account have eith r moved east or west. Johnson's army is fed almost entirely from South Alabama, and a large amount of produce goes from S.W. Ga. to Lee's Army. Stores in considerable quantities are accumulated at Atlanta and Marietta and a good deal of corn is brought from South Alabama to Blue Mountains over Selma and Rome Railroad. The scout says everything north of Atlanta is virtually skinned and the road he travelled from West Point to Blue Mountains is very poor, and the first good country he struck was around Jacksonville, Benton County. Columbus, Ga. is being extensively fortified.

Forrest left his trains at Tupelo and it is engaged hauling corn to that point. Two soldiers belonging to General Smith's command, wounded in the fight at Okalona, were killed in the hospital at Aberdien by some of Forrest's men. It created considerable excitement and indignation among the citizens. Lt. General Polk said if Smith had reached Sherman he would have gone to Selma and they could not have stopped him. H2, (Polk) said he estimated Shermans forces at about 20,000 men. Scouts had orders from General Forrest, General Polk, Atlanta, Rome &c. He says they all say their army is today at its maximum and that they cannot increase it. Every point he was at he saw gangs of deserters at work in chains and met them on all trains."

Buch reports as this were of great value to us as we could check them up and it will be seen by the other reports of spies that they generally corroborated this. I do not give the name of this spy because he is still living in the south.

.

Our method of treating thieves and deserting soldiers is shown in the finding of a court-martial on Moses Smith as follows:

S. O. No. 28, Athens, April 8th, 1864.

The court finds the accused "gualty as charged. And the Court does therefore sentence him, Moses Smath, an enlisted under cook of African demcent, in Co. H., lilth Illinois Infantry Volunteers, "To have his head shaved on the right side from a line extending from the nose across the top of the head down to the nape of the neck; that he be clothed in a cotton suit, to be striped in alternate stripes, extending around his person, of black and white four inches wide each, from the neck to the feet with the following inscription in red letters, to be three and one half inches in length each, upon the white stripe across his back, viz: "Unworthy of Freedom," and in this condition paraged before the colored troops in this command on such day as the Commanding General may designate. After which he is to be sent to the Dry Tortugas, and kept at hard labor during his life."

Fiding of the court in this case approved. The Court erred

Fiding of the court in this case approved. The Court erred in designating the place of imprisonment in its sentence. In consideration, however, of the aggravated character of the crime and that the prisoner may not escape punishment justly due him, the sentence

is confirmed."

This method of treating them was really more effective then imprisonment or more severe sentences.

On April 11th, Mr. Peter A Dey wrote me as follows in relation to the progress of the Union Pacific road:

Omaha, April 11, 1864.

I am glad to get your letter for many reasons, and one in particular to find you full of confidence and hope. I have felt that it was a mistake taking Grant from the Army of the West, but hope not. I trust the campaign of this year will end the war and if crushing two armies will do it, hope that every effort will be made to accomplish it. I fear the result of Maximilian's landing in Mexico it looks to me like a part and parcel of a plan for armed intervention and I can readily see that those southern leaders driven to desperation will make any terms with France or anybody else rather than submit. A successful campaign and rapid close of the war is all that to my mind will save us from further and greater difficulties. With this in view, I regretted the transfer of Grant from the southwest to a point where politicial strife and combinations may render him useless for a portion of the season.

April 4/864 We began grading up the ravine south of Omaha and the prospects are that the road will be pushed forward this season and I think the Iowa roads will be united and built from Des Moines

to the Bluffs on the shortest practicable route.

Durant is vascillating and changeable and to my mind utterly unfit to head such an enterprise. He has the position and money to run it, but it is like dancing with a whirlwind to have anything to do with him. Today matters run smoothly and tomorrow they don't.

I have on hand a large party of engineers ready to start for the mountains and am delayed by an order to wait a few days with the prospect of having to leave the surveys unfinished next fall for want of time. Grading is the same way; can get no instructions to let the heavy work between this and the Elkhorn river, which should have been done the 1st of December, if there is any object in hurrying it.

hurrying it.

I received yesterday your bridges, or rather the photographs, some nice work, and judge you can get better lumber than this portion

of Nebraksa furnishes.

If there were parties managing in New York that would be governed by what I write and furnish the money without desiring to meddle with the details I could build the work for less money and more rapidly than can be done the way they propose to do it. I am buying land

above Florence and getting out ties with a gang employed and under a foreman; they will cost us less than 50 cents. I could not contract for that; hope things will run smoothly here."

I received a dispatch from General Sherman requesting me to send General Thomas \$20,600 in Confederate money but I had a few to Washington days before by direction of the Secretary of War, sent \$50,000 which I had on hand, as I did not expect to have any use for it after we moved. This money was generally picked up by the scouts and the Gavalry in their raids. It was also brought in and reported to me, where it was obtained and at the end of the war I had quite an amount of it. A few days before this I had given the scout employed by General Polk \$6,000 for which I took his receipt.

On April 12th, I was called to Huntsville by General McPherson and met General Logan and General John E. Smith and Major General Slocum. General McPherson took up the plan of campaign and the movement of his army, making the final arrangemends for the crossing of the forces at Decatur. While I was there he informed me that General Grant had asked my promotion and assignment to the country West of the Mississippi river. He said that General Grant was very much disturbed as to the conditions over there and greatly dissatisfied. This was a great surprise to me and General McPherson said while it was a promotion, he would be very sorry to lose me. General Grant never said a word to me in relation to this until after the war but I find the following in the war Records:

In the campaign, it is desirable to commence as soon as our veterans return. It is important to have some one near Banks who can issue orders to him and see that they are obeyed. This will be esepcially important— if the move is made against Mobiel as I now calculate upon. How to effect this I do not know see; unless all that territory embraced in the department of the Missouri, Kansas, Arkansas, and the Gulf are formed into a military division. Whom to place in command of it I do not know. Of the four department commanders, Steele would be far the best and would do very well. He has not got with him, however, a single general officer whom I would like to trust alone with a command. The best suggestion I could make would be to promote Dodge for Steel's command. I wish you would think of this matter and give me your views."

On my return from Huntsville, I learned that a company of the 9th Ohio Cavalry, watching the Tennessee river near Lucas Ferry had been captured, evidently through great negligence. The enemy took them in before daylight without firing a shot. As this was the

La Brill

TO BE INSERTED ON PAGE 145.

The lack of transportation caused so many complaints that General Grant sent General W. F. Smith, his Chief Engineer, to see me and I made a suggestion as to the operations of the trains. I said that the trains going to the front should be given the right and be run in sections and the empty trains going to the rear should be run individually so as to use a single siding in passing the other trains. They adopted this and it enabled them to nearly double their tonnage and when General Smith returnd to General Grant, he recommended that the operation of the road should be turned over to me but Gen. Grant declined to put that burden upon me; saying it was the duty of the Operating Departments of the road to take care of it and he brought those men into consultation with him at Nashville and accomplished a great deal in relieving the congestion.

first expedition of the regiment, they were evidently green and off of their guard. The quarter-master and Commissary Department at Nashville had to supply the Army of the Cumberland, Army of the Tennessee and the Army of the Ohio, stretching from Nashville to to Chattanooga and Knoxville Decatur, and they found it impossible to do it with the two lines of road and Col. Donelson, the chief quarter master at Athens, had built eight light boats to run from Decatur to Landons and on April 10th, he wrote me a letter suggesting that I extend the railmoad at Decatur from the Junction to the river so that he could connect. On Apr 14th I wrote him that I had the railroad finished across the Tennessee bottom; the bridge across Swan Pond, the only obstacle; that this would allow the cars to run to the river. railroad grade at the river is twenty feet above the table land. To remedy this I am building a track down upon the table land along the slope of the old grades and thence up the river and parallel to it so that they can be unloaded directly into boats or warehouses as the case may require. I have also built one warehouse on the river for my own use 100 feet long and 30 feet wide, and am putting up one alongside of the track 250 feet long and 60 feet wide. I think it would be safe for boats to run from Decatur to Bridgeport, provided they were conveyed by gunboats. We have posts on this side of the river at Whitesburg, Claysville and Larkins's Ferry (both sides) ...

I don't think that these boats were ever extended to Decatur that they stopped at Stevenson. Between Stevenson and Decatur the opportunity for sharpshooters and others to reach the river and annoy the boats, was, I judge, the reason, as the railroad line from tecatur to Stevenson was a long ways from the river. Thesert 1

On April 14th, my brother, Mr. N. P. Dodge, reached me at Athens and accompanied me that day to Decatur: When he passed through Nashville they considered him such a dangerous person that Captain Williasm Mills, acting as Asst. Quar. Master, took his revolver from him.

There were continual reports now of the movement of Forest to Jackson and the crossing of the Tennessee river and from Decatur that the enemy were closing in around that place. There had been so many rumors that I paid no attention to them until on the 17th I received a dispatch that the enemy were in line of battle only a short distance away from the fortifications. I immediately took a hand-car and. with an Aide and my brother went to Decatur. I made up my mind that I would determine what forces there were in the front and I took Fuller's Brigade and went out on a reconnoissance myself. About three miles from Decatur, I struck the enemy on the opposite side of the creek, apparently in force. I immediately put out my skirmish line. There was a cornfield between me and the enemy and as the skirmishers went through it, the enemy opened upon them. It was a puzzle to my brother why the soldiers dodged from behind one corn stalk to another when they were no protection from the told him that was to destroy the enemy's aim. It looked to me as though I was going to have an engagement and I told my brother that one of a family was all that was necessary to be present and that he would have to retur to Decatur which he very reluctantly did. I soon broke through this force, scattering it and discovered that it was only a heavy picket line around us, who were only watching of what was going to happen, and Leturned to Decatur.

As soon as I reached Decatur, I received a dispatch from General McPherson that General Forest was in Western Tennessee, destroying everything and he wanted to know if I could not send General Sweerev with his division after him. I did not believe these stories about Forest and I immediately sent Col. Rowett with the 7th Illinois mounted and the 9th Ohio Cavaly to go to the river and get his men across and bring me the truth concerning Forest. General Rowett carried out his orders very promptly and I forwarded by telegraph to Gen.McPherson, his report as follows:

"Reports from West Tennessee indicate that Forest is making out of the country. I have followed him far enough to satisfy myself that infantry cannot get a shot at him, unless it is so weak a force that he is satisfied he can whip it; he watches the country very closely, especially the river from Eastport nobth, and no doubt anticipates a movement from this direction, at least this is what the citizens and scouts all say. He claims to have 6,000 effective men in West Tennessee, it is possible he may have added

one or two thousand to it since he went there. He takes everything without regard to former principles of the owners, and that entire country is feasting him and his officers. I know of a large number who have professed great "love" for our flag, who have outdone themselves in "toddying" Forrest. It would be a just judgement on Wesst Tennessee, if the troops sent there were given orders to burn the entire country, take everything that can walk and destroy every and anything a rebel can ear of drink, or be of any benefit whatever to them."

It is safe to say that General Forrest did not have over one-half of the 60000 men which he claims to have had, and that he was simply there to feed his command. He soon left which relieved us of the necessity of sending any troops after him.

The planting season was soming on in Tennessee and it became necessary for us to protect the people who were on their farms to keep them from starving and on April 19th, I issued the following order:

# Athens, April 20, 1864.

"The country west of the Elk river having heretofore been considered outside of the federal lines, and having been heavily depredated and foraged upon, and it being the policy of the Government so far as possibley, to encourage the raising of crops through out the country north of the Tennessee river, it is hereby ordered:

I. That the people living north of the Tennesseee river will

I. That the people living north of the Tennesseee river will receive from commanding officers, visiting or occupying that section of the country west of the Elk river, such aid as is consistent with their duties and the taking of stock except as a military necessity with Willobe desisted from.

II. With every family, who desire to raise a crop this season, there will be left at least one team and also provisions for the subsistance of the family two months.

III. So far as practicable, the Chief Quarters Master will lease to citizens broken down and unserviceable stock, to replace any stock taken, taking receipts and bonds therefore, as prescribed in Gen. Grant's instructions.

IV. Troops subsisting off of that country will endeavor to obtain their supplies from known rebels, and will give every protection and aid in their power to known and undoubted loyal citizens.

V. If the loyal citizens of that country desire quite and protection, they must by act and deed give their hearty support to the Government of the United States, and Federal troops; put down guerrillas and robbers and discountenance in every way rebels and their sympathizers.

VI. Nothing in this order modifies or does away with orders heretofore issued, prescribing the manner of taking forage, stock &c. everything taken from undoubted loyal persons, must be receipted for and re ported in such manner, that they can receive cash vouchers from the Chief Quarters Master of Commissary of Sussistence of this command. "

When enclosing these orders to Col. Rowe t to have him distribute them throughout the country, I gave him the following instructions:

me Table

Athens, April 19, 1864.

"I enclose an order issued to apply to the country west of the Elk River. It is probable we may need, ourselves, a great deal of what they raise, but for the present support we must encourage them to raise enough for themselves to eat, and obviate the necessity of the government supporting them. The order does not prohibit the taking of stock, when needed by our troops, but discretion must be used in this and teams left with all. If you have any unserviceable animals, or broken down stock that you cannot recruit, it would be well for you to get blanks from Captain Wing and let it out in that country, the same as he is doing here. The order judiciously carried out, will keep us better supplied with stock than we are now and at the same time gives the people a chance to raise corn, &c. for themselves, or for our own men next fall, should any of our forces be in the count ry.

I desire you to see that the order is properly obeyed. Captain Wing I believe still has broken down stock to be left out."

#### THE ATLANTA CAMPAIGN.

On April 22d, I received my first orders for the movement of troops in the Atlanta Campaign. On the same day, I received an order from the War Department to hang Sgt. John Myers of the 7th Illinois Infantry at 10 o'clock A. M. on the 28th. This was a surprise to Sgt. Myers had killed the Captain of his company at Corinth; had been tried and convicted and the recommendation of the court martial went forward for the approval of the War Department. When I left Corinth he was in the guard house. I immediately made inquiry of General Sweeney, who commanded that division and ascertained from him that when Corinth was abandoned by our troops that the soldiers confined in the guard house webe released and sent to the regiment and that Sgt. Myers had returned to his regiment and taken his place in the company as a Sgt. and had been on duty ever since; had taken part in battles, etc. I immediately appealed to the War Department for a remittance of this sentence as there were a great many extenuating circumstances in the killing of the Captain and this soldier could have escaped. He did not need to return to his regiment; he had been dropped on the rolls and no one would have looked for him, but, like a good soldier, he came back to his company. This appealed to me and I tried to save him but the war Department wired me to carry out the order and to report to them as soon as executed. I transfered this order to General Sweeney and he notified me that he was executed at 10 A. M. on the 28th.

Themas R. M. D.

My first orders for the movement of my forces was to move from Decatur, crossing the Flint Creek towards Rome; this order was changed, ordering me to move directly on Huntsville. General Sherman issued an order that each regimen and battery should have one wagon and the officers of each company one pack animal; that each Corps, division and Brigade head-quarters should have one wagon; that all the rest of the transportation was to be organized into ordnance and supply trains and carry twenty days rations for command, and, where practical, men should always carry three days provisions and this made our ordnance and supply trains pretty heavy but the rest of the transportation was very light. We were ordered to carry 140 rounds of infantry ammunition and 200 rounds of artillery for a gun and 40 rounds of ammunition to the man; no tents were to be taken. I stripped my troops to this order, literally, so did almost all of the Army of the Tennessee. We also found that when General Sherman took the field he followed the order, literally, and had at his head quarters for his own use, only the tent fly and a small tent for his Adjutant General, but when we struck the army of the Cumberland, we saw more tents aroundhtheir head-quarters than the whole Army of the Tennessee had and saw tents throughout their command and a general protest went up from the Army of the Tennessee that they should be deprived of them. While General Sherman said that they had not lived up to the order, he did not inforce the order; therefore, the Army of the Tennessee and the Ohio began to pick up covering wherever they could get it and we landed in Atlanta with a good deal more than we had when we started.

My command, the 16th Army Corps in the field during the campaign, consisted of the following regiments, batteries and commanders of each division, brigade and regiment: The field officers of the 1st Alabama Cavalry were George E. Spencer, Colonel, Ozro J. Dodds, Lt. Col., George L. Godfrey, Major. Francis L. Cramer, Major. Alonzo W. Edwards, Adjutant.

- -126-

# SIXTEENTH ARMY CORPS (LEFT WING).

Maj. Gen. Grenville M. Dodge Brig. Gen. Thomas E. G. Ransom.

General Headquarters.

lst Alabama Cavalry:
 Lieut. Col. George L. Godfrey.
 Col. George E. Spencer.
52d Illinois, Company A., Capt. George E. Young.

# Second Division.

Brig. Gen. Thomas W. Sweeny. Brig. Gen. Elliott W. Rice. Brig. Gen. John M. Corse.

First Brigade.

Brig. Gen. Elliott W. Rice.

52d Illinois, Lt. Col. Edwin A. Bowen

66th Indiana:

Lt. Col. Roger Martin Maj. Thomas G. Morrison Capt. Alfred Morris.

2d Iowa:

Col. James B. Weaver Lieut. Col. Noel B. Howard Maj. Mathew G. Hammill. Capt. John A. Duckworth

7th Iowa:

Lieut. Col. James C. Parrott Maj. James W. McMullin. Lt. Col. James C. Parrott. Maj. James W. McMullin. Capt. Samuel Mahon. Second Brigade.

Col. Patrick E. Burke.
Lieut. Col. Robert N. Adams.
Col. August Mersy.
Lieut. Col. Jesse J. Phillips.
Col. Robert N. Adams.
9th Illinois (mounted)
Lt. Col. Jesse J. Phillips.
Maj. John H. Kuhn.
Capt. Samuel T. Hughes.
12th Illinois.
Maj. James R. Hugunin.
Lieut. Col. Henry Van Sellar.
66th Illinois:
Maj. Andrew K. Campbell.
Capt. William S. Boyd.
81st Ohio:
Lieut. Col. Robert N. Adams.
Maj. Frank Evans.
Lieut. Col. Robert N. Adams.
Capt. Noah Stoker.
Capt. William Clay Henry.

#### Third Brigade.

Col. Moses M. Bane.
Brig. Gen. William Vandever.
Col. Henry J. B. Cummings.
Col. Richard Rowett.

7th Illinois:

Col. Richard Rowett Lt. Col. Hector Perrin. 50th Illinois, Maj. Wm. Hanna. 57th Illinois, Lt. Col. Frederick J. Hurlbut. 39th Iowa:

Col. Henry B. Cummings. Lt. Col. James Redfield. Col. Henry J. B. Cummings. Maj. Joseph M. Griffiths. Lt. Col. James Redfield.

Artillery. ·

#### Capt. Frederick Welker.

1st Michigan Light, Battery, B. Capt. Albert F. R. Arndt. 1st Missouri Light, Battery, H. Lieut. Andrew T. Blodgett. Lst Missuri Light, Battery, I, Lieut. John F. Brunner.

# Fourth Division.

Brig. Gen. James V. Veatch Brig. Gen. John W. Fuller. Brig. Gen. Thomas E. G. Ransom. Brig. Gen. John W. Fuller.

First Brigade.
Brig. Gen. John W. Fuller.
Col. John Morrill.
Lt. Col. Henry T. McDowell.
Brig. Gen. John W. Fuller.
Lt. Col. Henry T. McDowell.
64th Illinois:
Col. John Morrill.
Lt. Col. Michael W. Manning.
18th Missouri:
Lt. Col. Charles S. Sheldon.
Maj. William H. Minter.
27th Ohio Lieut. Coll Mendal Churchill.
39th Ohio:
Col. Edward F. Noyes.
Lt. Col. Henry T. McDowell.
Maj. John S. Jenkins.
Lt. Col. Henry T. McDowell.
Maj. John S. Jenkins.

Second Brigade. Sprgaue
35th New Jersey:
Capt. Charles A. Angel.
Col. John J. Cladek.
Lt. Col. William A. Henry.
43d Ohio, Col. Wager Swayne.
63d Ohio:
Lt. Col. Charles E. Brown.
Maj. John W. Fouts.
25th Wisconsin:
Col. Milton Montgomery.
Lieut. Col. Jeremiah M. Rusk

# Third Brigade.

Col. James H. Howe. Col. William T. C. Grower. Col. John Tillson.

10th Illinois, Capt. George C. Lusk.
25th Indiana:
 Lt. Col. John Rheinlander.
 Capt. James S. Wright.
17th New York, Maj. Joel O. Martin.
32d Wisconsin, Col. Charles H. De Groat.

# Artillery.

Capt. Jerome B. Burrows. Capt. George Robinson.

2nd United States Battery F:
Lt. Albert M. Murray.
Lt. Joseph C. Breckinridge.
Lt. Lemuel Smith.
Lt. Rezin G. Howell.

The 9th Illinois of my command was mounted under the command of Lt. Col. Phillips. My Pioneer Corps was under the command of Captain Armstrong and my Chief Engineer was Col. Tiedeman. My Pioneer Corps took a small amount of the different kinds of tools with them and my enginerring corps was quite large, having had many detailed form it from the ranks and I held them in tact and utilized of allower marches them during the whole campaign, requiring them to make maps of the roads and the country and get all the information possible, giving

distances, topography, streams, camps, towns, etc., which was so full in detail that it was of great use not only to myself but to General Sherman and General McPherson who often called on me for the data I had collected. I took care to leave all of the stores, baggage, etc. in charge of convalescing men and stored them in Huntsville so that they could be reached at any time. Having raised three regiments of colored infantry, I only had to leave a small brigade of my command at Decatur; the 10th Illinois, 25th Indiana, 17th New York and the 32md. Wisconsin. I also left, temporarily, the 7th Illinois mounted, but they were afterw ards relieved forces of the Army of the Cumberland, when they rejoined me. I had left in command of the line from Lynnville to Decatur, General J. D. Stevenson. We issued strict orders as to foraging, prohibiting any depredations except by order of an officer. Lt. Harris who had been in command of my contrband camp, while I was located on the line of the Nashville and Decatur road. returned to me on May 1st the following report:

Decatur, May 1st, 1864.

"I have the honor to submit the following report for the month of April, 1864. The number received in the different camps during the month is 1327. The number received up to March 31, 1864, 1263, making a total of 2590; of which 1529 are 12 years old and over, 1061 are 11 years old and under, 979 males and 1611 females. They are located as follows: ON Brown's plantation, Giles

They are located as follows: ON Brown's plantation, Giles Col, Tenn., 1253; Phillips, Ditto, 697--Reynolds, ditto 205--Rivers, Ditto, 80--Alx. Carter's Ditto, 7--Thos. Jones, Ditto 5... Cobbs plantation Limestone County, Ala. 303.

The number detailed during the month, 20, making a total on

The number detailed during the month, 20, making a total on detail of 286. The number of deaths 40. Have drawn and issued 35778 rations during the month.

Have built 50 houses this month making in all 75. About 500 of the people are yet in railpens and sheds, but it is hoped to soon have comfortable quarters for all.

Have built 50 houses. Have planted 1000 acres of cotton, 200 acres of corn, three large gardens, and have about 200 acres ready for planting.

The Grist mill on the Brown plantation has been running as constantly as grain could be procured and the saw mill on the same place has sawed 22,400 feet of lumber of which 16,000 feet has been consumed.

Have herded 100 head of government condemned stock to pasture. Amount deposited in Post Treasury, Pulaski, time up to March 31st, 1864, \$8488.59, drawn and expended up to same date, \$2187.00 Remaining on deposit \$6301.69. Amount deposited in April, 1864, \$161.40. Total on deposit, \$6462.99. Amount drawn in April 1864. \$6462.99. Amount expended in April 1864. \$993.10. Amount remaining on hand, \$5459.89.

Since January 1st, 1864, three hundred and fifty pairs of shoes have been bought and distributed among the people, also a number of blankets. Some contributions have been made, but wothing comparatively to what should be to supply the wants.

I am carrying on various kinds of labor at the same time; milling, sawing, lumber, building houses, blacksmithing and

(2) Page 199 When General Sherman in April, 1864, was organizing his forces for Atlanta Campaign, General Hurlbut demanded the right to take command of the 16th Army Corps in the field. Sherman conceded that he had the right to this command, and notified General Grant of Hurlbut's request. Grant answered: "I desire that Dodge command the 16th Army Corps in the field. Would not recommend Hurlbut for further command." Sherman when answered Hurlbut: "Dispatch from Grant shows that he wants Dodge to command 16th Army Corps in field." On April 11, 1864, he wrote Hurlbut as follows: "You have a high order of professional knowledge, but I think you do not take naturally to rough contact in the field. Failing to destroy bridge at Canton and declining Red River command. I think Grant, if Dodge were a Major General, would have taken away from you your command of the corps and given it to him."

agriculture. The expenditure is as various as the labor.

All has been acomplished in four months. On the 1st of January the first camp was organized near Pulaski, Tenn. without a dollar to start with. All the money expended since then has been procured by picking cotton at 2 cents per pound, from cotton raised on the Phillips and Pownelds plantations with the procured of the Phillips and Pownelds plantations.

dollar to start with. All the money expended since then has been procured by picking cotton at 2 cents per pound, from cotton raised on the Phillips and Reynolds plantations, picked, ginned and baled by the contrbands of those places, and from the tax collected in accordance with Gen. Thomas's order. Thought the amount drived from the last named source is less than I should desire, yet my time has been too much taken up in the organization of new camps to make collections.

I would suggest that some plan for saving the cotton lying about loose and endangering the buildings in which it is stored by adopted. By proper management at large amount now wasting might be saved to supply the wants of the destitute.

The accomodations for the sick have been poor, but I am now building hospitals. The supply of medicine is quite limited.

During the advance of the army but little attention has been paid to the educational department, but I hope the school master will not always be abroad, and as soon as teachers and books can be procured school houses will be built."

This shows how we utilized the families of the contrbands whom I had working on the railroad And when I left there, I left the colored troops with their families well housed and well cared for without any expense to the government.

On May 1st my troops moved out of Athens, Pulaski and Decatur on a direct road to Huntsville where I was ordered to concentrate. I immediately went to Huntsville to make arrangements there for the supply of my troops as they came through and also for the storage of all our camp equippage.

On May 2nd, General Hurlbut was relieved of the command of the 16th Army Corps, leaving me in command in the field and this was his farewell order:

Cairo, May 2, 1864.

"The Lt. General commanding the armies of the United States has this day relieved me from the command of the 16th Army Corps. In separating from a body of officers and men whom I have so long commanded, it would be improper and inconsistent with my feelings if I did not give some testimonial of services rendered and duties

performed by this corps.

The left wing of this corps, under the command of Brigadier General Dodge co-operated with Major General Sherman in his advance in October to relieve Chattanooga and Knoxville, and now hold the right flank of the active army in Tennessee. Two divisions of this corps participated in the march to Meridian, and under the able direction of Brig. General A. J. Smith rolled back the tide of disastrous battle of Bred River. It is with proper pride that I claim Smith and Mower and their commands as pasts of this corps. Nor do I forget to give credit to a detachment from the 17th Arm Corps which marched and fought as brothers in arms with them. Nor is it least among the credit due to the 16th Army Corps that it furnished to Major General W. T. Sherman, then commanding the 15th Corps 970 wagons and teams and 7,000 new muskets; for without that transportation his march from Corinth to Chattanooga, and from Chattanooga to Knoxville, could not have been made in time necessary for the relief of those points. Reduced by these heavy drafts,

the slender residue of the 16th Army Corps was notwithstanding, expected to cover the line of the old district of West Tennessee; to protect the river, and to hold the immense depots and hospitals at Memphis. The Cavalry division reduced by exposure and constant duty- for their record shows constant and dashing work9 by furlough of veteran regiments, and absolute want of horses to comparative inefficiency; infantry not more than sufficient for garrison duty rendered the command unequal to the task assigned them. They have lost no honor by not performing impossibilities. Every day now brings you additional strength, and soon the day will come when you will reckon with the enemy for this long enforced delay."

On May 2, I received an order from General Sherman to put General Sweeny's division of over 5000 men on the cars at Larkins-ville at 8 o'clock A. M. on May 4th and Gen. Veatch's command of 6000 men at Woodsville at the same hour, and to have my trains and artillery and mounted infantry and cavalry go by dirt road to Chattanooga. On receiving this order, knowing that the command was not posted in loading cars, I went immediately to these two points and issued the following order:

May 2, 1864.

lst: Regiments and Brigades so far as practicable will be loaded together. Each box car will be loaded with 70 men, placing them inside and out, and brigade commanders will see that the men ase counted off, as they are placed upon the train, and as counted the men will be assigned to them.

2d. The flat fars will be taken first for battery, 2d for

2d. The flat cars will be taken first for battery, 2d for regimental teams, horsem and mules. Should be loaded with at least 15 to a car and Q. M.'s will see that this properly attended to. Five days rations will be taken.

From each regiment will be detailed men who know engine signals to mann each brake, who will have charge of the brakes, and

Stay by them during the entire trip.

The ammunition will be distributed through the train, and in the cars that soldiers occupy. Line officers will in all cases accompany their commands and field officers their regiments.

Brigade and regimental commanders will give their personal attention to the loading of the troops and stores. Any disregard of this order will be immediately reported by inspectors, either to division commanders or these head quarters."

These troops were loaded and reached Chattanooga during the night of May 4th and were unloaded from their trains and ready to march on the morning of the 5th. I arrived in Chattanooga very early on the morning of the 5th and General Shemman sent a dispatch to General Grant that "Dodge is here and will secure Tunnell Hill in the morning." The rapidity with which I marched my men through from Pulaski to Huntsville and on to Larkinsville has often been spoken of. We marched 75 miles in two days. The following is an extract from the Cincinnati Gazette in relation to this march:

It takes but a line to tell that General Podge's command moved from---to---75 miles, but ah! how many lines would it require to tell the history of such a march? There are many steps to be taken by many feet, and with many a soldier each step is an event. Forty years hence little urchins will clamber upon the feeble knees of gray-haired historians and listen to the enchanting stories of grandfather's march. I will not mar the history by attempting to write it here.

The common idea of a march is a dreary, tiresome day of hard walking over every conceivable kind of road. A night of broken rest, and the repetition of the same gloomy day. It is true that a day(s march of a regiment is a very hard duty- but any one who has marched with a regiment knows that there never so much life and hilarity mmong the soldiers as when marching. The wit and repartee may not be the most brilliant or the most refined, but it is thoroughly good natured and intensely laughable. The good hum or thus engendered goes far toward lightening the weary way of the soldier. Every peculiarity of every soldier is made the subject of ridicule or good natured comment. Even their own burden is characterized by every conceivable name. The Cartridge box is called the "magazine", the belts, etc., are "Harness."

A soldier declares he carries with him not only his food and raiment but also his "night's lodging." It is well these playful moods prevail so much, else a soldier's life would be dreary enough."

On the morning of May 5th, I reported to General Sherman at his head quarters very early. I had been down to the station to see that my troops had arrived alright and were properly encamped.

General Sherman's I met General McPherson at his head-quarters. He was discussing a dispatch that he had sent to President Lancoln. When General Sherman commenced preparing for the Atlanta Campaign, he issued an order prohibiting any stores being sent by cars to citizens; they must live off of the country or must go to a country where they could get provisions because the roads were not equal to hauling equipments and provisions to both soldiers and citizens. account of this order, a great protest was made from all that country to the President and the War Department and President Lincoln had Sherman made an appeal on behalf of these citizens to General Grant and he had sent Lincoln the following dispatch:

Hdgrs. Military Div. of the Miss.,

In the field, Chattanooga, May 5.

"We have worked hard with the best talent of the country, and it is demonstrated that the railroad cannot supply the army and the people too. One or the other must quit, and the army don't intend to, unless Joe Johnston makes us. The issues to citizens have been enormous, and the same wight of corn or oats would have saved thousands of the mules, whose carcasses now cordured the roads, and which we need so much. We have paid back to Tennessee ten for one of provisions taken in war. I will not change my order, and I beg of you to be satisfied that the clamor is partly humbug, and for effect; and to test it—I advise you to tell the bearers of the appeal to hurry to Kentucky and make up a caravan of cattle and wagons and come over the mountains by Cumberland Gap and Somerset, to relieve their suffering friends, on foot, as they used to do before a railroad was built. Tell them they have no time to lose. We can relieve all actual suffering by each company or regiment giving of their savings.

Every man who is willing to fight and work gets a full ration, and all who won't fight or work should go away, and we offter them free passage in the cars.

W. T. Sherman,

w. T. Sherman, Major-General

General Sherman greeted me very cordially and inquired where my command and complimented me on the way I had taken care of the country and the methods I had taken to carry out my wrders and he said to McPherson, "Send Dodge to take Ship's Gas," and General McPherson said, "That is 31 miles away." Sherman made no comment I said I would like some maps or a guide that I did not know anything about the country, but what I would rather have would be some breakfast. General Sherman pointed out a hotel where I could get some provisions. I went over to the hotel and sat down to the tabat. I found the knives and forks chained to the table. I said to myself that these people had heard about the Army of the Tennessee and after breakfast when I went back to where General Sherman was, I said to him, laughing, that evidently everyone in Chattanooga had prepared for his army's coming to I said, "Sherman, they must have had queer experience Chattanooga. with you when you were here before." Sherman said, "What?" I said, "At the table where you sent me to get my breakfast, that they had the knives and forks chained to the table so that the Army of the Tennessee could not carry them away." Sherman, instead of taking it in a humerous way, was pretty mad over it but General McPherson thought it was a good joke.

At General Sherman's head-quarters, I received a letter from Pulaski dated May 4th from a very prominent woman whose husband was a manufacturer at Pulaski. This woman was a union woman-a ramity in that country. When I reached Pulaski, this lady called on me immediately and told me that although she was a southern woman her heart and sympathy were with the Union Army but that it had been impossible for her to express herself and she told me that she was willing to do anything it was possible for her to do. I told her she would have to be careful as it might be possible that we should leave that country and anything she did might hurt her or her husband's business but most of her appeals to me were

Jan .

to help people of the southern army who were in distress and needed our protection. There was a lady, the wife of General John B. Brown, (who was a General in the Confederate Army) living at Pulaski and she spoke to me about her but  ${ t General}$  Brown's wir ${ t e}$ w had come to me when I first went there and told me that she was fearful because she was a wife of a confederate General that the soldiers might encroach on her or harm her. I said I would put a guard at her house if she wanted me to but she said no she would rather have one of my staff officers room at her house, so two of my officers roomed at her house while we were in the city. She was a very fine lady. She brought me a letter she had written to her husband, thinking I would want to read it before she sent it to him but I told her I did not need to read it because I knew she would not send anyhthing that should not so to the army. Her husband commanded the division which broke thr ugh the lines on the Augusta Railroad on July 22nd and when I aided in retaking those lines, a Lieutenant of my command fell into General Brown's hands and as soon as he became aware of this, during the flat of truce that was had after the battle of Atlanta, he made known to me that this Lt. Was in his hands and that he was going to take care of him and would send him through the lines as soon as he could. He thanked me for taking care of his family at Pulaski. General Brown was afterwards with me in building the extension of the Texas Pacific railroad in Texas and became the receiver of that road. This lady gave me a great deal of information in relation to the people of the country who they were, what they had done, &c. but she did not ask any punishment for them and kept me pretty thoroughly posted as to what was going on in the inside circles of the Confederate people in that country.

> The letter I received from her at <sup>C</sup>hattanooga was as foilows: May 4, 1864.

"Permit me, dear sir, to thank you for your many kind acts towards me and mine while you were in our midst. Although very much was said and done by my enemies to prejudice you against me, you were still the same kind and obliging friend.

Believe me in losing you from among us, I feel that I have lost my best friend, and one whom I more highly honored for his patriotism, integrity, energy, bravery and true nobleness of character, than any soldier of the army. May God help you, and shield you

you wherever you may be.

While you were here and near us, how securely I felt- but now shall I tell you, General, that I have the saddest heart in our village! That everything here to me wears a gloomy aspect, that dark looks and darker threats, are beginning to burden the atmosphere towards the "few poor misguided (?) wretches whose hearts yearn towards the dear old flag for protection

towards the dear old flag for protection.

I may be alarmed without cause, I hope it is so, but everything wears the appearance of gradual evacuation at this point, and the faces of the secessionists look sunbeamed and glorified. If the worst comes, and we should be left here without the protection of the Federal army, I know not what shall become of us. We cannot fly from our home well, and yet, if we remain I fear the consequences. Let me implore you even at the distance you are from us to still watch over us, and give us your protection by meeting out to the prominent secesh in your lines the same treatment that secessionists mete out to your friends inside their lines.

There will always be persons here to report correctly and promptly to you, if the place should be so unfortunate as to be abandoned.

I shall always regret that I did not see you before you left

I shall always regret that I did not see you before you left I had so much to say that you must remain unsaid. Will always be glad to hear from you and beg that you will ever remember me as

your friend.

P. S. You must pardon this liberty I have taken and attribute it to a grateful heart that could not rest until it had thanked you from its depths for your goodness, and asked you to continue your protection—while I endeavor to stem the tide of popular wrath."

First I moved out with both of my divisions, a battery at+

tached to each, without any transportation, on the morning of the 5th and I reached Gordon Mills, camped there that night. When I arrived there, I rode up to the house and saw three officers sitting around a small table with a bottle of wine upon it. quired of them the road to Ship's Gap and they looked at me and inquired who I was and I told them and what my command was, and they immedaitely said they were General Hooker, Sickles and Butterfield and invited me to bivouac with them. General Hooker noticed that I was a Brig. General and commanded a corps while General Butterfield and Gen. Sickels were Major Generals, Butterfield commanding a division in Hooker's Corps and Sickles on a in the west trip of observation for President Lincoln in the West. General Hooker looked at Butterfield and said, "If I did not think my nose would go out of joint, meaning of course, that I would lose my command; I did not know hardly what answer to make to him but he brought it up twice and I thought possibly he might be demanding my command for Butterfield but that was my first acquaintance with all of them. Afterwards I became quite intimate with General Sickles and Butterfield, especially General Butterfield and we were together in Civil Life afterwards in many processions, official

-1.35°

occasions and General Sicles is still alive and a very dear friend.

On the night of the 6th I camped at Gordon's Springs bubut I pushed Sprague's brigade forward and at midnight he entered /Ship's Gap, very fortunately for us for it was a narrow pass, easily defended and the next morning before day-light, the enemy came there and found it occupied. On reaching Ship's Gap, on the morning of May 7th, I sent the following dispatch to General McPherson:

Hdqrs.Detachment 18th Army Corps.

In field, May 7, 1864.

Colonel Sprague, with Second Brigade, Fourth Division,
Sixteenth Army Corps, holds Ship's Gap and cross-reads leading to Lafayette. One regiment in the gap, the rest at foot of mountains and at the cross-roads. Saw only twenty of the enemy; they were on the Alabama road none in the gap. Signal officers, who went to the top of mountain to where the rebel signal station was located, that communicated Wrom LaFayette to Dalton, say that they could see no indication of General Garrard.

I am, General, very respectfully, yours obedient servant."

General Sherman had ordered General Garrard's division of Cavalry to join us in this flank movement through Snake Creek Gap but it never joined us. On the night of the 7th, I camped at Villanow and on the night of the 8th I reached the head of Snake Creek Gap. I had with me about 20 men of the 9th Illinois mounted Infantry. I sent them through the Gap. They returned and notified me that it was un-occupied. I immediately pushed the 39th Iowa Infantry through to the East end of the gap. It was a long narrow passage and a regiment could have stopped any command coming through it. placed us on the flank and rear of Johnston's forces at Dalton. General McPherson was with the 15th Army Corps and had not yet come up but I sent word to him immediately that my Command was at the Gap and a portion through it. This was one day in advance of General Sherman's time for the Army of the Tennessee to reach there.

At midnight on the 8th, General McPherson issued the following order for our movement the next day!

S.F.O.No. 3, Snake Creek Gap. May 8; The command will be under arms ready to march at 5 o'clock A. M. Tomorrow, through Snake Creek Gap in the direction of Resaca.

The advance division of Brig. Gen. Dodge's command will march as soon as the division in the rear closes up on it.

Brig. Gen. Veatch's division will march at 5 o'clock precisely
Maj. Gen. Logan's command will follow immedaitely after General Dodge's

cormand through the gap.

The object being to make a bold and rapid movement on the enemy's flank or lines of communication, all wagons and baggage of every description will be left behind, except ambulances and ammunition wagons enough to make sixty founds per man in addition to

what we have in cartridge boxes.

The wagons left behind will be properly parked near the west entrance to the gap, and a brigade of infantry from Major General Logan's command, one brigade of infantry and a battery from Brig. Beneral Dodge's command will be left as guard for the train.

Special pains will be taken to keep the road through the Gap open for the passage of troops.

The men will have provisions for three days issued to them tonight if they can be procured. It not, make them go as faras possible.

The battery belonging to Brig. Gen. Dodge's command which came up tonight with horses much fatigued is the one to be left."

At 2 A. M. on May 9th, I received verbal orders to move as far as Rome Cross Roads in Sugar Valley there awaited specific orders The object of the move as stated to me to be to and instructions. demonstrate on Resaca while other troops would cut the railroad My official report of this movement gives it in detail that place. and made at the time, and is as follows:

At daylight in the morning (May 9) the advance, consisting of the Ninth Illinois Mounted Infantry, and Thirty-ninth Iowa Infantry, was attacked by Ferguson's brigade, of the enemy's cavalry. Second Brigade of the Second Division was immediately ordered up, and, moving forward, promptly drove and routed the enemy. In this engagement the gallant Lieut. Col. Jesse J. Phillips, commanding Ninth Illinois Mounted Infantry, was severely wounded. Upon reaching Rome Cross-Roads, I received orders to advance on Resaca, pressing forward until I should succeed in developing the enemy in line of battle or in his fortifications, and, if I gained the Calhoun and Dalton Cross-Roads, one mile west of Resaca, to hold them until one division of the Fifteenth Army Corps should arrive and relieve me. I advanced steadily, meeting with considerable resistance and skirmishing heavily the entire distance to the last-named cross-roads, when the enemy was discovered in line of battle on the Bald Hill, about three-quarters of a mile west of Rasaca, and in his works at Resaca. Leaving the Fourth Division at the cross-roads, I immediately ordered the Second Division formed in two lines, and, advancing it rapidly, drove the enemy, took possession of the Bald Hill, and held it. My position and that of the enemy and his strength was promptly reported to Major-General McPherson, who soon thereafter arrived on the ground and directed me to send a few mounted men up to the Dalton road to reconnoiter the country and find an approach to the railroad in that direction. He also directed me to hold the Bald Hill and cross-roads until the Fifteenth Army Corps I immediately sent a detachment of eighteen mounted men (all I had left), under Captain Hughes, Ninth Illinois Mounted Infantry, up the Dalton road. This force struck the railroad about two miles south of Tilton (which they found strongly patrolled by the enemy's cavalry) and succeeded in cutting the telegraph wires and in burning a wood station, reporting to me without loss at dark. I received orders to advance my left, the Fourth About 4 p. m. I received orders to advance my left, the Fourth Division, to the railroad north of Resaca, and hold the Bald Hill. Division, to the railroad north of Resaca, and note the Date Hill. with the Second Division. General Veatch was immediately ordered to move, with Fuller's and Sprague's brigade of his (fourth) division, massed in close column by divisions, and, forming promptly, he moved rapidly across the west fork of Mill Creek, in plain view of Resaca. The enemy, observing the movement, opened a heavy fire from his batteries upon the column, and also, together with rapid musketry, upon the left of the Second Division, doing, however, but little execution. After having moved the column across the first open field, I received from General McPhørson an order directing me to look well to my right, as the enemy was massing and pressing forward in that direction. Colonel (now Brigadier-General) Fuller led the advance of the column, and, just as he was gaining cover of the woods on the East sid of the Mill Creek, I received notice that Colonel (now Brigadier-General) Sprgaue's brigade had been halted, by order

by order of General McPherson, to support the left of the Second division and hold the space between that division and the Fourth Division. I was with the advance (Fuller's brigade.) The skirmishers had just reported that they were within a short distance of the railroad when the enemy opened fire upon the brigade with a regiment of infantry and a battery in position, directly on our right. I immediately sent orders to Colonel Fuller to charge the battery and swing still farther to the north, under cover of the timber. Before this order was executed, I received orders from General McPherson to withdraw the brigade and close upon Colonel Sprague, who was formed on the left of the Second Division. This had to be done in view of the enemy, whose batteries had a point-blank range across the open fields upon the column. Colonel Fuller described to the timber and withdrawing by region Colonel Fuller deployed his brigade under cover of the timber, and, withdrawing by regiments across the open fields, formed in position on the west side of Mill Creek. By the time the with-drawal was accomplished it was sunset, and I received orders to withdraw the command and return to Snake Creek Gap. I accordingly withdrew the command and bivouacked, about 12 o'clock at night, at the eastern outlet of the gap. Sixty-sixth Illinois Infantry skirmished from Snake Creek Gap to Resaca, some eight miles, driving the enemy before them the entire distance without detention to the column. My loss during the day was 29 killed, wounded and missing. We took some 30 prisoners. An official report, seen some days after in the robel papers, showed that one of the enemy's regiments at Resaca lost 70 men killed and During the entire day the command acted under the personal wounded. direction of Major-General McPharson, and promptly obeyed and executed all his orders. My transportation had not as yet reached me. I had with the entire corps, since leaving Chattanooga, only seventeen wagons, and I had marched out in the morning without rations, most of the command having been without food since the day before at noon. Thus a march of sixteen miles was made by the command, the men and animals whereof had had nothing to eat for a day and a half.

When I reached the hills of Resaca, General McPherson and General Logan overtook me. It was then late in the afternoon and General McPherson asked me what I thought about taking Resaca. I answered that I thought it could be done if we could move immediately; that nothing had appeared in my front yet that I could not quickly dispose of and after a lengthy conversation on the matter, in which there was some doubt expressed about our having time, General McPherson told me to move forward. I took Fuller's Brigade of the 4th division and moved rapidly forward to strike the railroad north of Resaca. The enemy appeared in considerable force but did not stop us and during this movement, as stated in my official report, General McPherson stopped my 2d brigade to place it on the left of the 2d division and we soon returned to Snake Creek Gan. This was a great disappointment as shown in the dispatches and letters of General Sherman to General McPherson. There has always been a controverdy in relation to this movement and its object and the understanding between McPherson and

In field,
About five miles from Resaca, May 9, 1864.

Major-General Hooker, Commanding &c.

General: Dispatch received. My advance is within one mile and a half of Remaca. So far we have only met cavalry; had a sharp little skirmish with a brigade which arrived this morning and intended to get the gap and hold it, but we were too quick for them. Cannot learn whether there is any considerable force of infantry at Resaca or not; expect to find out shortly. If I succeed in breaking the railroad I intend to withdraw my command back and take a strong defensive position on the east entrance of the gap and await orders from Major General Sherman.

Sincerely yours,
Jas. B. McPherson.
Major-General.

General Sherman was evidently different. Gemeral McPherson thought he was to make a demonstration on the railroad and fall back to Snake Creek Gap while General Sherman intended that he should make a lodgment on the railroad to capture Resaca and remain. General McPherson reported on May 9th to General Sherman as follows:

"General Dodge's command moved up and skirmished with the enemy at Resaca this afternoon. While that was going on one company of mounted infantry, Lieutenant-Colonel Phillips regiment, succeeded in reaching the railroad near Tilton Station, but was forc ed to leave without damaging the track. They tore down a small portion of the telegraph wire. The enemy have a strong position at Resaca naturally, and, as far as we could see, have it pretty well fortified. They displayed considerable force, and opened on us with artillery. After skirmishing till nearly dark, and finding that I could not succeed in cutting the railroad before dark, or getting to it, I decided to withdraw the command and take up a position for the night between Sugar Valley and the entrance to the gap for the following reasons: First, Between this point and Resaca there are a half dozen good roads leading north toward Dalton down which a column of the enemy could march, making our advanced position a very exposed one. Second. General Dodge's men are all out or provisions, and some regiments have had nothing today. His wagon train is between here and Villanow, and possibly some of them are coming through the gap now, but they could not have reached him near Resaca; besides, I did not wish to block up the road with a tbain. It is very narrow, and the country on either side is heavily wooded. I had no cavalry except Phillips' mounted men to feel out on the flanks. If I could have had a division of good cavalry I could have broken the railroad atsome point. I shall be compelled to rest my men tomorrow forenoon, at least, to enable them to draw provisions. We have lost some 6 men killed and 30-add wounded but have inflicted a greater amount of damage to the enemy, and captured about 25 prisoners.

General Kilpatrick is very anxious to make the attempt to cut the railroad. General Garrard is in La Fayette tonight; says his horses are very much fatigued and short of forage; desires to remain there until his forage train comes down from Chattanooga. When I move forward again I would like a division of Hooker's command to hold the entrance to the gap and the roads at Sugar Valley, thereby enabling me to move forward with my entire command, except train guards.

The news from Grant is glorious."

Genera. 1 Mc Pherson inderstand This orders is shown in his dispatch to General Sherman on May 9th at/2 P. M. as follows:

"It is impossible to communicate with General Hooker by signals, owing to the rough, impracticable nature of the country and the dense foliage. I propose to cut the railroad, if possible, and then fall back and take a strong position near the gorge on this side of the mountain and await your orders. I wrote to General Hooker to cottrol the road across the mountain from Balton, about six miles north of Snake Creek Gap."

Also in his dispatch to Gen. Hooker May 9" at 2-p.m. As follows: (Insert 3)
General Sherman in his memoirs says:

McPherson had on hand 23,000 of the best men of his army and could have forced battle at Resaca then held only by a small brigade or he could have placed his men astride the railroad above Resaca and even withstood the attack of all Johnston's army with the knowledge that Schofield was on his heels; Had he done so, I am certain Johnston would not have ventured to attack him in position but would have retreated eastward by Spring Place and we would have

captured all his army, artillery and wagons at the very beginning of the campaign. Such an opportunity does not occur twice in a single life, but at the critical moment, McPherson seems to have been a little timid, still he was perfectly justified by his orders and fell back and assumed the unassailable defensive position in Sugar Valley on the Resaca side of Snake Creek Gap.

General Kerman wrote a letter to General McPherson as soon as he heard of his position which General McPherson handed me to read. I do not see this letter any where in the records but General McPherson took it as a censure and felt it very deeply. He thought and felt that he had accomplished the object of the movement to open up Snake Creek Gap to Johnston's rear.

On May 10th, William's division of the Army of the Cumber-land joined us and two brigade of it came through the Gap. There was plenty of time then with this additional division and with Hooker's corps marching towards us for us to again move out and plant ourselves on the railroad at Resaca and perhaps capture the place. Gen. McPherson was greatly handicapped in this movement by not having any Cavalry. General Garrard's division of Cavalry was ordered to report to him and it was intended that it should reach him by the time he reached Snake Creek Gap but as the dispatches show, it did not come to him or he did not hear from it. It is evident after the first attempt to take Resaca, General Sherman did not propose to make any other until he got his whole army through the Gap as shown in his dispatch of May 11th to General McPhersons as follows:

"I received by courier in the night yours of 5 and 6:30 p. m. of yesterday. You will also during the night have observed that I had come to the same conclusion. You now have your 23,000 and Hooker is in close support, so that you can hold all Joe Johnston's army in check should he abandon Dalton. He can't afford to abandon Dalton for he has fixed it up so nice for us, and he observes we are close at hand waiting for him to quit. He cannot afford a detachment strong enough to fight you, as his army will not admit of it. Strengthen your position, fight anything that comes, and threaten the safety of the railroad all the time. But to tell the truth, I would rather he should stay in Dalton two more days, when he may find a larger party than he expects in an open field. At all events we can then choose our ground and he will be forced to move out of his trenches. I do not intend to put a column into Buzzard Roost Gap at present. See that you are in easy communication with me and all quarters. After today the supplies will be at Ringgold."

23,000

General Sherman states General McPherson's forces as too large. We had left two brigades at the East end of the Gap to protect our trains and the enemy at Resaca was much larger than General Sherman's statements shown in Johnson's Dispatch of May 9th at 1 P. M. to Major General Wheeler as follows:

Grigsby's brigade is in the trenches at Resaca.
General Johnson wants some cavaly in observation between this place and Resaca for fear of a surprise by an advance here. I do not think Resaca is in any danger; we have 4,000 men there. Let me congratulate you on your splendid success till the general can speak his thanks. Let Colonel Allen call at Headquarters as he passes."

It also appears from a dispatch of Mackall, Chief of Staff to General Cleburne that Vauqun had reached Resaca with his regiment. It was evident the enemy were on the lookout because a dispatch from General Cleburne on May 9th to General Cranbury directing him tofall in with his brigade immedaitely and move in the direction of the Dalton and Resaca road. General Johnson, on the same date, in a dispatch to General Canter, who was in command at Resaca says that General Johnston was sending another brigade. He impressed upon him the importance of the bridges and the absolute// necessity of their General Martin is near Calhoun making arrangements to come to you if pressed, and he said: "Remember, if you are attacked by a very large force, the General will come to your assistance and so you can hold out with a certainty of being relieved." Martin commanded a division of Cavalry and Calhoun was only a short distance away. This shows that the enemy was watching Resaca carefully. Why they left Snake Creek Gap open for us to pass through is beyond my comprehension because a Brigade would have held that Gap against almost any force we could bring against it. I thought when we first reached Resaca that we could take it but I saw that we would have met a much larger force than we expected and we would not have had time to capture it that night. Fuller's Brigade was across the railroad and could have destroyed it, but were moving against the enemy who were in front of on the 10th, we fortified a line about one mile in advance of the Gap and the Army of the Tennessee occupied it. During the

lith and 12th, the Army of the Cumberland and the Army of the Ohio passed through the Gep taking position to the north of us. When the 20th corps came through, I was at General Sherman's headquarters. General Hooker had pitched his tent along side the main road and as his corps passed him, they cheered and General Sherman had issued orders that there should be no drums beaten, no music or noise; his theory was to get the whole army through that Gap before Johnson discovered it and he was guite excited when he saw this corps cheering Hooker and he said to me "You go over and tell Hooker to stop it." I went over and spoke to General Hooker and gave him the compliments of General Sherman and Hooker laughed and said he would go into his tent, which he did, but they still cheered. The fact is those in the front of the corps had started the cheering and those in the rear really did not know what it was for but kept it up.

on the night of May 12th, General Johnston's army retreated and 14 corps
from Dalton followed by General Howard, and on May 13th, the whole of Johnston's army moved out to take position with its right resting on Resaca and its left to the north with a view of protecting the railroad, and we faced the whole of Johnston's army and were lined up parallel to the railroad, which he controlled. The Army of the Tennessee took position on the extreme right resting on the Costenaula river. My 4th division was put in line on the extreme right. The 2nd division was held in reserve. On the evening of May 13th, the Army of the Tennessee charged the intrenchments in front of Resaca and carried them which gave us a position in which our artillery co-manded the Resaca Bridge.

On May 14th I received an order from General McPherson to move my 2nd division to Lay's Ferry and force a crossing over the Oostenaula river and put in a pontoon bridge which was coming to me from Snake Creek Gap. General Sherman sent General Corse of his staff down to General Sweeny to explain to him what he wanted. As son as Gen. Sweeny's division arrived at the ferry, they fand it strongly occupied on the other side by the enemy. They undertook to put the pontoons into Snake Creek and float them down the river

but found it was too shallow, when he immediately formed the 81st Ohio and 66th Illinois in lines and they charged right down the. river bank, under a very heavy fire of the enemy getting the Creek and holding it. That enabled them to control the mouth of Snake Creek into which the bateaus, which were wooden frames with canvas sides and bottoms, were launched and about 200 men them and in they crossed the river the face of the fire of the enemy on the other side and drove off the skirmish line, but soon found the enemy in line of battle a short distance back, when they were reinforced by the 81st Ohio and 66th Illinois. Just as this operation was going on, General Sweeny received a report from General McPherson stating the enemy in a large body was coming down the Oostenaula on the opposite side of the river and for him to delay making his effort to cross until further orders. Gen. Sweeny pelieved this report to be true and thinking his command that was on the south side of the river would be in danger, he withdrew it, which was a mistake, as the order was not true. General Corse, who was present, said he heard of this report and that Col. Bane with 2 regiments of infantry and a battery of artillery was sent to Calhoun ferry to see what truth there was in the report. As soon as Gen. Sweeny discovered that it was a false report, on the morning of the 15th, he threw his force again gcross the river and put in the pontoon bridge and crossed his / ST brigade. He captured several prisoners belonging totthe 65th, 87th a and 8th Georgia. Captain Chamberlain of the 81st Ohio who had charge of the three boats that first crossed the river gives this description of the crossing: He says: the 66th Indiana of the 1st Brigade was dployed as skirmishers along the river bank, opposite and above the ferry road and Capt. Welker's Battery H, was placed in position so as to shell the position of the rebels along the road. When the boats were placed in the river, companies B and C. of the 81st Ohio and Co. I of the 66th Illinois were ordered to enter the boats which were now launched on Snake Creek. The boats would hold but eighteen men each, and the companies were necessarily divided in filling them. After these three companies had embarked it was determined that they would fill as many of the remaining boats

as possible and have them ready to follow closely the van of the little fleet. In these latter boats were placed companies A, E an F and H of the Slst Ohio, two companies of the 66th Illinois and one of the 12th Illinois. The order in which the boats lay when all was ready, gave the advance to Lt. Dixon, with aplatoon of Co. B. Slst Ohio; next was Captain Hayes with a platoon of Co. I 66th Illinois and third Capt. Chamberlin, with a platoon of Co. C. Slst Ohio. The command of the three boats and of the skirmish line was given to the latter officer. Before those brave men loomed a dark, deep forest, which might prove a magazine of ddath. At its edge flowed the dep, angry Osstenaula, soon perhaps, to be reddened by their blood. Yet from this uncertain fate not a man shrank though many a heart stood still, and many a thought of home and dear ones there came up as for a last retrospect.

All this while, with hurrying feet, a courier's steed was dashing from General McPherson to General Sweeny, carrying an order to delay the crossing until a rumor that the enemy was crossing above to attack General Sweeny in rear, was traced up. Ignorant of the coming order, the men in the boats faced danger and death unflichingly. The order was given for the three boats to go forward. Silently the oarsmen who had crossed the advance of the Army of the Cumberland at Caperton Ferry, and who took Sherman across the Tennessee at Chickamauga, but who had never before made a crossing inthe immediate face of the enemy, dipped their long oars into the muddy water of Snake Creek and moved toward the river. As still as death the white boats with their living cargoes of blue, moved on until near the mouth of the little creek, when "Halt" is yelled out from the rear. Two of the boats heard the command in time to stop, but the foremost is into the swift current of the river and cannot stop. Shall the gallant little crew be abandoned to its fate! Quick as thought Col. Adams decided those men should be saved, and he ordered the others to advance. Into the river they plunged but the third boat on entering the river caught and held on a snag. Up to this time, the movement had been unobserved by the

enemy, but now theenemy poured out their fire which came splashing into the water and hitting men in the boat. In a moment the boat is extricated and is across the river. Quick as thought the men are landed and deployed along the bank. The 4th and 5th boats arrive and bring the remainder of companies B and C, 81st Ohio, "Forward" was immediately give"; and springing up from the water's edge, almost like coming out of the ground, our gallant boys presented themse tves before the rebel skirmish line. A volley and a cheer, and a rush forward, and the little band had captured half its number of prisoners, including one captian and two lieutenants. The rebel force at the intrenchments at the ferry, finding their position flanked, took to flight without stopping to ascertain our number. By this time the reserve froce under Captain W. H. Hill, 81st Ohio, had landed and were placed in position to support the skirmish line. The rebel officers again and again tried to force their men forward, but our gallant boys no sommer perceived a line than they rushed toward it and sent it flying to the rear. The peril of the crossing and the complete success of the movement so elated the men that a feeling of disappointment was expressed when they learned that they were to recross. By sunset the whole force was safely withdrawn without a single shot from the enemy, who were so demoralized that they left a battle-flag at their intrenchments opposite the 66th Indians, which a soldier of that regiment secured by swimming the river."

At midnight on the 15th my forces on the picket line informed me that they could hear the trains of the enemy moving south and General Sweeny reported the same thing and we immediately reported it to Headuqarters, when orders were received to move early the next morning. The Army of the Tennessee marched by Lay's Ferry. From the reports I got from Lay's Ferry, I felt anxious and got up early in the morning and sent word to General Sweeney to move out with his forces and feel for the enemy. I got around there about ten o'clock in the morning and found most of Sweeny's forces still on the north side of the river with only one brigade to the front.

I pushed right on to this brigade, which Col. Burke commanded, and found him skirmishing with the enemy, that he developed a large

force in line of battle. I saw our danger and I immediately ordered him to throw out the 64th Illinois, his own regiment, which was armed with the Henry Magazine Rifle and told him to have them open up briskly upon the enemy. We soon discovered that Walker's division was in front of us. This action of the 64th Illinois, when it fired rapidly from its Henry Rifles, sounded like a line of battle and Walker thought that was what was before him. We were in a thick woods which deceived him and gave me time to throw behind him another brigade. The enemy got a battery around to my left which opened on our train in the rear and created a good deal of demoralization among the teamsters, and the enemy moved around on our right and forced back a portion of my right, but the men held steady until all the 2nd division came up and I got it into line and moved on the enemy and they fell back rapidly but not until after there had been a considerabl loss on their side as well as ours. I soon found there line was formed to protect the road -- A little in the rear of what was known as the Rome Road, which crosses the Calhoun road in advance of the right of the 2nd Brigade. Along this road a heavy train of wagons was passing and it was importatn that it should be well guarded. Walker's and Cleburn's a divisions, two of the best of Johnston's army, were detailed for this duty and were strongly posted. As soon as these trains passed, the divisions gave way.

Col. Burke commanded the brigade and was badly wounded in the foot from which he afterwards died.

General McPherson came up before I got through with the fighting and was a good deal disturbed at the unpreparedness of the division to meet this force, which he and I both knew would probably be thrown there to cover the trains of the enemy, but General Sweeney had not grasped the situation as he ought to have done and had his whole division out there the first thing in the morning. I explained the matter to General McPherson. It was very fortunate that I happened to be there on the ground but Col. Burke handled his force with good judgment, holding an entire division with some two or three regiments for nearly two hours.

On May 14th, General Sherman received a dispatch from Gen.

Halleck giving an account of the great battle at Spottsylvania

Court House, where Johnston's division was captured by Hancock.

On May 13th, 1864, for daring services in the battle of the Wilderness and Spottsylvania Court House, General Grant recommended several officers for promotion in the regular and Volunteer service and in his dispatch said: "In making these recommendations I do not wish the claims of General G. M. Dddge overlooked and recommend that his promotion be sent in at the same time." General Halleck telegraphed him that there were no vacancies among the Major Generals but a Brevet could be given General Dodge. General Grant was evidently not to be put off with this and therefore paid no attention to it.

General Veatch's division soon came up to the 15th Corps. I pushed on to Calhoun, where we camped that night. General Sprague's division of the 4th corps was the first to enter Resaca. During the battle of Resaca, the 35th New Jersey and 25th Wisconsin were sent to support Col. Woods and upon their return to me he sent with them the following letter:

"I take great pleasure in speaking in the highest terms of the conduct and gallantry of Col. Montgomery and his regiment, the 25th Wisconsin, during the time they were under my command at Resaca, on the 14th and 15th inst.

The arrival of Col. Montgomery with the 25th Wisconsin and five companies of the 35th New Jersey was opportune, as one of my regiments, the 30th Iowa, was lard pressed and their ammunition expended. I sent Col. Montgomery forward with his regiment to relieve the 30th Iowa. This was done in admirable style his regiment standing up bravely to their work and holding the crest of the hill until the enemy retired. They afterwards worked faithfully on the rifle-pits until they were completed.

the hill until the enemy retired. They afterwards worked faithfully on the rifle-pits until they were completed.

At the time the 5 companies f the 35th New Mersey reported, I was obliged to send them to General G. A. Smith on my right, who was also hard pressed. General Smith wished me to speak most approvingly of the conduct of the portion of this regiment sent to him."

On May 17th we moved, following the enemy, and my corps camped three miles in the rear of McGuires. On May 18th, we moved to Adairsville and the same night, I moved on to Woodlands, marching all night. On the 19th I moved to a position three-quarters of a mile West of Kingston. Here we rested and prepared for a flank movement on the enemy. General Sherman came to the conclusion that Johnston would fight at Cassville. We remained at Kingston for three days.

The rebel rear guard had left after daylight. The day

before engines with trains lay here and moved south before the rear
rebel
of the army; this morning before daylight, a Yankee engine pulled
the whistle which announced the arrival of the first engine under
federal direction. As the roar of the whistle resounded through
these mountains, it received an answering echo of 10,000 Union

soldiers who literally swarmed all over the ground. The boys
remarked that "General Johnston is on the train in advance of
General Sherman and keeps his train flaged to avoid being run into."
our
It was reported that the train was eight miles down-the two bridges
below being uninjured. The pursuit was so close that no attempt
was made to burn the first bridge. Our cavalry arrived at the
second in time to capture the squad which was attempting to fire the
bridge and with their greasy haversacks put the fire out.

The position at Cassville was a very strong on one and well intrenched and none of us could understand why Johnston abandoned it without fighting but he says in his memoirs that the reason was his two corps Commanders, Hood and Hardee claimed that their positions were untenable; that the artillery commanded the position they occupied and Priladed their flanks and when he found he could not have the support of his corps commanders, he immediately concluded to retire.

I received orders here to send the 3rd brigade, 2nd division commanded by Col. M. M. Bane to Rome to occupy that place which had been captured by General Davies' division of the Army of the Cumberland. This reduced my force 2000 dffectives.

While resting here, on May 22nd, the actual strength of the force was called for and the 16th Army Corps, 2nd division had 6216 effectives; 4th division, 5226; 1st Ala, 382, total, 11824. The 15th Army Corps had 13150, present, effectives and one division at Huntsville, Alaga, 4005 effectives.

While here, we stripped our army of every surplus article, company boxes, belongings of men that we had had to carry in the wagons and sent them to the rear.

General Sherman issued an order sending all wounded, sick and worthless men, and idlers, to the rear, and the rations for the troops would be one pound of Bread, flour or meal; two days allowance of bacon per week and sugar, coffee and salt. Four pounds of grain was allowed each animal and no more. All else must be gathered in the country. This was reducing us to less than one-half ration and stripping use for a long march.

On May 23rd, our army moved across the Etowah River at a bridge some 14 miles from our camp and camped eight miles south of the bridge. I received here the resignation of Col. M. M. Bane who in a long letter to me gave his reasons. He had lost an arm in the service and his health was poor. I hesitated to accept it but felt that it was due to him. He had done good service and was a splendid soldier. His regiment and brigade protested against his leaving.

On May 24th, I moved on the Vanwirt road to Peakes farm; then on the Cedarville road to Vanwirt. May 25th, I moved on the Vanwirt and Dallas road to three miles of Vanwirt. Cut a road through the country, passing the trains of the 15th Army Corps and camped on Pumpkin Vine Creek, one and one-half miles South-west of Moody Mills. On May 26th, we formed a line of battle and moved into Dallas taking position on the left of the 15th Army Corps. The enemy retired on the Marietta road. This placed us some three or four miles to the south-west of the Army of the Cumberland which Hooker's corps of this Army, in going to position near New Hope Church, had had a very severe battle with, the Vlosses being very large on both sides. It was evident that we were up against the whole of Johnston's army, who were intrenched in front of us.

On the night of the 26th we intrenched our position very heavily and on the morning of the 27th the enemy attacked the entire line of · the 15th and 16th Army Corps repeatedly. In some of their charges, they got up so close to our intrenchments and we captured two or three officers who got so near that they could not retreat and surrendered. These attacks were very destructive to the enemy but as we were behind our wokks, our loss was comparatively light. The force in the front was supposed to be the whole of Hardee's corps. General Sherman was anxious for us to chose on Hooker and gave us the order to move on the 28th, but on the night of the 27th, the enemy came out again at midnight, evidently believing that we were about to move but they were repulsed with comparatively no loss on our side. We had cautioned our men to remain in their intrenchments and not to try to follow the enemy in night attacks. General McPherson returned from General Sherman and gave the order for us to pull out that night. We built a new line of intrenchments somewhat in our rear and at a right angle, in which each corps was to put a brigade and hold it against any force that attacked us.

On May 29th, we made an attempt to pull out again but the enemy had been skirmishing with us all day and between 12:30, midnight and 3 A. M , they made five distinct night charges on my line. During the night we got out of ammunition and we did not dare to trust the men to go back for it in the dark so myself and staff, on our horses, carried the ammunition forward to them and replenished enough to hold against any further attacks. During a lull in the engagement, General Dogan with his staff rodd down behind his own line cautioning the men and they cheered him as they went by. was so dark that he could not tell where his line ended and he got down along my line, thinking he was on his own and my men tunned around and gave him hearty cheers. When he struck me, he was somewhat non-plussed, to find that he had been diding my line; he thought if the enemy charged again we ought to follow them or have a portion of our commande follow them. He thought they would be so demoralized in the retreat that we could capture many of them but I told him that it was dangerous work; that they might recharge

and get our men mixed up with theirs so that we could not deliver our fire and he came to the same conclusion. Soon after he returned, the enemy charged me again, but it appeared to me that their last charges were only strong skirmish lines to keep us from moving. I have no doubt but what they had learned of the orders for us to close in on the Army of the Cumberland. The prisoners whom we took told us that their officers told them the line they were to charge was 100 day men and would run on the first onset. The anger of some of the men wounded and captured cannot be described when they found instead of 100 day men, the veterans of the Army of the Tennessee. who had whipped them at Donalson, Shiloh, Corinth, Vicksburg, Chattanooga and Resaca were in their fronts. The prisoners said they understood what is meant by 100 day men; that it means men who will fight 100 days without stopping or giving an inch of ground. The charges at Dallas made against the 15th and 16th Corps were desperate and bloody our men never gave an inch. The official reports of the enemy stated that in these charges they lost 3000; our loss was about It was finally concluded that we would withdraw by daylight right in the face of the enemy.

On the morning of June 1st, at 7 A. M. the mogement for withdrawing commenced. By our withdrawing a brigade from each division and placing it in the new made intrenchments then pulling out from right to let, the main forces holding our skirmish line in position with instructions if the enemy came forward to hold and fight as long a s possible. My skirmish regiments, the 66th Ind. and 64th Ill. were both armed with Henry rifles, carrying 18 charges in their magazines, and as they opened up, the enemy, following, hesitated, thinking that we were still in the intrenchments. The skirmish lines fell back as they came forward to our intrenchments and there held them. Our main forces were pulled out, the skirmish lines came back rapidly until they got in the rear of the brigades posted in the new intrenchments and the whole movement was effected in splendid order. The enemy followed closely but made no attack. The 15 corps passed on to the rear of Gen. Hooker while I placed my 2nd division at right angles to Hooker's line and the 4th

division some distance in my rear, covering our trains and in reserve.

On May 30th, Lt. Edward Jonas of the 50th Illinois who had been captured at Shiloh, reported to his regiment and was detailed to me as an A.D.C. He was a very fine staff officer and remained with me through the War. On this day, President Lincoln telegraphed General Sherman stating that he had promoted Dodge, relieving him of his difficulty. The explanation of the distpach was that I was commanding a Corps, as a Brigadier General, while there were in the Army of the Cumberland, Major Generals commanding divisions who conisidered they were entitled to my command. When Gen. Hurlbut had applied for the command in the field, General Grant had stated to General Sherman that he desired me to have command of the Corps in the field and expected to have my promoted. He had first recommended me on July 22, 1863 after the Vicksburg campaign. He recommended me in person when he was in Washington on March 2nd and Mr. Lincoln promised to make it. On March 28, 1864, he asked it again by wireland again on March 13, 1864. after the battle of the Wilderness. General McPherson and General Sherman had seconded his requests and the Governor and Members of Congress Senators, General Oglesby and many others had made personal efforts in the matter. I said nothing myself. I made no application. I knew that if Gen. Grant could not obtain it, no one else could. General McPherson or Sherman would not allow me to be relieved from my command. I had heard a great many times during the campaign that I was to be relieved. The rumors of the staff were sometimes annoying to me, so that I finally wrote to General Sherman that to avoid criticims, I thought it would be well for him to give me a command suitable to my rank. General Sherman was annoyed at this and made a very sharp reply to me in which he sais: "Suppose you wait until someone that has a right to complain does so and go ahead and do your duty as you have been doing and not trouble yourself about what others says" He did not even sign it officially but after the war he used to make fun of me for it.

About this time, Major General Palmer, commanding the 4th Corps asked to be relieved because his divisions were sent to support other commands, claiming that this was an indirect way of telling him that he was not suitable to command his corps. General Thomas and General Sherman both disabused his mind as to this matter. It was simply a case where such a thing sometimes occurs because circumstances demand it. It showed, however, that Palmer was a good deal mores sensative than I was.

General Sherman was very anxious that a movement should be made on Mobile while he was making his movement towards Atlanta and he wired Genl. Halleck asking him to send Gen. A. J. Smith with 10,000 men of the 16th Army Corps, who had been with Banks on the Red River expedition in concert with the navy to attack Mobile, but no attention was paid to it.

In taking up my new position, I had my lines very greatly extended to cover a lot of ground on our extreme right as Sherman was dedeavoring to move the army to the left and strike the railroad at Acworth.

General Veatch and the 4th division, but he happened to have a force in front of them sufficient to check them and drive them back, but I immediately closed my forces in and moved all my trains farther to the rear and held this position until June 5th.

On June When the Army of the Tennessee moved to the left; my command camping the first light at Burnt Creek and on the night of the 6th reached Acworth on the railroad.

On June 3rd, General Grant wired to Gen. Halleck as follows:

"Cold Harbor, June 3, 1864: Please order the 16th Army Corps staff to report to Gen. Washburn for duty. The 16th Corps is now with out a commander; that portion of it in the field being commanded by General Dodge and the remainder by General Washburn. It maybe well to leave this Corps without a named commander until Sherman can be heard from, when he may recommend a union of that portion of the 16th and 17th in the field into one corps and the troops belonging to them in West Tennessee into another Corps."

It was very evident that Johnston had defended every tenable line until flanked out of it athen to fall back on the next line, which had been fortified in the meantime. As he retreats, every citizen falls back with him. All the stock is driven off and the large wheat and oats fields only left bare

for us to forage on. Thus far we have been successful in keeping open communications; how long, it will last is hard to tell but the fact that thereswas very few desertions and no demoralization of Johnston's army was very discouraging to us. When we reached the railroad, we were ordered to send the cars back to Altoona and bring forward ten days rations.

On July 8th, we were ordered to send back all our sick and wounded to Altoona and strip again for a flank movement. Gen. adding 12,000 troops to our army orps. Of June 10th the Blair had come up with the 17th Army Corps. army moved forward until it struck the enemy's line of insrenchments covering Lost Mountain, Kenesaw Mountain and Pine Mountain. Our base of supplies was moved forward to Big Shanty. There had been a report in the rebel army that General Wheelthr's command, which had been in our rear, had destroyed the tunnels in our rear. A few days after we arrived at Big Shanty, a locomotive came up to the front and commenced whistling for several minutes, which caused the rebel prisoners that we hapttnedn, to say that "General Sherman not only took bridges along with him to replace those burned but also tunnels." We heard here of the defeat of Sturgis by Forest, which was a very bad defeat. Sturgis had some 8000 men while Forest had only about 6,000, but it was a great satisfaction to the 16th Army Corps to learn that Col. Alexander, commanded the 1st Alabama Colored Infantry, had behaved very well in this campaign; in fact, had saved the trains by their severe fighting.

On June 15th, I advanced my line facing Kenesaw Mountain keeping in line with the Army of the Cumberland and charged a peach Orchard that had several log cabins in it which were occupied by the enemy as block houses. The 35th New Jersey took these block houses in a splendid charge, notwithstanding that the men were in them; they moved right up, went into their rear and captured the whole party, although their loss was very heavy. I had to go forward quite a distance to get tenable ground and found when I got it, that it was a commanding position, but far in advance of the main line and I was very anxious to hold it. I intrenched it but I was under a cross fire of the enemy. General McPherson

let it to me whether I should hold or come back into line but the 35th New Jersey and another regiment that was occupying it protested very strenuously from being brought back and I left them there.

On July 17th, I received my commission from the War Department. as Major General, acknowledged it and sent in my oath. I had sent to the rear, Colonel Spencer who had been sick, to pick up the scattered forces, convalescents and detachments that were left along the line of the Mobile & Ohio railroad and which it had been impossible for us to get forward to the command. They had been detailed by the officers occupying that line for all kinds of duties and in violations of orders. He wrote me on June 19th that Hoffman with 150 convalescents and 150 in different detachments had gone forward to their commands and that there would be at least another 100 that were on all kinds of detached service: spme clerking at the head quarters, others at the Quarter Master Department and all kinds of service imaginable. He notified them that they were all reported absent without leave and they must all join their regiments. Captain Hurd of the 12" Illinois is a Provost Marshall at Pulaski. I ordered him to his regiment and told him his detail was against order. Captain Warner of the 7th Iowa is in the same condition. I think there is a Lt. in the same condition stopping at a farm house near and has been there for a month. There is a dozen such instances among officers. The Post-master belongs to Mersey's Brigade and is keeping a store. Howe's Brigade of the 16th Corps started from Decatur and marched one day when it was ordered back on account of the degeat of Sturgis by Forrest. They were fearful that Gen. Forest might swing around on that The 7 h Illinois which had been left there, mounted, was started by rail. Col. Spencer reports five large regiments of infantry, 12 pieces of artillery and the 9th Ohio Cavalry as garrisoning Decatur and that Roddy lays seige to the place. troops at Decatur do not dare move out to drive him away. Nearly all the buildings of the town have beentorn down and hh believes that Decatur was stronger than Vicksburg.

He also wrote me that there was trouble about the contraband camps; that General Starkweather, in command, could not find any authority to issue rations; that he appealed to General Sherman to know whether he had authority and General Sherman ordered that no rations should be issued. The camps are in a nice condition and have large crops growing and are a decided success. There is 1500 acres of cotton growing which looks fine, also a good deal of corn and other produce, which will more than pay when gathered, all expenses; but if they cannot get rations now, they will be obliged to break up and all will be a total loss. He says the Sturgis affair was very bad. Alexander's regiment of darkies saved the whole command from destruction. Forrest did not have to exceed six thousand men; Sturgis had at least 8,000.

given to the darkies should be continued. General Sherman did not understand that they were the families of the colored men in the 2nd and 3rd Alabama regiments, many of whom were in our Pioneer Corps, driving our teams, were our cooks, etc for the army and that if we mnot families, the men would certainly leave and go to their families. He appreciated this and gave orders to have them fed. Colonel Spencer said the people of Pulaski all inquire about you and speak of you in the highe st terms. Your administration there has done a good deal of good and there is a much better feeling towards the Government than I expected to find. I don't believe there is a dozen men here that would not regret to see the rebels get possession of the country again. With the women I presume it is different, but the property holders have come to the conclusion that the Rebellion doesn't pay."

While we were laying in front of Kenesaw Mountain, the enemy had their signal station on the top of it, in plain view and my signal officer, Lt. Shirley, had deciphered their code so that we could read all their dispatches. This was not known by anyone in the army, except myself, General McPherson and General Sherman. It was through this telegraph signal that we know the officer who was killed on Pine Mountain was Major General Polk.

General Sherman was at the battery which fired the gun which killed Gen. Polk, SAW that There was great consternation at the time and I saw the ambulance come and take his body to Marietta and our signal officer soon informed us that it was General Polk.

On the morning of the 19th, we discovered that there had been a blanket put up in front of the signal station so we could not see it. We knew then that something had happened and that day General Grant telegraphed General Sherman that the New York Herald had a telegram in the paper stating that we had deciphered the enemy's signal code. This, of course, explained immediately why the blanket was put up. As soon as General Sherman got this dispatch, he sent it over to General Thomas with orders to arrest and hang the Correspondent who was Randolph D. McKeim. McKeim was a friend of mine and had been at my headquarters, but he had not found the secret out there. He went from me to McPherson and was at McPherson's headquarters when this order came. General McPherson was a good friend of his and Keim told McPherson that he had been told by one of the staff officers and that he had written it confidentially to Mr. Bennett, the editor of the Herald, but not to be published.

Both General Mcherson and myself went to see General Sherman.

We knew that unless we could pacify him, he would hang Mr. Keim.

Keim got into communication immediately with Mr. Bennett, who explained the matter by saying the letter had come to him confidentally but that it had been opened by the night editor, who thought this was a good thing to publish, not appreciating what damage it might do; that he had immediately dismissed the night editory from the paper and satisfied Gen. Sherman so that he allowed Keim to leave our lines but he would not allow him to remain in them. Gen. Sherman was very bitter against the correspondents and this was one of the many experiences he had had with them. Keim is still living in Washington, is a correspondent for a Pennsylvania paper, a man of influence and a personal friend of Statue.

Me edited for the Sherman Commission, which I was at the head

of, the book on the Statue of General Sherman and also wrote one dedication of the the statue of Rochambeau, both of them very valuable and interesting books.

The picket lines of the two armies had gotten into the habit of making an agreement not to fire unless one side or the other moved forward to an attack and their conversation was often very interesting and the following is the report of one of them:

"The other day in the 51d Illinois, of our brigade, they had quite a lively time, they were about thirty yards from the rebels.

As soon as they went out the rebels sung out:
""Hello Vank! Our boys sung out: "Hello Reb!" Rebel--"Hello Yank! Our boys sung out: "Hello Reb!" Rebel-"What regiment is that?" Answer--"52d Illinois." Rebel--"Bully
for the 52d." (T'was one of the regiments the 52d guarded from
Donalson to Chicago.) "Yank, you won't fire, will you?" 52d--"No,
if you don't." Rebel--"All right." 52d--"Where's old Polk?"
Rebel---"Gone to h--ll." 52d---"Gone to h--ll." 52d--"How dow

The state of exchange Light Generals for solid shot?"--no answer you like to exchange Lieut. Generals for solid shot?"--no answer. 52d--"Hello Johnny!" Rebel answeres--"Hello Yank." 52d--"Where's old Pemberton?" Reb.--"Played out." "Where's McClallan?" They keep up the conversation and exchange papers until the 49th Tennessee is relieved by another regiment, the firing commenced again.

On another occasion our boys sung out.

"Hellow Reb." No ans wer. "Hellow Johnny!" Reb.--"Hellow Yank."

"Is there a good camping ground at Atlanta?" "Yes, but you can't see it." "Isthere plenty of chickens over there?" Reb.--"Yes, but not for you." "johnny has you plenty of niggers at Atlanta.

Bang! went Johnny's gun, and the confab ended."

The enemy's works in our front were all of a formidable and scientific nature, strengthened by salient and transverse lines and angles. They have line after line of them. As soon as they would take position in one front , they would go into position in their rear, ten or fifteen miles in the back and erect another line which they would fall back to. The front of their lines were so full of entanglemenst and pits that it was almost impossible for us to pass through them.

We had been laying in front of Kenesaw Mountain for nearly a week and it had been continually raining. The roads were so muddy that it was impossible to move our trains but on June 28th, General Sherman made up his mind to try to break through these works and the orders were given for us to prepare for making a full reconnoissance. The assault was to be made on the front of General Thomas and Logan, while I was to endeavor to climb Kenesaw Mountain with a heavy skirmish line and General Blair, on the extreme left with Garrard's Cavalry was to press around the mountain and threaten Marietta.

On the evening of the 27th, General McPherson called his Corps commanders for consultation to carry out his part of the order. There was no favorable place of attack except on Logan's front and he ordered Logan to break through with a division. General Logan and Blair both expressed the opinion that it was impossible to break through their intrenchments and Logan criticized the order saying that when it came to the killing, his command always got in. This nettled General McPherson considerably, while McPherson agreed with us all that it was very doubtful whether we could break through. He said to General Logan, "I will put one of Dodge's division in with you to make the charge in your place." He said, "No; I do not want any one to make a charge in front of me except my own division and McPherson also said that no matter what we thought as to the success of the attack, in a doubtful case, it was our duty to make so much the greater effort, so the order was given and each of us prepared to be ready to move in the morning. My skirmish line was part way up the mountain but it was very steep and impossible, I knew, for men to climb at without exposing themselves, but I took the 64th Illinois and 66th Indiana, who were my skirmishing regiments and were armed with the Henry repeating rifle and gave them the order to climb while I supported them. They got to within 300 feet of the enemy's intrenchments; the boys climbing up driving the enemy, slowly going from rock to tree and from tree to rock, and it was nearly ten o'clock at night before they were permanently halted. It was a beautiful sight down were my headquarters were to see the movement as the two lines went up; -the enemy's falling back and ours moving up. The line of fire was distinct and it was very interesting. The 66th Illinois had two of their men killed within 100 feet of the enemy's intrenchments and in holding their position there, they could not get to the men but they were anxious to save the guns. They held the enemy off of them until they retreated. The fire was so hot that neither side could get to them, either day or night.

These two regiments were so far in advance of the rest of the Army that I had to put a regiment on each of their flanks leading down the mountain to a connection with the rest of my line to hold it in position.

The attack was made on Thomas' and Logan's front. Both failed. General Blair moved around the mountain but could not reach near enough to threaten M arietta. The losses on our part were very heavy, being over 3000, while the enemy claimed to have lost nothing. General Harker and Gen. Daniel McCook, and Colonel Barnhill of the 50th Illinois and several officers were severely wounded. After it was all over, General Sherman sent his remarkable dispatch to Gen. Halleck that he had charged the enmy's lines on three points in his front and had failed at all points. General Sherman said the enemy and our own army and officers had settled down to the conviction that the assault of the lines formed no part of my game and the momentathe enemy was found behind any kind of a parapet, everyone would deploy, throw up counterworks and take it easy, leaving it to the old man to turn the position." Had Gen. Harker and McCook been struck down so early in the assault, would have succeeded. Even as it was it made Johnston much more cautious and my ground much more free. If he weakened his lines, we would attack and he thought this bold attack on his fortified line, while it failed would still be of benefit to us, but there was no one in that army who believed that we could overcome their very heavy intrenchments and fortifications.

I received here the following letter from General Oglesby:

Decatur, June 25, 1864.

Your last letter has been received. I am glad you still live, and live to serve your country. You have done much to annoy, discourage and dishearten traitors, and have done well. Sherman seems to merit all you say of him. Moves off well, looks well to the right and left and covers his front and rear with what seems to be good sense all the time. We at home in the less exposed regions of danger feel very brave and mean to be true to you to the last. We must and will save this country. The people seem more devoted than ever. All the stuff you hear of traitors at home is bad enough, but not at all dangerous. The friends of Vallandinghma are few and zealous and desperate but not dangerous. I think they should be summarily dealt with by the Government. Everything at home looks well. We feel con-

Grant does not get along as rapidly as I had hoped he would. I think after his rapid move across the James River and real change of base to have reaped the full measure of benefit from it he should have taken Petersburg before Lee got over to confront him. He lost a benefit he could only gain by just what he did, still Grant will go through, in my opinion, and Richmond will fall in time in our hands. I visited Grant just before leaving Washington at Calperr Court House. He was confident, prudent and certain of success in the end. No special news here to interest you as far as I know.

We shall have splendid crops in this State; all that the heart can wish. It rains paentifully but prudently and every man works the full day through. I too am busy, as you have doubtless heard before now.

On th 26th of May my resignation was accepted and you were appointed in my place. You are altogether mistaken- You are undoubtedly a Major General of Volunteers, and I am glad of it. I think you deserve to be-have fairly won it and I hope you may live to enjoy what little pleasure you will find in it so long as the war will last. I knew Mr. Lincoln was determined to appoint you, Stanton and Grant both were strongly in favor of it so it had to be done, and was done.

Can you do nothing for Mersey and Bane? What has become of Fuller? I wish the services of all of them could be recognized promptly. I shall be glad to hear from you after you get into Atlanta or some others outhern seaport. How do you fellows live? What do you eat and where do you get it from, and how long can you get it?

Captain George E. Ford of Co. B., 4th Iowa, who had once been on my staff was detailed again and came to me as an A.D.C.

I received a letter from General Thomas requesting information in relation to the 2nd and 3rd Alabama regiments which I had organized, and I wrote him the following letter:

Kenesaw Mt., July 2, 1864.

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your communication of June 26th. Companies A, B and C of the 2d Alabama A.D. (now 110th C.D.) are on duty with the Pioneer Corps, 2d division, 16th A.C. Portions of three companies are on duty with the Q.M. Department and one company on duty with the Commissary Department of this command, they were all recruited with the understanding that the whole regiment was to be used for fatigue duty as Pioneers, teamsters, etc. I have no roster of the regiment with me. Headquarters of the regiment are at Athens, Ala. and the balance of the regimentare doing garrison duty. All the companies have been properly officered and mustered and have a full regimental organization. By reference to roster of 2d Alabama A.D. you will find names of officers.

I have recrjuited two companies in addition to those at Athens for the 4th Alabama and I think I can fill it. I have given authority to enlist men who have passed examination to recruit for it. As soon as I can send mustering officers I will have the two companies at Rome, Ga., mustered and ordered to join the regiment. I desire very much that you should send some one, or visit the

I desire very much that you should send some one, or visit the con traband camp, under Lieut. Harris near Athens, Alabama. He has over two thousand acres under cultivation; is taking care of two thousand old men, women and children and through some mistake the rations he has heretofore drawn have been stopped. He only asks that meat and beans or rice be sold him, as he is amply able from the earnings of his negroes to pay for all they eat and c lothe and shelter themselves. Until fall he needs your aid. I

am too far off to attend to it. If broken up now they will lose all their labor and be thrown upon our camps and become a burden to the Government. Their husbands and brothers are many of them with me doing duty as teamsters, pioneers, &c., &c."

General Sherman felt that he was not making rapid progress and he wrote a private letter to General Grant giving the reasons:

In the field, June 18, 1864.

Dear Géneral: I have no doubt you want me to write you occasionally letters not purely official, but which will admit of a little more latitude than such documents possess. I have daily sent to Halleck telegraphs which I asked him to report to you, and which he says he has done. You, therefore, know where we are and what we h If our movement has been slower than you calculated, have done. can explain the reason, though I know you believe me too earnest and impatient to be behind time. My first movement against Johnston was really fine, and now I believe I would have disposed of him at one blow if McPherson had crushed Resaca, as he might have done, then it was garrisoned only by a small brigade, but Mc. was a little more cautious lest Johnston, still at Dalton, might move against him alone; but the truth was I got all of McPherson's army, 23,000, eighteen miles to Johnston's rear before he knew they had left Hunt-With that single exception McPherson has done very well. Schofield also does as well as I could ask with his small force. Our cavalry is dwindling away. We cannot get full forage and have to graze, so that the cavalry is always unable to attempt anything. Garrard is over-cautious and I think Stoneman is lazy. The former has 4,500 and the latter about 2,500. Each has had fine chances of cutting in but were easily checked by the appearance of an enemy. My chief source of trouble is with the Army of the Cumberland, which is dreadfully slow. A fresh furrow in a plowed field will stop the whole column, and all begin to intrench. I have again and again tried to impress on Thomas that we must assail and not defend; we are the offensive, and yet it seems the whole Army of the Cumberland is so habituated to be on the defensive that, from its commander down to the lowest private, I cannot get it out of their heads. I came out without tents and ordered all to do likewise, yet Thomas has a headquarters camp on the style of Halleck at Coranth; every aide and orderly with a wall-tent, and a baggage train big enough for a division. He promised to send it all back, but the truth is everybody there is allowed to do as he pleases, and they will think and act as though the railroad and all its facilities were theirs. This slowness has cost me the loss of two splendid opportunities which never recur in war. At Dallas there was a delay of four hours to get ready to advance, when we first met Johnston's head of column, and that four hours enabled him to throw up works to cover the head of his column, and he extended the works about as fast as we deployed. Also here I broke one of his lines, and had we followed it up as I ordered at daylight, there was nothing between us and the railroad back of Marietta. I ordered Thomas to move at daylight, and when I got to the point at 9:30, I found Stanley and Wood quarreling which should not lead. I'm afraid I swore, and said what I should not, but I got them started, but instead of reaching the Atlanta road back of Marietta, which is Johnston's center, we only got to a creek to the south of it by night, and now a heavy rain stops us and gives time to fortify a new line. Still I have all the high and commanding ground, but the one peak near Marietta, which I can turn. We have had an immense quantity of rain, from June 2 to 14, and now it is raining as though it had no intention ever to stop. The enemy's cavalry sweeps all around us, and is now to the rear somewhere. The wires are broken very often, but I have strong guards along the road which make prompt repairs. Thus far our supplies of food have been good, and forage moderate, and we have found growing wheat, rye, oats, &c. You may go on with the full assurance that I will tontinue to press Johnston as fast as I can

overcome the natural obstacles and inspire motion into a large, ponderous, and slow (by habit) army. Of course, it cannot keep up with my thoughts and wishes, but no impulse can be given it that I will not guide.

As ever, your friend,

W. T. Sherman. after the war This letter was published in the War Records and  $_{\Lambda}$  greatly criticised by the Army of the Cumberland and caused a good deal of coolness between that Army and General Sherman. They thought his reflections upon them were unjust. This letter should not have been published. It was not an official communication, although it appears to have gotten into the files. There had been considerable criticism by the Army of the Ohio and the corps Commanders of the Army of the Tennessee that they were always kept on the flanks while the great strong army of the Cumberland, which was equal in strength to the other two, always had the center, and had much less work to do. A force on the flank always has twice the work in picketing and feeling for the enemy than a center line has, especially where we are behind intrenchments.

One day while we were lying in front of Kenesaw, we were all at General Blairs' headquarters. Generals McPherson, Logan and myself were there discussing this matter when General Sherman came. General Blair told him what we were talking about. The officers of the Army of the Tennessee were all intimately acquainted with Sherman as he belonged to it. Sherman listened and when Gen. Blair got through talking, he turned to McPherson and said, "You know, Mc., if the Army of the Tennessee gets knocked to pieces, or is defeated while on the flanks, I have old Tom left; they can't move him." Gen. Blair took exception to this. He did not think those two armies ought to be pounded to pieces for the purpose of saving Thomas but Sherman did not have any sympathy for us and rather laughed at Blair's idea. We were held here in this position on account of the rains. We had had a steady rain for nearly nineteen days but on July 3rd, the order came for another flank movement and on the morning of the 3rd, the 64th Illinois, at day-light, notified me that they were in the enemy's intrenchments on the top of Kenesaw

Mountain, showing that the enemy had again fallen back. Ammy of the Tennessee was moved to the right. My order was to . follow down the Sandtown road. I reached the Nickajack Creek on the evening of the 3rd. I discovered the enemy in considerable force in front of me. General Sherman expected that the enemy had fallen back behind the Chattahoochee. On the morning of the 4th, I moved forward to Ruff's Mills. There I found the enemy behind heavy intrenchments. Our orders were when we went forward if we struck the enemy to attack them. There was nothing said about intrenchments and I hesitated about attacking such heavy intrenchments; however, I made up my mind to attack and put the 4th didivion under General Veatch in line for the attack, supported by the 2nd division and General Veatch selected Colonel Noyes Brigade. Colonel Noyes formed his brigade in two lines and moved forward across an open field and immediately took the enemey's first line of works with a good many prisoners. Col. Noyes was badly wounded in the leg. I stood and watched this charge, which received only one fire from the enemy, but it was a destructive one. As they brought Colonel Noyes away from the field in an ambulance, I pulled up the curtain, saw it was Noyes and asked him if he was badly hurt. He said he thought he was and that he thought he would lose a leg. He wondered what his wife would say. When. Colonel Noyes veteranized three months before, he had married a beautiful lady in Cincinnati. He did not seem to pay any attention to his wound but just wondered what she would think of it. After the force was reformed and strenghtened at the line of intrenchments captured, about dark they moved forward again, working their way through the entanglements and carried the main line of the enemy. This was the only line of entrenchments carried during the campaign and the boys all said that the reason of it was that it was the 4th of July and they were all in high spirits. Stevenson's division of Hood's Corps was in my front and Hood in his memoirs gives as a reason for our carrying the intrenchments that he was just pulling out under orders to go to the Chattahoochee and

the fact is they did abandon that immense line of works only some eight or ten miles to the south of the Kenssaw line and the main force crossed the Chattahooche leaving Hardee's corps north of the Chattahoochee, its right resting on the railroad ad the left at the mouth of Nickajack Creek on the Chattahoochee.

General Mc herson in reporting the charge on the second 4th to General Sherman said: "General Dodge moved across and ran against Stevenson's division and he developed his lines capturing a few prisoners from each division of Hood's Corps. As soon as the troops were over in position, the charge was gallantly executed; the works were taken and some 50 prisoners captured; our loss was not to exceed 200. Col. Noyes 39th Ohio was severely wounded. This gives Dodge the position about one quarter of a mile east of Nickajack Creek."

On July 5th, I moved at 1 P. M. on the Sandtown road to the Widow Mitchell's farm, and bivouacked, holding roads leading therefrom to Turners, Howells and Sand Town ferries.

On the morning of the 6th I received a note from General McPherson stating that General Sherman wanted us to demonstrate along the river as though we were attempting to cross and I sent forward regiments with batteries to Howells Ferry where they remained but held my main force at the forks of the roads leading to the three ferries. At this place we received from Chicago, a paper which had an article in it written by a correspondent in the army which criticized very severely Sherman's movement and in it told of the defeat of the 16th corps and of its retreating disorderly, etc. The lines were headed "The account of Dodge's Retreat." This reached Sherman and the following is an extract from General Sherman's circular on Army Correspondents:

"What the commanding General does discourage is the maintenence of that class of men who will not take a musket and fight but follow the army to pick up news for sale, specualting on a species of information, which is dangerous to our army and our cuase, and who are used more to bolster up idle and worthless officers than to notice the hard working and meritorious, whose modesty is genearlly equal to their courage." "It is sufficient for you to know that the 16th Corps has shared in the entire campaign under me and that it has at all times acquitted itself with honor to itself and its commander. Page Insert (1)

I wrote this letter to my brother.

Eight Miles from Atlanta,

July 7, 1864.

Dear Nate:

I got a paper from you with an extract from one of my letters; becareful hereafter in giving the papers any extracts from my letters not to have it mentioned as coming from me. That will not do. I have no objection to having any news in the letter published, but give it as simply news, not giving the source from which it came.

We got Johnson out of his position in front of Kenesaw. I assaulted on the 27th of June going right up the mountain while Logan, Hooker, Thomas and other assualted in their right. Johnson then took up a position eight miles south of Marietta in a very strong line of works that have been built sometime. We got worked up to them on the 3rd; on the 4th, I charged them again with parts of two divisions carrying their first line in gallant style. Col. Noyes, 39th Ohio and Angle of 35th New Jersey fell; this turned Johnson left and he fell back to the Chattahoochie, which is virtually the works that defend Atlanta. They are very strong. The Vicksburg works are no comparison to these works. Johnson has built.

Both of our flanks now rest on Chattahoochie River; the left at Vinings Ferry; the right at mouth of Nickajack Creek, and Atlanta is in plain view; we can see teams and troops in its streets and see the fortifications surrounding it. My loss was considerable on the 4th. I took in the charge about 150 prisoners and we fought right over their works.

Nany of the boys got the fire so close as to have their clothes burnt; and many fell in the entrenchments.

We have got long work yet. We may get a little rest here but cannot tell; did the world ever see such fighting and such continuous pounding? We have got telegraph and cars right up to us and our supplies are all right. You will hear of daring work before long. Truly, G.M.

There was not a word of truth in this statement because at that time we had been in no battle. I suppose the correspondent was in the rear and heard of our being withdrawn from the front and Insert (D) manufacturered the rest. The operations of the cavalry during our movement had been very unsatisfactory to General Sherman and he showed his temper in the matter in a dispatch to General William Sooy Smith, Chief of Cavalry on June 13th, in relation to their protecting his rear. It is as follows:

"Your dispatch is satisfactory. How about Harrison's regiment? I think the expedition sent from Memphis June 1 has drawn Forrest from his plan of re-enforcing Johnston or striking our roads. think our roads are best covered from Decatur, with cavalry in reserve at Pulaski, guarding well Lamb's Ferry and Florence. This should be the duty of Gillem's division. You may send notice to Florence that if Forrest invades Tennessee from that direction, the town will be burned, and if it occurs you will remove the inhabitants north of the Ohio River, and burn the town and Tuscumbia Gun-boats will patrol the Tennesse e aboveand below the shoals, and whenever you want a davalry force to cross at Eastport or Waterloo, you can order up a ferry-boat from Paducah, convoyed by a gun-boat. Admiral Porter will give it with promptness and pleasure, if he knows it to be my wish. If Gillem has 6000 menn mounted, he should be south of th Tennessee River, in the direction of Columbus, Miss., with Decatur to fall back on. He can better protect Tennessee from there than from Nashville. At all events he should be between Columbia and Florence in motion. Cavalry should not occupy the same camp two successive days, and should habituate their horses to grass and green food. These are enough men now in Kentucky to dispose of John Morgan.

W. T. Sherman,
Maj.-Gen. Commanding.

On the evening of July 8th, General Sherman called at my head-quarters. Hd took out a map showing me the position of our our left chattahooche troops, reaching from Roswell, on the river to Sandtown on the right, some thirty-one- miles. He said he wished a bridge built at Roswell; telling me that it was a rock-bottom and shoales. He asked me how long I thought it would take to build it, as it would probably be six or seven hundred feet long. I told him if we had to cut the timber it would take us a week. He seemed rather pleased at what I said.

That evening I received an order from General McPherson to move from Sandtown to Roswell and that I would receive my instructions from General Sherman. I moved on the morning of July 9th. I saw General Sherman during the day and went fully into what he intended to do. He said that he intended to cross the Army of the Tennessee on the next movement at Roswell and wanted a double-tracked trestle bridge completed as soon as possible. I camped one mile East of Marietta. I went to the hospital in Marietta to see Col. Noyes,39th Ohio whose leg had been amputated, and found him doing well.

I had received a protest from the Commanders of the 2nd Brigade 2nd Division, against the commanding officer, General Sweeney, and I wrote General Sweeny a letter calling his attention to the way he on the road to Sandtown posted the Brigade and the exposure it was given. General Sweeny made answer to it but not satisfactorily to me.

I arrived at Roswell at noon on July 10th, Sunday, and immediate ly examined the shoales to see if I could ford them. I ascertained that we could and planted my artillery on this side and ordered Gen.

Fuller to cross one of his brigades. He formed in regimental front.

It is an interesting sight at any time to see a column of troops fording a stream, but this was doubly interesting on account of the great hilarity manifested by the men. It was administ impossible to wade across without falling down once or more, and every time a man fell, a fresh strain of laughter was sent forth by his comrades, any of whom were likely to meet with the same mishap at any moment. As soon as the Division was across, they were moved to the front and a strong tete-du-pont was built. I found Roswell to be a small town with a very few fine houses and a great many smaller onces, occuried by the families who worked in the fact.

tories, three of which had been burned by General Garrard's Caval ry, thus leaving 600 women without employment. Gen. Garrard's mounted one of his regiments and sent these women to Marietta and Big Shanty. When I came through Marietta, I found a good many of these women there and arranged to have them employed as nurses forthe 2nd and 4th divisions, making a donation myself of \$100 for each division for the purpose of paying them. The balance of the women were sent north.

On looking over the ruins of the factories I found there was a great deal of material which I could use for the bridge, such as plank for flooring and the timber for trestles, which I knew would shorten the time very much for building it. On Sunday afternoon, I had the Pioneer Corps throw a foot bridge across the stream so the working forces could cross from one side to the other and on July 10, 1864, I wrote General Sherman the following letter;

"My troops are arriving and crossing. I have been here two hours, and in company with General Newton have thoroughly examined the country. I will occupy and fortify tonight, a tete-du-pont 1/2 mile from the river and extending up and down one mile covering the entire ford bridge and roads leading to them. The ford is 1/2 mile or more in extent, very rough and impassible except for troops. To bridge the stream, I will have to build over650 feet in length. I shall use the old piers trestle between. We have a strong picket out three miles, covering the fork of the road leading to Me Affridge, eight miles up this river also covering forks of roads that lead to Atlanta. But it is too far out to take the command undel the river is easily passed by artillery and trains."

At 8 P. M., I wired him that my forces were all over the river, hard at work fortifying; had batteries all over also; have built a foott bridge. The road bridge is a pretty big job but will work hard on it. There is no force in our front that we can hear of.

On July 19, General Sherman answered me as follows:

"I have been out all day and am just back. Have received General Garrard's and your dispatches. I design that McPherson's whole army shall come to that flank, and you are to prepare the way. General Newton will stay with you till you are safe, when he will rejoin his corps now in support of Schofield, eight miles below you. Garrard will picket the roads and I want you to fortify a tete-du-pont and bridge. McPherson will operate to the right, and then when all is ready will come rapidly to your flank, therefore make all preparations to that end. Schofield has Secured a copposite the mouth of Soaps Creek. Keep me well advised by courier to Marietta and Telegraph."

On Monday the 11th, I put all the Pioneer Corps to work
putt ng up the bridge and a large force of the command in tearing
out and hauling to the river such material as was left in the
burned factories. An officer of my staff, a Lawyer, who came
to me during the day, said that the proprietors of the factories
had a French Flag flying over their houses and protested agianst
my using any part of the factories for building the bridge.
There was one building of the factories that had been left, which
I was tearing down and he thought I ought to be careful what I
did. I immediately communicated with General Sherman, giving him
this information and General Sherman answered me the same day as
follows:

July 11, 1864.

I know you have a big job but that is nothing new for you. Tell General Newton that his Corps is now up hear Schofields crossing and that all is quiet thereabouts, he might send down and move his camps to the proximity of his corps, but I think Roswell and Shallow Ford is important that I prefer him to be near you till you are well fortified. If he needs rations, tell him to get his wagons up, and I think you will be able to spare them day after tomorrow. I know the bridge at Roswell is important so that you may destroy all Georgia to make it good and strong."

fut says" you may destroy all Strong to make it good and strong tion to the French Flag, I read between the lines and kept on building my bridge. After the Civil War, this question came up, these parties making claims against the Government for the burning of their factories, etc. and the Government communicated with Gener al Sherman and also with me. Sherman ignored it, virtually saying he knew nothing about it and of course there was no order showing that he did. I admitted it but claimed that the factories had all been destroyed on account of their furnishing supplies to the Rebel army. Whether the Government ever paid anything or not, I do not know.

On the evening of July 11th, I wrote General Sherman and notified him that eight miles up the river there was a good bridge that was not yet destroyed and he immediately wired General Garrard to save it. The following is my letter to Sherman and his reply:

Hd.Qrs. L. W. 16th Army Corps.
Roswell, July 11, 1864.

Maj. Gen. W. T. Sherman, Commanding.

All quiet this morning. I had no fear about being able to build the bridge, but thought you might expect it finished sooner

than possible, as it was twice as long as I expected to find it, and twice as long as the river is wide down at Sandtown. I have over and twice as long as the river is wide down at Sandtown. I have over 1000 men at work on it day and night, and it is already well under way. I have planking for floor on the ground, and not one minute shall be lost in pushing it forward. Every man that can work on it shall be kept at it. Reports here show no force of the enemy's infantry this side of Peach Tree. Wheeler's cavalry advance is at Buck Head, with all of his force south of there. Last night Joe Johnston's headquarters were three miles this side of Atlanta on the railroad. Atlanta papers of the 10th instant say that at a council o of war held that day it was decided to fight for Atlanta. All trains of the enemy are reported by citizens and deserters to have gone foward Augusts, and a general refugeeing is going on among the gone toward Augusta, and a general refugeeing is going on among the wealthy citizens.

G. M. Dodge,

Hd. Qrs. Mil. Div. of the Mississippi, In the field, near Chattahoochee River July 11, 1864.

General Dodge, Roswell.

Your dispatch is received. Send me any Atlanta papers you get. have no doubt you will have the bridge done in time. As soon as you can spare General Newton he should be relieved to join his corps wwere his camp equipge is. I rode along the river-bank today, and the force of the enemy seemed to be merely sharpshooters in small numbers in their forts. All well with us.
W. T. Sherman,

Maj. Gen. Commanding.

The work had advanced so rapidly that on the 12th I wrote General Sherman as follows:

Roswell, July 12, 1864.

I send herewith a rough map of the country south of here, taking in nearly all the roads. I got it up from surveys and from information received from different citizens, and I think it is as correct as such maps can be made. The roads, citizens living upon them, &c are pratty reliable, you will see it different from any of our maps. I pushed my mounted infantry down five miles today to the crossing of Nancy's Creek, where we found the enemy's cavalry in force and they followed us back. One half mile above the bridge at this place, is a ferry and wil be a good place to put in a pontoon bridge should you desire. The river is about 300 feet wide.

I will have the bridge at this place finished tomorrow, All the bents are up tonight, strings on and planked one third the distance across. When done it will take safely over any number off troops and their trains. All quiet here. The river slowly rising.

I was so anxious to get this bridge up that I spend most of my time on it. I could stand on the bank and see the Pioneer Corps work; every man in his place and the bents went up one right after the other so that instead of being a week in building the bridge, it only took me three days.

As soon as General Sherman, received my letter, he wired me as follows:

July 12, 1864.

"The 15th Corps will start this P. M. for Roswell via Marietta. General NcPherson will follow in person tomorrow. The 17th Corps will wait a few days to await the return of

Stoneman. All quiet everywhere."

On the 14th, General Sherman issued an order for the whole army to cross the Chattahoochee on the movement to Atlanta.

On the 13th I wired General Sherman that the bridge and telegraph was completed at 8 P. M. and that the advance of the 15th Corps had arrived at Roswell.

On July 14th, the 15th Army Corps crossed and moved to position on the Atlanta road, one mile in my advance. While they were crossing a terrific thunder storm arose, the lightning struck in several places, killing five men and wounding ninteen. Col. Poe, General Sherman's Chief Engineer, asked me for the particulars in relation to this storm and I answered him as follows:

"My corps, the 16th, reached Roswell Sunday noon July 10, 1864, and we immediately crossed the river and worked until Wednesday night putting in a double track trestle bridge. The weather was excessively hot, the hottest I think we experienced during the campaign. On the south side of the river, my corps were formed, very compact, in a tete-du-pont, covering the bridge and roads. I had all my artillery in position and most of the infantry had their arms stacked as there were heavy details at work on the bridge. It was finished about 5 P. M. Wednesday, and the 15th Corps, which arrived there that day commenced crossing the next day. About 6 P. M., Thursday the 14th, a gale of wind arose blowing terrifically for 15 minutes when the thundre shower came on, the rain pouring down in torrents and the thunder and lightning close together (hardly any distinction from one peal to another) it was so strong that at times the 15th corps has to halt. This corps was crossing the bridge during the storm and passed directly through my lines and went to the left, there not being room in the rear of my entrenchments for it to bivouac; and it was halted right on the road and on the bridge; thus being in the midst of my corps at the heaviest part of the shower. The lightning first struck in the hill and south side of the river in a battery in position, then in a regiment of infantry, a short distance to the right, then on the north side of the bridge in the Valley and right at the head of the bridge where my Pioneer Corps was camped, killing one man and several mules; during this time it struck one or two of er points, Horses and men in the 15th corps on doing no damage, however. the bridge were knocked down but not materially injured and a great many in oth the 15th and 16th corps felt the shock. It was the most destructive in the battery. In my coprs 33 or 34 men were killed or wounded and quite a number, believe 18 (but I may be killed or wounded and quite a number, believe 18 (but I may be mitstaken) were killed outright. The wounded were burned paralyzed and shocked. Some severely, some slightly, but all had to be put in hospital, and on the bodies of the killed you could trace the tracks of the lightnings, so I was told, but I did not examine them. They were not much, if any, mutilated, and I remember it was spoken of that one or two of the killed had not even a trace on them. Several stacks of muskets were struck, bent up, bu ts etc. It was one of the most terrific storms I ever experthem. ienced, and the lightning appeared to strike close around us at every flash for nearly half an hour. It struck close to my tents, so close that we all felt the shocks sensibly. They were pitched on the bluffs north of the river, one half mile from the line where

The soldiers, who generally are very suprstitous about these matters, predicted all kinds of disasters on account of this and the fact that Maurey's 2nd U. S. Battery, the first time it got into action on the 22nd of July at Atlanta, while it was coming from Gen. Blair's front to me down the road on which Gen. McPherson was killed, was captured by the same rebel skirmish line that killed General McPherson, this fact carried out the superstition of the soldiers. They always quoted this as being proof of their superstition and prophesy.

When I completed the completion of the bridge so soon, General Sherman was greatly astonished and sent a very complimentary dispatch to the Corps for their work and I also issued the following to the Pioneer Corps:

Roswell, July 15, 1864.

I cannot refrain from expressing my thanks for the prompt, efficient and quick manner in which you have under many difficulties completed the bridge over the Chattahoochee River at this point.

I saw personally with what alacrity and interest you day and night performed your duty; it is very seldom so large a work is accomplished in so short a time. All priase you, and say "well done".

On July 11th, I received the following letter from my Medical Director, Dr. Gay:

"I have to report that while in the discharge of my duties during the march of our troops July 10th, I was grossly insulted by Brig. General T. W. Sweeny without cause or provocation. That he used language disgraceful and unbecoming an officer. That he ordered one of his orderlies to use a horsewhip on me and that said orderly did come near me and raised a club to strike me. He also challenged me to fight and was looking for pistols when his staff interfered and carried him off. On his being taken away, he said he should shoot me the first time he caught me alone, or words to that effect. While I have no personal fear of a man who will make so mean and cowardly an attack, I believe that the good and honor of the service required that such men be dismissed, that such scenes may be stopped.

As a member of your st aff I claim the protection that my

rank and position entitle me to."

On the same date, I wrote the following letter to General McPherson:

Roswell, July 11, 1864.

I respectfully request that Brig. General Thos W. Sweeney be relieved from command of the 2d division 16th A.C.

I have for a long time delayed in making this request, although I was aware it was my duty to do so. The benefit s of the ser though I was aware it was my duty to do so. The benefit s of the service and especially the welfare of the division require it. I enclose a communication from Surg. N. Gay, Medical Director of this command, and I have no doubt that General Sweeney, in the presence of officers and enlisted men, conducted himself in a manner unbecoming an officer, and without any just cause on Surg. Gay's part.

I also respectfully request that Brig. General J. M. Corse be assigned to command of the division. I understand that Major Consent Shormer is willing to relieve him from duty or him start.

General Sherman is willing to relieve him from duty on his Staff, in order to allow him to be assigned to this command, if requested. I, however, do not desire that my request for his assignment should interfere with the assignment of any other officer, if the General Commanding the Department desires to make a different one."

Upon this letter General McPherson made the following endorsement:

"ENDORSEMENT: Head Quarters Dept. and Army of the Tennessee,

near Roswell Bridge, Ga., July 14th, 1864: Respectfully returned to Major General Dodge, who will, if he deems it for the best interest of the service, arrest General Sweeny and prefer charges against him in order that he may be tried by

General Court Martial. It is not advisable to relieve a commanding officer in face of

the enemy, without sufficient cause to ground his trial by General Court Martial." without

What I wanted was the relief of General Sweeny, preferring charges and bringing on a Court-mastial, which I knew could not be done there. I, therefore, called General Sweeney to my head-quarters and had a long talk with him. The fact of the matter was in all these matters of delinquency, it came from his drinking habits. He saw that this was a serious charge and he tried to excuse it. I made up my mind it was better for me to try to get along with him until the campaign was over, appreciating, myself, the reflection it was on an officer to have him relieved in a campaign. fore, took no farther action, General Sweeny promising to attend closely to his duties, but I told him at the time if any more difficulty arose, I would certainly relieve him. I made up my mind that I would issue the order of relief myself and take the responsibility.

On the 15th of July, Col. Spencer was relieved as my Chief of Staff and took command of his regiment at Rome, Georgia.

During the time we were at Roswell, we received notice of the movement of General Grant across the James River and soon after that airs-

General Sherman received a letter from General Halleck, in which General Halleck says as follows:

"I fear Grant has made a fatal mistake in putting himself south of James River. He cannot now reach Richmond without taking Petersburg, which is strongly fortified, crossing the Appomattox and recrossing the James. Moreover, by placing his army south of Richmond, he opens the capital and the whole North to rebel raids. Lee can at any time detach 30,000 or 40,000 men without our knowing it till we are actually threatened. I hope we may yet have gull success, but I find that many of Grant's general officers think the campaign already a failure. Perseverance, however, may compensate for all errors and overcome all obstacles. So mote it be."

This dispatch indicates the feeling at Washington in relation to General Grant; however, there was no such anxisety or feeling in the Western Army. We all had no doubt but what he would succeed and considered his change of base to the south side of the James as a Master movement.

On July 16th, the order was given for the movement of the Army to the south. The Army of the Tennessee was to move towards Stone Mountain, except my Corps; I was to move to Nancy's Creek and keep in connection with General Schofield's command and was the left of General Sherman's Army.

On Jly 7th, I marched and bivouacked on Nancy's Creek and connected with General Schofield's forces by a picket line. On the morning of the 18th, one of my spies came to me from Atlanta. I gave his report to General EcPherson as follows:

Peach Tree Creek, July 18, 1864.

"Scout in from Atlanta. He left there this morning, says the enemy were moving troops all night. Last night there all the trains were started off on the Augusta Road. That Bates' division moved upon Peach Tree Road and is intrenched on south side of that Creek, near Howell's Bridge, that the bridge is ready to be burned. He also reports one regiment of dismounted davalry at Buck Head prepared to contest our advance. This morning Bates' division was the extreme right of Johnson's Infantry, and Helly's division on north side of Little Peach Tree between me and Buck Head. This agrees with report of rebel Lieutenant captured by me this morning.

This scout says that it is the general talk that if Atlanta falls, Polk's Corps will go west toward West Pint, whils t the remainder of Johnson's Army will go towards Augusta, or Macon. On yesterday Hood had the left, Polk the centre, and Hardee the right, the Militia in Atlanta. Johnson has received no reinforcements up to today. The enemy are at work on their forts and intrenchments around Atlanta.

Dispatches from Richmond report their forces shelling Washington. Atlanta papers up to the 17th inst. have nothing of interest in them. An editorial speculation on Sherman's probable movements; thinks he may possibly move on Stone Mountain to force the evaquation of Atlanta."

On the 18th I moved directly on the road to Decatur and crossed Little Peach Tree Creek. There was nothing in my front except now

and then a picket of cavalry. On the morning of the 19th, one of my spies came out of Atlanta bringing the Atlanta morning paper , which gave the notice of the change of the command of the Confederate Army from Johnson to Hood. I knew this was very important and as General Sherman had notified us that he would be with General Schofield during the day of the 19th, I immediately rode over to see him. I found that General Thomas had sent General Sherman a runor to the same effect. When I handed the paper to General Sherman, he asked General Schofield, who was a classmate of General Hood at West Point, about General Hood, and General Schofield told him that it meant a fight; that in his opinion Hood would attack him within twenty-four hours. General Sherman sat down there on a stump and issued his orders concentrating his army. This spy was a soldier who had been in the south most of the time since we left Pulaski. I had not heard from him for nearly six months. He told me that they got suspicious of him and to protect himself, he enlisted in one of the rebel regiments. I have forgotten the one he told me, and as soon as he got this paper and saw that it was very important, he worked his way through the lines and got to us. He did not want to remain with our forces as he thought there might be a possibility of his capture and he would certainly be hanged. I therefore sent him north to Nashville with a letter to the Commanding officer there and asked him to put him on some detail where he would be perfectly safe -- which was done. I never saw anything more of him until after the Atlanta Campaign.

On the 19th, I moved directly towards Decatur striking the railroad East of that place and employing my forces in the destruction of the road. At the beginning of the War, I had taught my Pioneer Corps how to destroy a road effectively. They were in the habit of going along the railroad and lifting the rails and just tipping it over and sometimes bending a rail, which was not effective, but I had taught my Pioneer Corps to take the rails off of the ties, pile the ties up and put the rails on top of them and then set them afire, heating the rails sufficiently to twist them, so that it was impossible to straighten them except by machinery and even then it was difficult. Somehwere in Ceneral

Grant's reports, in speaking of this work he said that Gen. Dodge was the best railroad builder and the best railroad destroyer in the Federal army--in destroying rebel railroads, he could give the rails a twist which nothing but Federal ingentuity and machinery could untwist."

On July 20th, I moved in the rear of the 15th Army Corps on the Decatur and Atlanta road, reaching the three mile house and I formed my division at 5 P. M. on the right of our army and of the rail-road and intrenched the poskion moved General Sprague's brigade to Decatur relieving Garrard's Cavalry division which was being sent on a raid to the rear of the enemy and I also sent the 9th Illinois mounted Infantry back to Roswell to report to Col. Swayne who was in charge of our trains, with a view of guarding them as he came forward to Decatur. The Brigade which was sent to Decatur was ordered to concentrate the trains and to place itself in a position to protect them and to put up intrenchments.

On the 21st, the term of service of most of the 9th Illinois Mounted Infantry was expiring and I gave orders to Col. Mersey to take that portion of the command to Chattanooga to be mustered out. The balance were to be consolidated into companies under the command of Lt. Col. Phillips.

On July 20th, the enemy massed behind Peach Tree Creek and attacked the right of our army under Ceneral Thomas with great force and very fiercely but they were handsomely repulsed by his troops all along the line. Our loss was heavy but that of the enmy must. have been very much larger, which showed that General Schofield's prophecy that Gen. Hood would immediately attack us, was true, but his effort to double us up on the right flank was a complete failure.

I received notice from Col. Lathrop that he had been appointed Coloenl of the 11th regiment U.S.C.Infantry. This was the 3rd Alabama regiment that I had raised and left on the Nashville and Decatur road. The 2nd regiment was designated by the Government as the 110th U.S.C.Infantry and after that time was known as such.

On July 21st, I advanced my linesand connected with the 23rd Army Corps. A strong line of skirmishers moved forward and secured a position on a ridge of hills which, when the 2nd division advanced connecting on right of the 23" army corps, intrenched their position.

and parked Our trains were ordered from Roswell\_  $\Delta t$  Decatur. During the afternoon of the 21st, the 17th Army Corps had a very severe fight on our left trying to take what was known as Bald Hill and afterwards as Leggett's Hills. In this fight, on the evening of the 26th, General Walter I. Gresham was very severely wounded and lost his le g. General Mcrherson was very anxious about his left flank as the cavalry had all on the Stone man raid left. On the evening of the 21st, he ordered me to send the 1st brigade of Fuller's division with a battery to the left and rear of the 17th corps. I sent the brigade there and General Blair did not put it into line but bivouacked about 1/4 mile in his left rear in the open ground and held it as a reserve, placing the battery in his front line.

At 4 A. M. on the morning of the 22nd, General Sweeney reported to me that the enemy had abandoned his intrenchments in front of his lines. I was ordered to move forward a very heavy line of skirmishers, towards Atlanta. The 64kh Illinois advanced over one mile and found the enemy in his works near the city. In closing in towards Atlanta, General Sweeney's division was crowded out of the main line and held in reserve. General McPherson visited me about 8 o'clock in the morning, expressing anxiety about his left. He was confident our army would be attacked and, in his judgment, upon our left front, and he ordered me to move General Sweeney to the left and take position on the left of the 17th Army Corps, which was intrenching a line in front of the one they captured on the morning of the 21st. After he had given this order, it appears that he received the following order from Gen. Sherman L-

> Hd. Qrs. Military Div. Miss. In the field at Howard House,

Near Atlanta, July 22, 1864.

General McPherson, Army of the Tennessee:

"General: Instead of sending Dodge to your left, I wish you would put the whole corps at work destroying absolutely the railroad back to and including Decatur. I want that road absolutely and completely destroyed, every tie and every rail twisted and as soon as Garrard returns, if the enemy still holds Atlanta, I will again shift you around to the extreme right with Turner's Ferry as a shift you around to the extreme right with Turner's Ferry as a depot. Explore roads with that view. Yours,

W. T. Sherman,

Major General. On receipt of this order, General Strong of General Mc-Pherson's staff, says that McPherson immediately made a visit to

He thought it neither wise or prudent to move General Sherman. the 16th Corps from the important position it was ordered to occupy until later in the day . To this General Sherman promptly assented and left the time for the execution of the order to Mc Pherson's discretion. General McPherson said that if the enemy made an attack upon our army that day, he thought it would occur before one o'clock, and it was generally understood among the members of the staff that if no general engagement took place by that hour, the 16th, corps, or one division at least of it would be drawn out and sent to the rear to execute General Sherman's In pursuance of this idea, at 12 o'clock, no engageorder."ment having taken place, General Strong says:

A few mintites before 12 o'cloc, we met General Logan and staff General Blair and staff, and several of the division commanders, on the railroad, three-quarters of a mile, or more, in rear of the right division of the 15th corps, and as evertyhing at this time was quiet along our entire line, we all dismounted and had our lunch together in a little grove of oaks just to the south of the railroad.

Of 'McPherson's staff, there were present at this time, Col. W. T. Clark, Adjutant-General land chief of Staff, Hickenlooper, Chief of Artillery, Reese, Chief Engineer, Captain Kilburn Knox, Rose, Signal officer, Dr. Duncan, Buel, Chief Ordnance Officer, Willard, Gile and Steels, the General's personal aides and myself. Soon after finishing our lunch, and while we were enjoying our cigars, General McPherson wrote the following letter in Pencil to General Dodge:

Hd. Qrs. Dept. & Army of the Tenn., In the field, July 22, 1864.

Major. General Dodge,

Commanding 16th Army Corps; General: Enclosed I send you an extract from Major-General

Sherman's letter to me just received As General Sweeney's Division has already moved over to the left and is about going into position on the left of Blair, as we talked, you will leave his division where we designated, and send Fuller's Division back on the line of the railroad between here and Decatur to destroy it as directed. Send orders to General Sprague to burn it through Decatur and to the east and west of the town as far as he can. The men should take their arms along and stack them near where they are at work, so that they can be ready for any emergency.

Yours truly,
Jas. B McPherson, Major-general.

The officer that I never received this order from McPherson. he gave it to, when he reached me a few minutes after 12 o'clock, saw me in a death grapple with Hardde's corps and of course did not deliver it and I did not see it until after the war.

After General McPherson's interview with me at 8 o'clock in the morning, I moved the 2nd division along a back road leading from the main railroad along the line south to Sugar Creek Valley and

thence West, passing up near where General Fuller was encamped with his brigade and thence up through the woods and through the lines of the 17th Army Corps. I went on ahead with my staff and when I reached Fuller's Brigade, I took Fuller with me and went out to the front to see the position that I was to take. I found General Blair's Corps in the intrenchments he had captured his Piencer Corps in treaching ancwline in his front new the day before. I rode out some distance beyond his line o intrenchments and selected the ground for my corps to occupy resting on his new left. We were in plain view of the intrenchments in front of Atlanta; could see the men in them plainly and it would have been an easy matter to have reached us with their artillery fire and I think with their musketry fire, but they made no movement. It was as still as death on that front. I saw that it wouldnot do for me to put my corps in there until the line was intrenched and I therefore immediately sent word back to General Sweeny in command of the 2nd division to halt his command when he reached Fuller and send forward his Pioneer Corps to en trench the line which would be shown him by my engineer who was with me. As I returned, I inquired of the men working at the front if they had seen anything of the enemy or any pickets and they said, "No" and when I got to Gen. Giles A. Smith who was in command of the left of Gen. Blair's 17th Corps, I inquired particularly of him if he had seen anything of any of the enemy or their pickets and he said, "No." that he only had Infantrypickets out; there were no cavalry on our side. I returned to General Fuller's tent which was on a hill just back of where his command was and where his ammunition train was parked. He invited me in to take lunch with him. I got off my horse and went into his tent I saw it was a few minutes after 12 o'clock. Before we sat down, I heard a scattering fire in the rear to the reat of us and General Fuller said it was the boys shooting hors. I immediately said to him, "No; get out and put your men in line; it is the enemy" and sent one of my staff to Gen. Sweeney ordering him to go into line but before he reached Sweeney, he had formed a line right where he was bivouacking while waiting for an order from me when he was to go into the new line, and was in hot fire with two divisions of the enemy. His position wasin

the

rear of General Blair and in the rear of all our army; so that Gen. Hood had moved Hardee's Corps clear around our left clear into our rear, 6 truck Sweeney on the marich; he was fighting south-east and East instead of West towards Atlanta.

Soon after the war, I wrote a description of this battle which I read to the Military Order of the Loygl Legion of New York and in 1910 printed it in a booklet called "The Battle of Atlanta and other Campaigns and addresses." and which is as follows:

Insert here "Battle of Atlanta."

In 1902, General Green B. Raum gave a description of the battle of Atlanta in the National Tribune dated Sept. 25, 1902. I met him afterwards and in conversation with him called his attention to many discrepancies in his account and he asked me to write him a letter in relation to it and the following is the letter which I wrote:

Insert here Printed Matter to Raum.

This battle of Atlanta was the greatest battle of Sherman's Campaign and virtually destroyed Gen. Hood's army, so far as an effective force against Sherman. The loss of General McPherson was more to that army than its great victory and no one felt it mobe keenly than General Sherman and in his dispatch to the Adjutant General of the Army of July 24th, 1864, he paid this tribute to General McPherson:

"General McPherson fell in battle, booted and spurred, as the gallant knight and gentamman would wish. Not his the loss, but the country's, and the army will mourn his death and cherish his memory as that of one who, tough comparativelyyoung, had risen by his merit and ability to the command of one of the best armies which the nation had called into existence to vindicate its honor and integrity. History tells us of but few who so blended the grave and genteleness of the friend with the dignity, courage, faith, and manliness of the soldier His public enemies, even the men who directed the fatal shot, ne'er spoke or wrote of him without expressions of marked respect; those whom he commanded loved him even to idolatry, and I, his associate and commander, fail in words adequate to express my opinion of his great worth. I feel assured that every patriot in American on hearing this sad news will feel a sense of personal loss and the country generally will realize that we have lost not only an able military leader but a man who, had he survived, was qualified to heal the national strife which had been raised by ambitious and designing men. His body has been sent north in charge of Major Willard, Captains Steel and Gile, his personal staff."

The death of General McPherson was a great personal loss to me. From the time he took command of the Army of the Tennessee, he showed great personal interest in my work. Being an engineer

himself, he was greatly interested in my railroad work during the campaigns and he also knew of General Grant's friendship for me, and, in a kindly way, he was always giving me good advice. On the 4th of July, after I had made the charge on the enemy on my own responsibility, he said to me, "I am glad you did that." I asked him why. He said, " Some time I will tell you. If General McPherson had lived, so of the 22" he could have made an official report of the battle, many of the misrepresentations in relation to it would hever have been made. He was present on the ground and saw the fighting of the 16th and 17th Army Corps. There was a good deal of controversy as to the time and how General McPherson was killed but that was pretty thoroughly settled by the statement of Lt. Sherfy, the signal officer, who went from me With arequest for Gen. Giles A. Smith to refuse his left and join my right to the 17th A. C. and met General McPherson as he was leaving me and going to Gen. Blair. He told General McPherson that the enemy were on the road but McPherson either did not understand him or paid no cattention and kept on. Lt. Sherfy turned and went with McPherson and when the fire from the enemy's line killed McPherson, it scared Sherfy's horse and threw him against a tree. His watch stopped just two minutes of two which fixed definitely the time of Gen. McPherson's death, but Ceneral William E. Strong who was upon General McPherson's staff and with him up to a few minutes before his death, delivered an address upon General McPherson and his death, at the m eeting of the Society of the Army of the Tennessee, which set forth all the facts in the matter, he having had the testimony of everyone who was with Gen and of Captain William Beard who commanded the rebel skirmish line which killed McPherson. I listened to Col. Strong's address on the matter and on October 10, 1885, wrote him the following letter in relation to it:

## Council Bluffs, Oct. 10, 1885.

"While in Chicago at our late reunion, I read you very interesting paper on the death of General McPherson. As I stated to you then, it is the clearest, and most accurate I have ever seen. It agreed with my recollections. On my arrival home, I referred to my notes on the death of Gen. McPherson. I find that your account in all the principal points coincides with my data, and I thank you for putting in such admirable form so full and interesting an account of the events of the 22d and the sad loss of our great commander. I also thank you for your truthful description of the fighting of the 16th A.C. on that day. Although only three brigades of it were on that part of the field, yet, by their gallant fighting that day, they saved our army from great loss and defeat

repulsing Hood's well planned attack in our rear. As Blair well said, "The Lord placed Dodge (meaning the 16th A.C.) in the right place that day.

The loss of McPherson was such a shock, that I think all failed to place that victory where it properly belonged. Especially unfortunate was his loss to my Corps, for he was the devoted friend both of it and myself, and he saw the onslaught of the enemy, and

the magnificent fighting with which my corps met three times its number and drove them back to the woods.

McPherson was killed, withhut doubt, long after one o'clock P. M., I find in my entry of that date, that I opened the battle at two minutes after twelve M. I immediately sent Capt. Edward Jonas, A.D.C. to General Giles A. Smith, requesting him to refuse his left and cover the ground between General Fuller's right and his (Smith's)line informing him that the enemy were far in his rear. He said he would do so. As the battle progressed and I saw no movement on the part of the General Smith, I sent, I think, Col. Tichenor A.D.C. to Smith, to inform him that the enemy were passing my right flank, which was opposite his centre and rear, and requested him to refuse his left immediately or he would be cut off. Col. Tichenor returned to me at 1 P. M. saying that Smith was just being engaged; that he had received orders to hold his line, and that troops would be thrown into the gap. My Aide returned over the same road, McPherson was killed upon close to 1 P. M. and evidently after you had taken the order to General Smith to hold firm.

General McPherson was not aware as I was that the enemy were passing around Fuller's rightn and swarming into the woods between the 16th and 17th A.C. Nor was I aware that General Mc Pherson was on the field. I was watching my right flank, knowing its exposed condition, and also seeing that the enemy overlapped Fuller on the right as well as Sweeny on the extreme left.

Soon after 1 o'clock, reports came to me from both flanks that the enemy were overlapping them. General Blair came in person for aid while I was heavily engaged, and said he could not get to General Smith. I told him that as soon as we checked t this (the second) attack, that I would turn one Brigade of Fuller's on them, and I requested him totry and reach Smith so as to help Fuller. As soon as he checked the second attack, General Fuller swung around one tegiment sharply to the right under a galling fire, the enemy firing into his flank and rear at short range, Fuller charged into the woods and cleared them, showing great personal bravery in holding his men to the work. It was in this attack of General Fuller that the 64th Illinois captured a portion of the rebel line, upon which were found the glasses and documents taken from McPherson's person, which you mentioned in your statement.

The orders you quoted from General Sherman and to General McPherson and from General McPherson to me, relating to the movements of the 16th A.C. were never received by me. The only orders General McPherson gave me that day were received about 8 A. M. He refers to those in one of the orders you quote. He came to me at about 8 o'clock A. M., took out his map, and we discussed the position I was to take on the extreme left. He told me to get my Corps together, intrench my position and look out for my left, pointing out on the map a hill I was to occupy and a road I was to command if possible. These orders were never countermand-I was engaged in carrying them out when four divisions, Bates Manay's, Walker's and Cleburne's of Hardee's Corps, struck me. Early in the morning I had been over the ground I was to occupy, and therefore had a full knowledge of the position of the 17th Corps and my own, and appreciated the situation. I saw that the safety of the Army of the Tennessee and all its trains in its rear depended on my defeating the enemy. I had every man in line- no reserves. I could see every part of my line and the entire line of the enemy, except that beyond my right which was masked by the woods, and it was, as you say, a magnificent sight and one seldom offered in battle. Hickenlooper's map, so far as it relates to the position of the enemy is wrong; Doe's is more correct, but neither gives accurately the position of the 16th Corps and the enemy."

General Sherman in his dispatches and reports of the battle of Atlanta, evidently was misled in many of the statements as to the time and actions of the different commands, he not being present on the ground. While I was in command of the Department of the Missouri, after these reports had been published, I received many letters from officers of the 16th Army Corps complaining and asking me to write General Sherman and correct them, and I therefore wrote him the following letter:

Ft. Leavenworth, Nov. 19 1865.

"I found a copy of your report of the Atlanta campaign a gew days ago and read it for the first time.

I find in your report of the battle of the 22nd that you were not fully informed as to the movements of the Army of the Tennessee or perhaps more especially of the 16th Corps, no doubt from the fact that I made no report of its operations until after the Army commander had made them and General Howard in his report of the campaign did not have mine before him, and I believe so states in his report. I was not able to make mine at the time it should have been done. I merely wish to state for your information some matters that occurred and that appear in the official reports of the 22nd as it will no doubt be a satisfaction to you to get at all particulars.

When I was ordered to the left by Gen. McPherson, I went in

when I was ordered to the left by Gen. McPherson, I went in person to the position I was expected to take up on the new advanced line to the left of the 17th A. C. selected the ground and finding that the new line would not be completed for some time, the 17th A. C. commenced work late that day. I went back for the Pioneers and ordered the 16th Corps to bivouack where they were in the rear of the 17th Corps. They halted right on the ground where they afterwards fought. On my return I met one of my staff officers who informed me that Gen. Blair's hospital had been attacked, which was situated to the east of where I was bivouacked, and that the

enemy had cavalry in there. I immediately rode towards my corps, feeling some anxiety concerning the report from the fact of our surprise at the sudden evacuation of our fron that morning. I immediately ordered skirmishers to be sent out to see what truth there was in the report, and they soon commenced skirmishing rapidly. I immediately went into line, and had hardly gottem formed when I discovered the enemy's columns and soon became hotly engaged. Discovering the enemy's object, I i mediately sent a staff of-ficer to Gen. Giles A. Smith to notify him that the enemy was in his rear, and that he had better his line and connect with me. This was before he was engaged and after I was. In a few minutes, I sent another staff officer, seeing the importance of making the The second officer, found General ponith hot I y engaged; connection. and Gen. Smith also, I think, had then received orders from Gen. McPherson to hold his line; that he (Gen. McPherson) would fill the gap; and of course had no chance to move then, as he had all he could do to hold the enemy. Gen. McTherson arrived some time after I was engaged and stood to the extrme right of my line, near the edge of the timber, watch ng the attack on me, knowing I was weak in numbers, and he could see I had every man engaged. The moment I broke the enemy's line and commenced driving them across the field and into the woods, McPherson left to go to Gen. Smith, who was then hotly engaged. He had left but a few moments before I detected the enemy's column in the woods some distance to my right and between me and General Gen. Fuller wheeled one brigade to confront them, and

immediately attacked and captured the skirmish line that had killed McPherson, and drove them back quite a distance. (two of the men of the skirmish line captured, we found Mc Pherson's papers and glass, &c. I immediately examined them and this was the first knowledge I had of his death, or as I thought at the time, of his capture, and I immediately sent my A.A.G., Capt. Barnes to you. I saw that the papers were of, importance, remembering one as being from you to him, in which you spoke of a despatch from Grant that Lee could spare 20,,000 men, &c. and that you must never quit, etc. The prisoners taken I hear numbered thirty, they might be more, and we got, I believe, all the papers. Up to this time, Wengelin's Brigade had not come up, and did not for some time after; they took no part in the fight until very late in the afternoon, and until Giles Smith had come back and formed on the extension of my line, as Wengelin when he came up formed on the right of the little creek, which was on my right, and Giles Smith in his last formation had Wengelin on his left and in the attack just at night on the hill, Wengelin took his brigade in so as to endeavor to catch the rebels in flank. Also, when the 15th corps was broken on the railroad, it was Mersey's brigade of the 2d division of the 16th corps that made the charge down the railroad to retake the ground. At the same time, that Wood came down to the intrenchments from where you were, Mersey double-quicked it from where I had been fighting over to the road, went into line, without halting and charged losing heavily in the charge, but took a large number of prisoner and went into the works with Williamson's brigade of Wood's The offcial reports, I believe, show division of the 15th A.C. all this.

This is a matter you may now have full knowledge of, but your report led some of the officers to think not, and they desired me to write you. I did not think it of any great importance, as the report speaks of this thing gamerally, and cannot

be expected to be exact in minutiate.

It appared to be the impression of those who didn't know, that I was caught on the march, and after Gen. Smith had become engaged. But the enemy's attrack was first in the rear and about opposite the centre of the 17th corps, and had the 16th not luckily been in the rear, the enemy's attack, would have struck way down the rear of the 17th corps at last to its right, as the enemy's line overlapped my left, and I was formed quite a distance to the rear of the 17th, and was at right angles to The enemy evidently were holding back with their attack on the left of the 17th corps until the attack was commenced on their right. They proably did not expect to find a corps, or any force, where the 16th met them."

After General Sherman printed his memoirs, he received a great many criticisms of statements he had made in them, egpecially in relation to the Atlanta campaign and he wrote me a letter telling me of these criticisms, etc. and asked me to write up my personal experience or views upon the campaign, which I did. When the second edition of his memoirs was printed, my statements were printed in it as an appendix. General Sherman

always said to us that everyone saw a movement and a battle from his own point of view and the only way to get a truthful history of the war was for each one to write it as he saw it and his answer to the critics was, "I have written these matters in my Memoirs as I saw them; if you saw them differently write them as you saw them." My letter will be found in Vol. 9 Pg.309 Dodge Records.

There was another controversy on the question of who recaptured the line of the 15th Army Corps on the Atlanta and Decatur line of railroad that was broken by General J. C. Brown's division of Cheatham's Corps. The facts are that Mersey's 2nd brigade of the 2nd division of the 16th Corps was the Brigade that charged from the front and also Williamson's Brigade of Charles W. Woods Division of the 15th Corps charged from the flank and they met at the same time at the battery after driving out the enemy, although the 81st Ohio of Mersey's Brigade had charge of the guns and fired them after the recapture. My Aide, Captain Edward Jonas, whom I sent with Mersey's Brigade when this dispute arose, sent me the following letter:

Cora Plantation, Whitecastle, La., May 7th, 1892.

Gen. G. M. Dodge, 1 Broadway, New York. Dear General:-

Yours of May 4th received. The following are the absolute facts as to the matter of sending Mersey's command to Gen. Logan's aid on the 22nd of July during the engagement before Atlanta. Gen. Logan rede up to you, stated he was hard pressed and needed aid on that portion of the line at the r-road near the Brick House, and you ordered Colonel Mersey's brigade to go to his assistance, detailing me to conduct it because I had been over the ground frequently during the day and knew it. You instructed me to say to the officer in command on that portion of the line that you sent Col. Mersey's brigade to his assistance, and to request its return as soon as it could be spared. Gen. Logan no doubt rode back the moment he saw Mersey in motion, and was on the spot (as he always was when his command was engaged when Mersey arrived, deployed and charged, but he did not lead Mersey's brigade or accompany it; Col. Mersey rode at its head myself by his side; no orders were given Mersey by anyone, when he arrived on the ground he deployed and charged at once, recapturing the ground lost, and which it De Gress' guns. I did not see Gen. Logan when things had quieted a little, so rode to Gen. Morgan L. Smith who I learned was temporarily commanding the Corps, and said to him with your compliments that your own line was none too strong and that you requested the return of Mersey's brgiade as soon as it could be spared, to which he responded: "Say to Gen. Dodge that his Brigade has done nobly and shall have full credit in my official report." I rode directly back and so reported to you, also describing Mersey's assault, his wound and the loss of his horse "Billy" I can remember it as though it all happened yesterday. I had not heard that Gen. Logan was in command of the Army of the Tennessee,

when he asked aid; if you had you did not mention it, and of course as I was with you I had no other means of knowing the fact.

I saw the Logan report in the War Record and would have written you, but had fumed and fretted so much on previous occasions that I thought perhaps you were getting tired.

I am not al all well, h

Yours, (Signed) E. Jonas.

W. E. McCreary of the 81st Ohio wrote Capt. E. Jonas, my Aide in relation to this matter as follows:

Emporia, Kans. July, 1884.

In recent numbers of the "National Tribune," quite a controversy has been going on in regard to the retaking of Gen. M. L. Smith's line and the recapture of Captain De Gress' Battery of 20-pounder Parrotts, July 22, 1864. Some correspondents asserted that no portion of the 16th A.C. assisted in retaking them. General Logan says that he took Gen. James W. Martin's Brigade of the 15th A.C. and retook them.

of the 15th A.C. and retook them.

My diary of that date shows that between 3 and 4 o'clock, after firing had ceased in our--16 th A.C. front, and General Logan was at Dodge's command, Smith's division broke. Logan asked for assistance of Dodge, who immediately started Col. Aug. Mersey's 2d brigade, 2d division, 16th A.C.--12th and 19th Illinois and 181st Ohio--on the double-quick passing through Smith's somewhat demoralized line along the Decatur railroad. Just after passing through Smith's line, we were opened upon by canister and shell, killing several of my regiment--81st Ohio--among them Lt. H. Hoover.

The 12th and Ath Illinois formed line on the left or south side of the railroad, the 81st Ohio "on the left into line faced by the rear rank" on the right or north of the railroad. Here Col. Aug. Mersey had his horse shot from under him

We charged and retook the works, and some prisoners; the right (as now faced) of the 81st Ohio coming to the line at the Battery. We unspiked two of the guns, and opened upon Atlanta with shell. A private of Co. I., 81st Ohio, had seen Blodgett, and Laird using "Double Charges" of canister on our own line, so concluded to give the "Rebs" a double charge of shell.

He put a 30 pound percussion shell on top of the one already in the gun, remarking "Feed 'em, d-m 'em, give them double rations." The gun was fired, and burst, and not till this time did Martin's Brigade come up. We continued to occupy the works till about 9 o'clok when we moved sotuth to the railroad to the rear of the 17th A.C., where we remained until our Army moved to the right or West of Atlanta.

As you accompanied our Brigade to General Smith's could you furnish any information as to the movement and positions in the charge? Hoping that I have not obtruded-----

You ought to write an article for the old 16th. I conducted the Brigade as mentioned, was with it in the charge, saw the guns and works retaken, and old Mersey's horse "Billy" killed; reported to the Brigade as mentioned, was with it in the charge, saw the guns and works retaken, and old Mersey's horse "Billy" killed; reported to the Brigade as mentioned, /was with it in the charge, saw the proper the Brigade to M. L. Smith and was answered, "Tell Gen. Dodge his troops have acted most gallantly, and shall have full credit in my official report." Don't think it was ever given. I never saw the article mentioned, or would have replied myself. Remember me to Mrs. Dodge and family. Yours, E. Jonas.

I made answer to him on October 3rddas follows:

Council Bluffs, Iowa.

"In answer to your statement, as to certain members of the 15th A.C., denying that any portion of the 16th A.C. took part in retaking their line when broken by the attack of the rebels on July 22d, 1864, I have to say, they certainly have not examined the official records. If they look at my official report of that battle, they will see that General Logan called upon me in person, requesting aid in retaking the line. In compliance with his request I immediately sent on the double-quick, Col. Mersey's Brgiade of the 2nd division. This Brigade formed on the south of the R.Rline, and charge and retook that portion of the line south of the railroad. At the same time, Gen. Wood's division of the 15th A.C. retook the portion north of the railroad. Mersey's Brigade lost severely in killed and wounded and his own horse was shot under him during the charge. The Brigade captured about 100 prisoners.

Gen. Morgan L. Smith who commanded that Division of the 15th A.C. that was broken by the enemy, came and thanked me in person for Mersey's gallant work, and spoke in the highest terms of the prompt decision and effective charge of Mersey and his Brigade.

I sent with the Brigade, Capt. Edward Jonas, of my staff to report to Gen. Smith. He was present and witness of the entire action of the brigade. He can give you any particulars. His address is New Orlenas, La."

These questions only show what General Sherman says, how differently everyone looks at a battle and how mistaken they often are about things that occur under their own moses.

During the day of the fighting, I had trouble with General Sweeny. When I went on to the field, he had not gome to the front, although his division was in line of battle and fighting. When he did come, he came on foot and I saw that he had been drinking; therefore I stayed right in the rear of the 2nd division all the time, on a high piece of ground just behind the batteries from which I could see the whole of my corps and the enemy's forces as they came out of the woods into the open and during the battle I had to give direct orders two or three times to the Brigade and regimental commanders of Sweeny's Command, especially the order to Col. Mersey to chage the flank of one of the columns which he broke up, and saved my line. I had a single line of about 5000 men and Hardee's corps in four columns came at it. I did not have a single man in reserve and  $ec{\Lambda}_{0}$  appreciated what it meant to the Army of the Tennessee if they broke through me and reached the 15th and 17th corps, but To was able to hold them.

In the afternoon of the 25th, General Sweeny came to my headquarters. General Fuller was there at the time and hade made some complaint in relation to General Sweeny's action during the battle.

The vonversation turned onto the fight of the 22nd. General Sweeney denounced the move. He said his right was unprotected on account of the 4th Division's running and General Fuller stated that they did not run. He appealed to Captain Welker, when General Fuller said, "When any person says the 4th division ran, they say something that is not so." General Sweeny immediately said it was so and that General Fuller was a god-dammed liar and struck him in the face. General Sweeny only having one arm, General Fuller refused to return the blow but Sweeny continued to damm Fuller after he retired and sat down. Other officers present interfered and secured Sweeny's arms. stopped General Sweeny and called his attention to the fact that his statements to Fuller were not correct and then Sweeny turned on me and virtually called me a liar. He did not go quite that far but his statements indicated that. He was then full and I immediately placed him under arrest. I made up my mind during the battle to demand his relief; the fact is, the whole division was up in arms against him and after the battle they made a universal complaint. As soon as General Sherman heard this, he wrote me a note and told me it was a very serious thing to relieve an officer on the field of battle and I think was rather disposed to countermand the arrest but he did not. I answered hime very frankly, telling him I understood fully how serious a case it was but he felt it was a far more serious matter to hold an officer in command of a division in battle who was not in condition to fill the position, or something to General Sherman in commenting upon this wrote that effect. to General Logan, Commander of the Army of the Tennessee, on July 25th, as follows: .

Hd.Qrs. Mil. Div. of the Mississippi, In the field, near Atlanta, July 25, 1864.

Maj. Gen. John A. Logan, Commanding Army of the Tennessee:

General: I have your application for the services of General Corse, which I grant, because I want you to have good division commanders. But I beg you to see that no injustice is done to General Sweeny. I have noticed for some time a growing dissatisfaction on the part of General Dodge with General Sweeny. It may be personal. See that General Dodge prefers specific charges and specifications, and you, as the army commander, must be the judge of the sufficiency of the charges. No one but the commander of an army can arrest and send away a general; it is a high power, but I construe the power to reside with the commanders of my three armies, because each has a command other than the troops here on the spot. You, as commander of the Army of the Tennessee, should judge as to the cause of arrest and see that no injustice is done a general officer. You can see how cruel it would be to a brave and sensitive gentleman and officer to be arrested, deprived of his command, and sent to the rear at this time. I do not believe General Dodge would willingly do an act of injustice, but still you are the one to judge. I fear that General Sweeny will feel that even I am influenced against him to befriend General Corse, but it is not so. I give up General Corse because the good of the service demands that at this crisis you should have good division commanders.

I am, with respect, your obedient servant,
W. T. Sherman,
Maj. Gen. commanding.

Upon General Sweeny's leaving the Army, he gave the following address to his command:

Headquarters, Near Atlanta, Ga., July 25, 1864.

Brig. General.

To the officers and soldiers of the Second Division, Sixteenth Army Corps:

Your General has been deprived of his command and ordered to Nashville in arrest. Before leaving, he is constrained to express to you his admiration at the heroic manner in which you repulsed the terrific assault of the enemy upon your lines on the 22nd instant. Feeling every confidence in you, he had looked for the displaying by you of the ordinary fortitude of soldiers in the hour of conflict, but you did more than this; with empty cartridge boxes, and lines unbroken, you stood, trusting to your bayonets, like a wall between your country and ruin. At the order "charge" you rushed upon the advancing columns of the enemy, and snatched victory, colors, and hundreds of prisoners from them. As if not content with the glories already won, the Second Brigade moved with alacrity to a distant part of the field, and charged like an avalanche upon a victorious column of the enemy, assisting in re-establishing our line in its former position, and again prisoners and recapture d cannon were the rewards of their efforts. Your general tonfesses to you freely that the evening of the 22nd instant was the proudest of his life, made so by your daring, your fortitude, your heroism, and it was his desire to lead your victorious banner into the doomed city in our front; but this is not to be. It is only left with him to request of you to extend to your future commanders, the confidence and cheerful obedience that you have always shown to him.

T. W. Sweeny,

-253-

committals from us which we could neither honorably or safely disregard. We blamed H(ovey) for coming away in the manner in which he did, but we knew he had apparent reason to feel disappointed and mortified, and we felt it was not best to crush one who certainly had been a good soldier. As to O(sterhaus) we did not know of his leaving at the time we made the appointment, and do not now know the terms on which he left. Not to have appointed him, as the case appeared to us at the time, would have been almost, if not quite, a violation of our word. The word was given on what we thought was high merit and somewhat on his nationality. I beg you to believe we do not act in a spirit of disregarding merit. We expect to await your programme for further changes and promotions in your army. My profoundest thanks to you and your whole army for the present campaign so far. A. Lincoln.

General Sherman immediately answered President Lincoln as follows:

Nead Atlanta, Ga., July 27, 1864.

His Excellency President Lincoln, Washington.

Sir: Your dispatch of yesterday is received. I beg you will not regard me as fault finding, for I assert that I have been well sustained in every respect during my entire service. I did not suppose my dispatches would go outside the offices at the War Department. I did not suppose you were troubled with such things. Hovey and Osterhaus are both worthy men, and had they been promoted on the eve of the Vicksburg campaign, it would have been natural and well acdepted; but I do think you will admit that their promotion, coming to us when they had gone to the rear, the one offended because I could not unite in the same division five infantry and five cavalry regiments and the other for temporary You can see how ambitious aspirants for military fame regard these things. They come to me and point them out as evidenc es that I am wrong in encouraging them to a silent, pateint discharge of duty. I assure you that every general of my army has spoken of it and referred to it as evidence that promotion results from importunity and not from actual service. I have refrained from recommending any thus far in the campaign, as I think we should reach some stage in the game before stopping to balance accounts or writing history. I assume you that I do think you have conscientiously acted throughout the war with marked skill in the matter of military appointments, and that as few mistakes have been made as could be expected. I will furnish all my army and division commanders with a copy of your dispatch, that they may feel reassured. With great respect,

W. T. Sherman, Major-General.

The result of this correspondence was a notice from Washington to forward for recommendation the names of eight colonels for promotion and General Sherman sent forward in the following dispatch the officers recommended by his army commanders. One of these, Col. J. W. Sprague was from the 16th Army Corps:

> Hd.Qrs. Mil. Div. of the Mississippi, In the field, near Atlanta, Ga., July 29, 1864.

Col. James A. Hardie,

Inspector-General, Washington, D.C.
In compliance with your distpatch of the 28th instant, I now send you the names of eight colonels who are recommended by their immediate and superior commanders for promotion, and I earnestly recommend that they be appointed Brigadier-Generals: Col. William Grose, Thirty-sixth Indiana; Col. Charles C. Walcutt, Forty-sixty

Ohio; Col. James W. Reilly, One hundred and fourth Ohio; Col. L. P. Bradley, Fifty-first Illinois; Col. J. W. Sprague, Sixty-third Ohio; Col. Joseph A. Cooper, Sixth East Tennessee; Col. John T. Croxton, Fourth Kentucky; Col. William W. Belknap, Fifteenth Iowa. Three of them are from each of the armies of the Cumberland and Tennessee, and two of the Army of the Ohio, and are all at their posts doing good service.

W. T. Sherman, Major-General.

These nominations were made while the officers were on the battlefield and had a marked effect and were greatly appreciated. Some of these officers had been recommended for promotion for a long time.

Aight after the battle of Atlanta, the enemy asked for an armistice. I sent one of my Staff officers whomet General Cleburne of the rebel army and when I went out myself, I saw my staff officers had made the neutral line too close up to my intrenchments, and I criticised him for it. General Cleburne stepped up and said he was responsibile for it and that I need not worry because they had seen all of our intrenchments they wanted to the day before.

On my front they buried 422 rebel dead; on the front of the 15th and 17th A.C. they buried 1000. My corps lost more in killed and wounded than either of the other corps although it was the smallest corps. The total loss in theother corps was more because they lost more prisoners than I did. The total

killed and wounded in the three corps was
The totel killed was
Total wounded
Prisoners
Total
Total
Total

The 15th Corps lost 4 guns, the 16th, 6 guns and the 17th two. The six guns of the 16th Corps were not lost in battle--they were coming on the road between the 16th and 17th corps and struck the Cleburne kkirmish line which was between those Corps.

I had on my staff Lt. Edward Jonas. On General Hood's staff was his brother, Major Jonas, Commissary of Subsistence, C.S. afterwards U.S. Senator from Louisian and they met during this armistice for the first time during the war. Lt. Edward Jonas was a citizen of Quincy but his brother had left Quincy and gone to New Orleans and entered the service from that state. Their meeting was a very cordial one.

The continuous fighting from Chattanooga to Atlanta had reduced my command so that on July 24th, I wrote the following letter to General Sherman:

Near Atlanta, Ga., July 24, 1864.

"I respectfully request that the 3d brigade, 4th division 16th A.C. now at Decatur, Ala, be ordered to join this command. The two divisions comprising four brigades present (two of each division) have lost in killed and wounded alone some 2000 men; and the detaching two brigades, together with the loss from sickness, has reduced the command from 12,500 effectives, which it started with, to some 6,000. One brigade 1800 strong is at Rome, Ga., and one at Decatur, Ala. If either brigade or both could in me, it would give us a valuable addition to the army it would give us a valuable addition to the army.

There are also detached the lat Alabama Cavalry, at Rome, and the 9th Ohio Cavalry, at Decatur; besides some three regiments of colored troops belonging to this command, which makes those absent and without the command fully equal to the present. If it is possible under the exigencies of the service, I trust the General Commanding the military division of the Mississippi will order up a portion of my command."

It is a singular fact that on the same day, General Blair wrote a similar letter to General Shorman stating that his corps started out with about 12,000 and although he had been with us only sin ce Big Shanty, it had been reduced to about 6000 but part of this reduction came from his leaving a division on the railroad line at Altoona and north. The rest were lost in battle and as prisoners. Col. Mersey who had fought his brigade on three parts of the field that day and when the regiments services had expired, and who were under orders to go home, showed his soldierly qualities in taking his command into the battle. When he left us on the 25th, I wrote him the following letter;

"As you are about to leave my command on account of expiration of term of service, I take this opportunity to thank you for the efficient and generous aid you have always rendered me. That you have always promptly and well done your duty no one for a moment can deny, and that the men under you have well and bravely done their whole duty all gladly admit. You leave at a time and under aimsumstances of which you and water accounts of time and under circumstances of which you and your command have good reasons to be proud. Fighting as you did on three different fields the same day, and victorious on every one, forms the best and most honorable reward that you can take with you. I again heartily thank you for all you have done, and trust that you will not forget old associates in any new field you may choose.

General Sherman again ordered his cavalry force to the enemey's rear with a view of destroying their communications and force them to abndon Atlanta. This riad was virtually a failure. McCook got on the road south of Atlanta but Stoneman with some 12 or 15 hundred of the command were captured, the rest were scattered and straggled back in small parties, it taking some of them a couple of weeks to get within our lines.

On July 26th, Brig. Gen. J. M. Corse reported to me and I assigned him to the command of the 2nd division 16th A. C. Some time before I had applied for him. He had been serving on General Sherman's staff during the campaign.

On July 26th we received our orders to move from the extreme left to the extreme right of the Army.

On July 27th, General OL O. Howard was assigned to the command of the Army of the Temmessee which was a great disappointment to that army. They felt that an army that had followed Grant, Sherman and McPherson, and Logan, who had taken it successfully through its last battle, after the death of McPherson, had material enough in it to command it. On the movement from the extreme left to the right, I pulled out first and as I was moving to the rear of Gen. Thomas' army, I saw General Logan sitting on the porch of a log building. I went up to speak to him and found that General Sherman was in side. After speaking a few works to Gen. Logan, I went in and had a talk with General Sherman, inquiring about the change of commanders and expressing my wish that General Logan had been assigned to the command. answered me by saying, it was alright; that he would tell me the reasons some time. When I came out, General Logan was still sitting on the porch and as the door was open, I have no doubt he heard what I had to to Geheral Sherman, for there were tears in his eyes. I spoke to him very cordially and said to him that I was disappointed at the change, but I thoped it would end alright. He, like a good soldier, said it would but he said it was pretty hard on him. Nothing more, was said about Years after, I had correspondence in relation to this matter with General Sherman, when the friends of Logan and himpself were endeavoring to bring them together. For a long time after the war, General Logan never forgot Sherman's treatment of him and was at times feltities but one day at abbanquet of the Senate, Logan made a speech in deftense of Sheramn, and in praise of him, which finally brought them together and their

old troubles were forgotten. Some time after the war, I forget now the place but I think it was when we were together at one of the reunions of the Army of the Tennessee, General Sherman made a full explanation to me of the matter and at the time I made full notes of it in my diary and I quote here what he said:

"Sherman said that in the winter of 1863-4 after the battle of Missionary Ridge on his trip to Meridian, he left Logan in command at Huntsville with the 15th Corps, and Dodge in command on line of railroad from Nashville to Decatur with 16th Corps both in Gen. Thomas's Department. On his return, he found Logan much dissatisfied with Thomas and complained of their treatment of him. He could not send an officer or soldier to Nashville until he got his orders or passes approved by Thomas' provost Marshal or some local commander. Sherman, when he saw Thomas, told him he should not have treated Logan in that way, that he was a Corps Commander and was entitled to better treatment. Thomas complained of Logan in several matters and said that he was hard to get along with, and that he had had not trouble with Dodge. Sherman said that he tried to smooth the matter over, but he discovered an unfriendly feeling that

continued through the Atlanta Campaign.

When McPherson fell, on the 22d of July, in front of Atlanta, Logan by seniority of rank assumed command by his direction and handled the army well. After the battle, Thomas came to Sherman and they discussed the question of a commander for the Army of the Tennessee. Sherman told Thomas that Logan was entitled to the command, was competent for it and he desired to place him in it. Thomas answered with much feeling that he was sorry to hear him say so, for if Logan was assigned to the command of the Army of the Tennessee, he should consider it his duty to resign his command. Sherman answered Maj. Gen. Thomas: "You certainly would not do that and leave me here in that condition". Thomas hesitated and finally said: "No, I dont know as I would go so far as that," but protested that Logan should not be assigned to the command. Sherman said: "I dont see how I can pass him by; I dont want to do anything that will seem to reflect on Logan." Thomas answered: "Well, let the President or Secretary of War select a commander." Sherman said, "No, I do not want them to send a commander here that is outside of this Army. "Sherman said: "In other words, you dont feel that with Logan in command you and he could act cordially and harmoniously tog ther?" Thomas said, "Wes, that is it, and I think, to ensure success, that there should be not only harmony but entire cordial ity between the army commanders." Sherman's answer was that he could not afford to put Logan in command under such circumstances,

Finally they sat down and discussed the merits of the different Generals and settled upon Howard. "I have, said Sherman, always been a friend to Logan in a great many different ways. He was a good soldier. He handled the army splendidly on the 22nd, and in his rovement to the right. But you see I had a great responsibility and had to do the best I could under the circumstances. I consider Logan the representative volunteer General of the War."

While I never knew the exact facts in the matter, I know the Army of the Tennessee wanted Logan and was greatly disappointed when Sherman went outside of it for a commander. The officers and men felt that the little army that had had for its commanders Grant, Sherman and McPherson, had filled every post of responsibility to which it had been assigned, and that there was matterial left in it to command it; but I think no one in it knew of this complication and it is well they did not.

On July 31" I wrote my Father as follows:
Near Atlanta, July 31, 1864.

Dear Father:

It is a very rainy day and everybody except the skirmishers are lying still and taking a long breath. Our guns throw their shell continually into the Gate City, tear down its big blocks.

You will read of the great struggles of the 20th, 22nd and 28th. Unless you can conceive a battle field, where 10,000 men fall, where hundreds of canons thunder and a hundred thousand muskets belch forth death for hours, you can have no conception of a battle. It fell to my part to stem the tide that was rolling over us on the 22nd and roll it back saving our army, the Gallant band, one—third of which sacrifi ed themselves, pressed down on the rebel hosts and crumpled them up and it never was better done before. All I believe appreciate it and are disposed to give the 16th A. C. full credit.

Then again on the 28th for four long hours, we received the shock of all of Hood's Army and it went back broken, disheartened, leaving its dead by thousands in our hands. Blood enough has been shed to establish empires in the old world; still the rebels stand up, bleeding ,ready to receive more. A few week's rest, a few hours at home would be the most grateful thing to me. Military honor and glory looks well upon paper but when won by such hard blows, by such continual exertion and such unheard of or unthought of campaigns, it all gives way to a matter of fact duty and becomes stern reality.

How many, many of my friends have fallen! How many lie now bleeding in unwelcome towns I dare not estimate! Still many are left and ere tomorrow night may be marshalled again against the rebel hosts. God so far has spared my life and carried me safely through, though many a bullet has been well aimed and well intended for me. I have strong friends here, none more so than Grant and Sherman and the brave McPherson who fell near my lines; the last words he uttered when he saw how gallantly I was driving the enemy was uttered "Hurrah for Dodge". He fell mourned by us all. We cannot replace him.

I always like to hear from you all; know what you are doing, the prospects, etc. It seems to me that I could sit down and quietly farm, though I suppose it is not so. An Hour's rest, with a letter from any of you, that takes me back to my old haunts repays me for weeks of turmoil and make me forget the shell that whizz over our heads day and night.

I hope you are doing well this summer and as you say, old folks never like to be idle. I shall always have to keep busy at something though I think that ere long I shall quit military life. I have struggled up as high as I can get, against ill-health and with few influential friends until I, at least, have won a reputation as an able officer and have come up from a Captain to a Corps Commander.

Remember me to all.

Sherman showed himself a master when he took theresponsibility and made no explanation, and thus preserved the good feeling throughout the great command. I heard the news of the appointment of Howard in place of Logan as we were marching from the left to right. I did not know Howard personally, but it is

When I arrived near the position I was to take on the right of the Army of the Cumberland, General Howard met me. It was the first time I had ever seen him to know him. My 2nd division was going into line. My 4th division had been halted by other troops on the way and were not up and they had stopped to lunch. General Howard spoke to me tather criticising the fact that the 4th division was not up and I answered him by telling him I would be in line on time. He rather hesitated and doubted it but my 4th division soon came up and formed into line and began to intrench. I went around to where General Howards was and told him that my divisions werein line and entrenched. This astonished him and he was much more cordialy than he was in the forencon. My meeting him in this way did not make a favorable impression upon me.

On July 28th, the enemy came out in force endeavoring to turn our right and struck the 15th Corps before it was in line, Logan met these attacks promptly and with great effect. General John C. Brown who was in command of the division that made the attack at first, said the slaughter of their ment was enormous and behavior called it a killing instead of a battle.

About 2 p. M. I sent the 80st Ohio, 64th Illinois and 66 the Indiam and a New Jersey regiment to the right to reinforce the 15th A. C. and they did very effective work. Two of the regiments were armed with the Henry rifle. General Howard happened to be there and saw what effective work they did. They halted and drove back a superior force of the enemy and he complimented them highly upon it; also in his official report. Insert (1).

On August 1st, in writing home I made this statement in relation to the conditions in our front:

Three long months have passed since I saw you, and it seems a year; many, many eventful hours have I seen during that time; days roll by and nights are slept away with othing but the roar of artillery or the crack of the rifle to break one's thought. As I amsitting here crack, crack goes the skirmish line, while the dull thunder of a rebel or Yankee gun passes by. I see that Greeley has some idea of pdeace. I would like to see it and see this bleeding

country going forward once more united and prosperous. My own feelings are changing, and my ominions are wavering a little as to what is best for the United States. I know that the rebels are heartily sick of bheir bargain, and though they thunder their columns against us it is with little avail. Prisoners taken often have canteens filled with whisky, and are often drunk--only think of making men drunk and sending them out to throw away their lives when their leaders know they could not force them if sober.

When their leaders know they could not force them if sober.

My mess has now in it Lt. Tichenor, Capt. Chamberlain, Capt.

Ford and Dr. Gay. We live hard; beans, hams and such like, a few canned fruits but no potatoes, onions, butter, &c. any of them to us luxuries. Nothing comes over the railroad but soldier's rations, and hardly that; one single track feeds this great army with all its horses, mules and hangers-on, employees, &c. Hood has received some reinforcements, but not equal to his loss, while his last railroad is broken up. I do not see how he is to hold out much longer, but he may."

On August 2nd, Brig. Gen. T. E. G. Ransom reported to me and was assigned to the command of the 4th division, 16th Army Corps. I made application for General Ransom as soon as he recovered from his wound received in the Red River expedition, but it was a long time before he reached me. He relieved General Fuller who had been commanding the division since General Veatch left. Ransom was a school-mate of mine. We went west together and had always kept up our correspondence and it was a great pleasure to both of us to be brought together again.

On the same day, I relieved to be mustered out of the in the 2nd Iowa Infantry service, a young engineer, an enlisted man as civil Engineer M. F. Hurd. He had been on duty as an enlisted man ever since I was at Corinth. We all tried to get him promoted, but being detailed from the company the officers of the rgiment would not promote him and the Government did not see any way that they could do it, so he remained in charge of the engineering force of my Corps as an enlisted man. He was known as Major Hurd and though he had no commission, he was recognized by everyone as Major and was treated as such by the officers of the Engineering Corps, on account of his ability. When ever he was in the front with the Emoneer Corps and was attacked, he never ran but he would make the Pioneer Corps dropthdir shovels and picks and stand up and fight until he was driven in and in a great many instances was able to hold his line.

On August 4, General Sherman began his movements with a view of breaking through to the West Point railroad and to the Macon road and he fent around General Palmer's Corps of the Army of the Cumberland for the purpose of aiding General Schofield in accomplishing that work.

On August 9th, I wrote the following letter to General Sherman:

"I have been semi-officially informed that Maj. Gen. Smith has been assigned to the command of this corps. This, of course, was unexpected to me, as you had informed me that I was to be assigned to its command. General McPherson had also several times so informed me, and without, on my part, ever seeking the position. I was always contented to endeavor to do my duty, wherever my commanding officer saw fit to put me, but now the case is different; from Department and Military Division Head Quarters, the different commanders have been informed I was to be assigned to the corps; it was so understood by all this army. I have had a command during the campaign, nearly equal in strength to most of the Corps of the Army of the Tecnessee, and I am confident it has cheerfully done its duty on all occasions. Now to assign a different commanders to the corps, and one who has not participated in the campaign, is a directr reflection upon me, and will so be looked upon by all in that army. I trust I should be spared this mortification. I appeal to you in thematter, and I believe you will give me credit of never yet in all the time I served under you, or under General Grant, ever before complaining of any disposition made of me, no matter when or where it has been, and also of dadaavoring as far as my abilities admitted, of cheerfully and heartily doing all in my power to further the ends and objects of all my commanding of-I also desire to say that, in no way whatever, had I endeavored to seek the command promised me.

I think this is the only letter I ever wrote in relation to a command. On August 6th, General Sherman answered as follows:

"Yours of this date is received. I know nothing of Gen. A. J. Smith's assignment to the command of the 16th corps. Among a batch of Special Orders received from Washington, was one assigning Major John Hugh to duty with Gen. A. J. Smith, in commandin g the 16th corps. It may be as commanding that part of the corps on the Mississippi, where the reserves still are. This is all any one knows about it. Gen. Grant, I know, supposed you would succeed Hurlbut, but I know nothing further than the above. I take pleasure in saying that you have ever done your whole duty with zeal and fervor."

On this date, I also advanced my line very close to Atlanta and entrenched the position. I had captured a hill where the enemy's works were not more than five or six hundred yards distant and the rail-road station of Atlanta was in plain view.

General Sherman had brought to the front, some 32-pounders, two of which he put in this battery. On August 9th, our batteries all being in position, we received an order that all the batteries which can reach the buildings of Atlanta, will fire steadily on the town using during the day about fifty pounds per gun, shells and solid shot. At the same time, General Schofield was to make his effort to turn the enemy's left. On August 11th, I pushed my line forward and captured the enemy's skirmish line, taking a number of prisoners and got possession of their pits and occupied them, which brought me still nearer to their entrenchments. We moved our forces up and entrenched them. From prisoners taken here, we learned that Farragut had captured the forts at the entrance of Mobile Harbor. This was very encouraging, as we knew Mobile would fall and this would give us a line of supplies up the Alabama river.

Our artillery attack on Atlanta did not seem to destroy buildings. I was in Atlanta myself to see the effect of it but in the spring of 1865, when General Sherman returned to St. Louis where he was in command, I asked him about the effect of my artillery fire which was the closest to Atlanta and he said that it did not accomplish anything -- that I only made a pepper-pot of the railroad station. General Schofield's attack on the right also failed to accomplish anything. General Palmer, who was sent to aid him, raised the question of rank, claiming that he was the ranking officer. This caused a long correspondence between Palmer, Thomas Schofield and Sherman. General Shemman's decision was that Schofiedd being an army commander by order of the President, that the officers serving in his command were Junior to him and he had the right to command them, no matter what the date of the Commission. This is , true as commanders of Departments and armies had officers serving under them who ranked them, but Palmer was dissatisfied, did not accept the decision, resigned and went to the rear. This caused a good deal of delay on the right and the enemy moved their force over there and stopped Schofield's approach in that direction,

whereas, there is no doubt, if it had been made promptly when the movement was first started, they would have reached the West Point road and threatened the Macon road. We had all come to the conclusion that to drive Hood out of Atlanta, we would have to cut loose and make another flank movement.

On August 14th, another 32-pounder was placed in my line and I was ordered to fire every ten minutes during the day upon the city. General Hood found our cavalry going to the south, sent his cavalry to the rear under General Wheeler and they went as far nowth as Tilton and Resaca, but our troops along the line where they had stockades and entrenchments, as a general thing, stood their ground and held the line. General Wheeler was only able to break it in one or two places, which did not materially delay our train.

After General Howard had taken command, he was in the habit of having religious services at his head-quarters on Sunday and we took his request as an order to attend. On Sunday, August 14th, all the corps and division commanders of the Army of the Tennessee were present and some brigade commanders. Just after the service had commenced, the firing commenced down on my line. I felt rather nervous, but did not like to leave. Pretty soon it began to roll up to Logan's line. He said he could not stand that, so we got on our horses and went back to our commands and found it was a false attack. Prisoners told us they had discovered we had these religious services on Suneay and they thought they would break them up so pitched into our skirmish line and opened up a fire for that purpose.

On August 17th, General Sherman issued his orders for the next on the railroad flank movement. He proposed to place a corps behind on the Chatta-hoochee river and for the rest of the Army to move by the rightflank and rear and to attack the enemy wherever it was found.

On August 18th, our movement was temporarily duspended and I on the 19" received an order from General Sherman to feel the enemy's front to see if we could not break through. I was nearest to it. I received this request in the morning and I sent out Col. Phillips, my Chief of staff, to examine the line and also asked Ransom to examine his front and their report not being satisfactory, I went out myself to

I made up my mine if there was any possibility , look the field over. I was so near to them that I would try to break through, reach hheir entrenchments and carry them and I made known to Ransom what I intended to do and for him to mass up a force to support the Brigade; that I was going to order Corse to make the charge. It was about 9;30 when I reached the entrenchments. My line was so exposed that a person could not show himself above the entrenchments without being hit. To reach my entrenchments, we had to go up a trench that was made so as to avoid exposing ourselves to the enemy's fire. in the line of the 7th Iowa Infantry and boys cautioned me several times about exposing myself and one of them said that if I wanted to see the enemy, I could look through a peep-hole which they had under a log, and that I could see better than above the entrenchments. After looking the field over some time, I put my eye to this peephole and the moment I did so, a rebel shot me in the head. appears that the light shown through this hole and whenever it was darkened a sharpshooter had his gun ready and fired it. I, of course, went down immediately. I remember distinctly the thought which went through my mind as I fell and that was "This is the last Captain H. I. Smith, in whose company I fell, put me in a blanket and I was carried to the rear, down this trench. I was unconscious for a long time and I was supposed to have been mortally wounded. As soon as General Sherman heard of my being wounded, he all stoppd of telegrams going north in relation  $\kappa^{\star}$ , proposing to send them himself, but the correspondents had gotten on to it and telegrams had gone north that I was mortally wounded and when timy people began to inquire about me, they could not get any response. Finally General Sherman wired that I was wounded, but not mortally and Sherman said he never undertook to do a smart thing but what he got beaten. I think it was the second day after I was wounded, when I was still unconscious, that General Sherman came and brought his medical director, Dr. Kottoe and when he was in the tent watching me, I heard Sherman say, "Kittoe, Dodge isn't going to die; he is coming to." and that is myo first remembrance of hearing anything when I became conscious.

On August 20, 1875, Captain H. I. Smith makes this statement to my brother in relation to the wound:

"Mr. H. I. Smith, President 1st National Bank, Mason City, Iowa, stated to N. P. Dodge that he was 1st Lt. Co. B. 7th Iowa Infantry and commanded the skirmish line 22d August, 1864, covering a part of the front of the 16th Army Corps, in front of Atlanta, Georgia. That General G. M. Dodge, Commander of said corps, came into the ditch where his men were stationed to get a view of the enemy's works preparatory to making an assault. The skirmish line of the enemy was so close, that if any part of a man in Lt. Smith's command was exposed, he would at once be pierced with bullets. Against the ditch there was a bank raise and in this bank they had apertures made with cartridge boxes split angling, through which the soldiers kept up a fire on the enemy's skirmish line. Gen. Dodge was requested by Lt. Smith to look through one of these boxes buried in the bank. Just as soon as he put his face to it, a bullet from the enemy's skirmish line came angling through the hole first striking the box, and glancing struck the General in the centre of his forehead, and furrowed toward the top of his head, not penetrating the skull; knocked him senseless into the ditch. Lt. Smith, supposing him to be killed, sent a man to Col. Parrott commanding his regiment, for a stretcher, and reported Gen. Dodge killed. The stretcher not coming as soon as he thought it ought, he went in person for it, and, on returning, found Gen. Dodge rest-

rarrott commanding his regiment, for a stretcher, and reported Gen. killed. The stretcher not coming as soon as he thought it ought, he went in person for it, and, on returning, found Gen. Dodge resting his head on his elbow, and as he approached, I asked for his hat which was handed to me, with two bullet holes through it. After he was carried to the rear on the stretcher, he, (Smith) picked up a piece of his scalp (which the bullet had torn off) out of the large pool of blood where he lay."

it to my brother and the hat I wore at the time is in the Historical Department, Des Moines, Iowa. It seems that I had in my pocket at the time, my Commission as Brigadier General and the blood which flowed from my head stained this commission so that it shows in every fold; this is also exhibited in the Historical Department and is quite a curiosity. The bullet cut out the bone of the skull almost to the brain, but did not injure the brain. It closed my eyes; they felt as though they were full of sand and it was some days before I could open them and see.

On August 24th, as soon as I was well enough to dictate, I issued the following circular to my command and on that day I also received thirty days leave of absence:

"It becomes necessary for me to relinquish my command for a short time. No one can regret this more than I do.

Upon leaving you I cannot refrain from extending to you my heartfelt thanks for the efficient and brave manner in which you have supported me throughout this campaign. Whether on the battle-field, in the trench or on the march, you have given that earnest, zealous and efficient attention to your duties that always ensures success.

From Chattanooga to Atlanta, through a campaign unparalleled in its severity and its success, you have done your full share. Your comrades are buried on every field and while we deeply mount their loss, we have the satisfaction of knowing that they fell nobly doing their duty

we have the satisfaction of knowing that they fell nobly doing their duty.

I leave you in the hands of able and trie d commanders. Give them
the same cheerful support you have always given me, and there will be
no fears of the result. I shall watch your course with the same interest;
your victories shall be mine."

It was the intention to hold me there in the hospital but General Sherman finally decided that my wound would be such that it would be so long healing that I had better be sent north and on August 25th, he ordered a car reserved for me in the train and Van Dyne, the Superintendent of Transportation, answered me that they would give me the best car in the train, but it would be a freight car. On August 25th, they strung up a cot in the freight car so that it would swing; they could not lay me on the floor of the car because my head would not stand it. On the floor of the car were Asoldiers who were going north. They were convalescing, and had not been seriously wounded.

The effect of General Sherman's tying up the telegraph is shown in the following letter from my brother to Mrs. Dodge:

Council Bluffs, August 26, 1864.

"we have just got word of G. M. being dangerously wounded and are all feeling very sad; it spread like wildfire through the town and I camnot go on the street but I am hailed to know the latest news from him. I think it strange none of his staff have telegraphed me and that I get no word from you. I sent a dispatch to you this A.M. and hope to get a reply. We are very hopeful yet fear the worst as the tenor of the dispatches is not very favorable to his recovery. It is not unexpected by me since the death of McPherson. In fights before Atlanta and his investment, I have been in great fear he would get hit, knowing he was not naturally cautious, while the ever ready sharpshooter never relaxes his diligence, but is always prepared to take advantage of any officer's incautious act. If the present wound takes G. M's life, the brilliant record which he leaves ought to be a source of great consolation to his family, although a poor return for his loss."

At Marietta, the trains were stopped for the purpose of examining it and to see if the wounded men needed any attention and soon after stopping, I heard a woman asking which car General Dodge was in; they pointed it out to her and it was Morther bickerdike, who had been with my command ever since Corinth. She was a short woman and could not get into the car herself and called two soldiers to boost her in. She gave me some delicacies, looked at my wound, saw that I was alright and then gave attention and some food to everyone of the soldiers in the car. After she had gone, the soldiers said they were lucky to be in the car with the General for they would get more to eat and more attention, but all the way they dendeavored to help me. I was absolutely helpless. We reached Chattenooga at 1 P. M. on the 26th; were again treated and feed.

We reached Nashville at 8 A. M. on the 27th. I was taken to Sheldon's hotel where Mrs. Dodge met me. Dr. M. W. Robbins, whose time had expired in the service, was going hom and was accompanying me. I stayed in Nashville over the 28th. Left there at 6 A. M. on the 29th. They made a couch for me in a passenger car and I had a very comfortable trip to Louisville. On August 30th, I arrived at Indianapolis. My three aides, Jonas, Ford and Tichenor were with me and they left me at Indainapolis. I arrived at Greenfield, Ind, at my brother-in-law's, that evening.

As soon as my father heard of my wound, he wrote me the following letter, which I received at Greenfield:

Elkhorn City, Aug. 27, 1864.

"With great sorrow I received the unwelcome news of your dangerous wound. Some telegrams had it fatal wound, but Nathan, in a letter, also containing the news by telegram of same date, wrote on the envelope that you had removed to Nativile and was doing well as could be expected. I hope the latest news is the truest. I have been painfully apprehensive that you would meet with some casualty before Atlanta was in possession of Cherman"s "Noble Army." Still I have lived in hope that you might once the shto and shell that take the place in the Army, of the singing birds of our glens and ravines in the old "Haunts" of your childhood and the sunny West. I wait with the deepest anxiety for the next news concerning you. I cannot sleep until I hear again. Nate has promised to write me every day, and we get daily Nebraska papers here every day, except two days in the week.

day, except two days in the week.

I Suppose Annie is with you by this time. I hope you will soon be able to reach home, and how glad we shall all be to see you once more. Your mother as well as myself must be in trouble about you. The news of your wound has brought general regret and deep

sympathy for you with it.

"Honor they Father and Mother" perhaps is as good a commandment as any of the 'ten", and it may truly be said you have done that to the fullest extent of its meaning as applied to humanity, and it may be truly said you never did anything to dishonor them to my knowledge, and I hope and pray that your life (according to the promise) may be long upon the land, and that in due time you may be able to do the lion's share of subduing rebels, and haning northern copperheads and traitors of the north if you can catch or trap them.

I will not say anything about the Indian raids and scares gotten up at Omaha, the murders at Elkhorn that did not take place, nor my orn insignificant affairs until all is well with you. My prayers are continually with and for you. I never lay my head on my pillow at night without thinking of you, and often lay awake at the noon-hours of night fearing some accident may befall you. May God protect you from fatal rebels and return you safe home."

The first time my wound was dressed at Greenfield, everyone got around to see it. I was lying on the sofa and my little daughter Ella clambed up on the head of the sofa and watched the Dr. dressing me. All at once, she fell over on me in a dead faint. The sight of the wound overcame here. After that I kept children out of

the operating room. It took them a long time to bring her to and created a great excitement.

On August 31st, we received the first news of the Battle of Jonesboro, the result of the flank movement which my wound prevented me from taking part in, although I had made every preparation for the move. Col. Jesse L. Phillips' time had expired and he went out of the service. He was a splendid officer -- one of the best cavalry officers I ever saw. General McPherson, General Sherman and myself made every effort to get him advanced in rank so he could be given a command in the cavalry. He had been commanding a regiment of mounted infantry and was never sent out on an expedition that he did not fight and win. While he was a fearless and brave man, still he was prudent and his men had great confidence in him and I was very sorry to see him leave the service. had been serving as my Chief of Staff after Col. Mersey left.

On September 1st, I received the following letter from my father:

Elkhorn City. Sept. 1" 1864.

"We are all more than rejoiced to hear of your convalescence. We feel thankful beyond description, and before you leave for the army, we want you to be sure and come to Council Bluffs; we are very desirous you should. You know that there is a "Big event" to come off at your house the 4th of October, and it is necessary that you should be there with Annie to make it a bigger one. Nate is especially desirous that you should be present, and you know he is the most interested in the affair and should by all means be gratified. So do come without fail. I know Sherman must give you a furlough under the circumstances of your health if you request it. I tell you it will be a big affair, and but one more such to happen in our family -- how can you stay back in such an emergency? Now come along because I want rather to see you, Annie and the little Dodges than any of the same name living on the face

of the globe.

There is much excitement up the Platte Valley about the Indians. I suppose the Copperheads and Bushwhackers are among them. The inhabitants have all left above Cottonwood and their ranches are all burned; and many have left the Elkhorn River, while others have packed up their goods already to leave. I think they act cowardly and a greater set of cowards down not exist than live in Omaha. Some 400 Omaha iIndians passed through here from their hunt, having been driven from the Republican by the Sioux, and that caused the greatest furor you ever heard of. Omaha shut up all her stores, got out picket guardm &c. never attempting to move West, to assist th citizens who have given them their territory, but just trembling and looking out for their dear selves. The Omahas camped on the hill just above Walnut Creek, and I slept in the old cabin alone as usual. No harm done, they pushed on again in the early morning. Somebody saw the Indians at a distance and put for Omaha, hence the scare. The Sioux or Chevennes (Shians) have committed serious depredations on the Atchison route and above Kearney, and may do the same here, but most of the citizens do not believe they will come down this far. Council Bluffs are more frightened about bushwhackers and are organizing companies for home defence. I am now in the midst of haying, and shall put up about one hundred tons. We have a fine stock of young cattle, which is about all I can depend upon. Stock has always paid well, while procude of a farm has always been very uncertain. I am obliged to get half my hay at least from the Platte Valley, as I cannot obtain it on this side of the Elkhorn.

It is very hot today and I am nearly melted. Not a breath of air from where we are getting hay today, close under the

timber of Walnut Creek.

I would like to hear from you and Annie, and would like to know the particulars of your wound, &c. I have strong hopes of seeing you before long."

On September 2nd, I took my first walk out and received the news of the fall of Atlanta.

While I was at Greenfield, the nomination of McClellan for loaded with returning. President was made at Chicago and the trains for the delegation coming from Chicago and the trains for the delegation coming from Chicago at Greenfield where a portion of the Indiana delegation left it. It was about midnight. I was living close to the station and I heard three rousing cheers given for President C. Jeffers Davis, which was a great astonishment to me and gave me the first idea of how strong the cooperhead sentiment was in the norm. I wrote this fact to General Sherman and he answered in a long letter stating that when they got through with the rebels down there, they would dome back and take care of the rebels in the rear.

Oneday, while I was at Greenfeleld and was out walking, I saw two or three soldiers, who had veternaized, pulling a man off of a load of hay and beat him. I had my uniform on and as soon as they saw me they came to attention. I spoke, saying, "Boys, you should not do this. You will reflect upon the army and bring criticism upon it." The boys were respectful and said, "General, you won't think so when you here what this man did." They said that ever since they had been home, this man had tried to induce the soldiers to desert; that this man and others had been making a determined effort to keep them from returning and they proposed to put a stop ot it. As soon as I heard this, I turned on my heel and said nothing.

On September 30d, 1 received the following letter from my Assistant Adjutant General, Major Barnes, giving me the account of the movements of my command, the 16th corps:

Near Lovejoy, Ga.

"Atlanta at last is ours. Sherman's grand flank movement has so far been eminently successful. Hood has been completely outwitted. When the army withdrew from "before Atlanta" the Atlanta papers announced the Yankees falling back to the Chattahoochie, that we had abandoned the campaign, and that the Gate City was free from all dnager. This was published to the Army, and the Johnnies generally believed it. They held a big jubilee over it, and were still celebrating when word was brought that the Army of the Tennessee was advancing on Jonesboro. This put a new phase upon affairs, and caused the faces of the Johnnies to

somewhat elongate.

We marched from Atlanta to Shadna on the West Point railroad without opposition. The 29th of August was spent in destroying the road. On the 30th we advanced on Jonesboro, fighting Ross' Brigade of Cavalry nearly the whole distance. Hood by this time had news of our movement, and sent Hardee's and his own Corps to Jonesboro to meet us. Our advance, on the night of the 30th was a mile and a half from Jonesboro. Breastworks were thrown up during the night, and by 1 P. M. on the 31st our old friends made one of their favorite charges against our lines. The result wasthe old stereotyped one: The rebels were most beautifully whipped, losing heavily. A surgeon in The rebels Hardee's corps told me, that 2000 wounded from the corps came into hospital from this fight. While they were attacking us the 4th and 14th corps secured a lodgment on the railroad below Rough and Ready, and commenced destroying it, moving towardx us. On the evening of the 1st of September, the 14th corps joined on our left and immediately attacked the enemy on his flank. Davis captured ten pieces of artillery, and 1000 prisoners.

It is reported that Stanley with the 4th corps was in the rebel rear at 5 P. M. capturing his hospitals, but failed to move against his line, because of the lateness of the hour. His failing to attack, lost us the splendid fruits of a glorious victory. It is said that Sherman gave Stanley a good round cursing for this neglect. If this report is true, Stanley most certainly deserves the severest censure. On the night of the 1st, the enemy retreated from our front, and the next morning we followed

him to this point, where we found his breastworks.

The prospects are this morning, that Sherman is going to slack up his energies a little, and give us a breathing spell. On the night of the 1st, Hood evacuated Atlanta, blowing up his magazines of supplies, and destroying 80 cars of ammunition. Slacum occupied the city at 11 A. M. yesterday.

Your command is doing finely under General Ransom, and the Staff, at least, is very glad it fell into so good hands.
All send you their best regards, and hearty wishes for your

speedy recovery from your wound.

Let us hear from you often. We are all anxious to know how you are getting along. I believe Chamberlin is preparing a lengthy account of our marches and operations to send you."

I also received a letter from Captain Chamberlin who was present at my headquarters one time when we were discussing the taking of Atlanta. Captain Chamberlin in his letter says:

Near Lovejoy's Station, Setp. 4.

Do you remember how often you used to say while we were lying before Atlanta, that we would never take it until we cut loose from it and our communications and swung around to the south? We have spoken of it, and feel proud that your policy was the true one.

On September 5th, I, received a letter from Captain Morehouse telling me that James Hensal, Co. B. 7th Kansas Cavalry, was sentenced to five years imprisonment at Nashville, Tennessee. believe that the soldier was innocent of the charges preferred against him. This was one of the chief spies and the most active in my command and I immediately made an investigation and found that he was simply carrying out the orders and priveleges which he had as a spy and had been charged with smuggling and other things. The new men who had gone to the head at Nashville, treated him as a thief and it took a strong letter from me and also from General Sherman to get him discharged. This was a sad lesson to Hensel. He thought he was doing great work for the Governement and did not know what would have become of him if I had not happened to be alive. My Chief C.S.

On September 8th, Captain C. C. Carpenter sent me the following letter:

East Point, Ga., Sept. S, 1864.

I have thought while we were on the late expedition that as soon as the command got back I would write you.

It is now night, and we have just fairly into position here, where report says we are to remain for some time to rest, be paid off, &c. &c. I shall not attempt to tell you much about the late expedition; you know one person when connected with a certain command has but few facilities for learning what is going on

throughout the entire army.

The country over which we traversed was the best we have had at all, for marching an army compactly, and keeping it in such order that it could quickly be thrown into line and concentrated. One or two days in riding along I could see the column of the 15th A.C. on the left of a range of fields, the 17th A.C. on the right and the 16th in the centre; and the country was so level and so few streams, that by a few hours work with your Pioneer Corps, a road could be cut out through the fields, and strips of timber sufficient for a day's march of our corps. General Ransom got along very well, and is quite an energetic man; but the Corps thought things did not move as smoothly as if you had been in command. This was the generaly expression of men and officers, and I have no doubt there was some truth in it, as he of course, was not used to moving a separate army.

You know the movement cormenced the morning of the 26th, and on the 29th we laid over at Shadnah Church, near Fairburn on the West Point road, and tore up several miles of the road. The next day starting at 5 o'clock A. M., we had 14 miles to make to Jomesboro on the Macon road. General Kilpatrick was in the advance closely followed by the 16th corps. when about seven

miles out, skirmishing became pretty heavy in front of the 16th, the cavalry at one point fell back and the 2d Iowa infantry was pushed up to the front, which in conjunction with Welker's battery gave the rebels a start towards Jonesboro, and such an impetus that they did not make another halt for several miles.

We marched nearly all night; in fact, I was up all night getting up my things to the front. That night our Corps went into position north of Flint River; the Macon Railroad being only 1 1/2 miles distant. The Pioneer Corps were pushed forward, and in conjunction with the troops threw up some breastworks. The 31st was spent in cannonading and skirmishing; and the 1st of September resulted in the complete discomfiture of the enemy. On the morning of the 1st an order was read in the camps from General Sherman, that the rebel army was cut in two and that we "would follow and destroy them." It is said that what balked a part of General Sherman, which Sherman's plans was the officer commanding the 4th Corps, which was swung across the railroad at Rough and Ready and came down in the rear of Jonesboro, capturing the rebel hospitals &c at 5 P. M. putting off the attack until the next morning when Harded had withdrawn. General Jeff C. Davis and the 14th Corps is highly spoken of for good conduct on the First. It is also said that General Blair did not perform his part owing to getting lost. The casualties in the 16th in all their marches and fights

has been very light. The boys got plenty of green corn and sweet potatoes, and are in excellent health and good spirits. I shall try to feed them well now so that they will be prepared for future emergencies. I hope you will be we'l enough to have command when our next campaign commences, and this wish is shared by every man and officer in the army. I hope you got home where you could have rest and quiet without much pain from that wound. General Sherman's head quarters are in Atlanta. The Army of the Tennessee is here. There is only a water tank and single house at this place. It is mostly dense woods around the confluence of these

two roads. The Army of the Ohio is at Decatur.

I see this McClellan political movement looks pretty formidable. I hope he may not be elected, as I think it would be disastrous to our Republic, but I hope God will save our country whoever is elected Presddent. Hoping you will soon be well."

On September 10th, General Sherman nade his celebrated agreement with Gen. Hood's Confederate force for an armistus, running from September 12th until daylight on September 22, ten full days, from a point on the Macon road known as Rough and Ready and the country round about within a circle of two miles radius for the purpose of affording the people of Atlanta a safe means of removal to points south. He moved every citizen out of Atlanta the same as I had done out of Deca'ur and brought down upon his head the severe criticism not only of the enemy but of many of our people in the north and the south has, always held that against thim, it being one of their personal reasons for continuing their enmity so long.

and Des Moines On September 10th, I went to Davenport, Iowa and met there several friends, among them John A. Kasson.

-209-

time getting located. It took us from the morning of the 8th until the 11th, during which time the 16th corps moved three times, the 15th twice and the 17th twice.

We are now on the extreme right, joined on left by the 15 h, which crosses the railroad at East Point and is joined on its left by the 17th corps and which connects with the 14th corps.

I will try and get up a map showing our different positions, as illustrative of the large amount of brains displayed by somebody. Since our arrival here, we have been fixing up, getting Q. M. stores and making works &c. Sherman and Howard published congratulatory orders which I will send you; also my disclaimer. All age very busy getting up reports, and Clark desires me to urge you to get yours up at the earliest possible period.

The reports of brigade, division and corps will be in to

Department Head Quarters by tomorrow.

I will have copies of Fuller's, Corse's and my reports sent you as soon as they are done. Mine, of course, will only embrace

from the 19th Aug. to present time.

Howard has recommended me for Major General, and I presume the document will be favorably endorsed by Sherman, though I have no information on this point. Howard told me last night that Grant had ordered Sherman to pushthe enemy and keep him in our front by all means, and that in order to carry out these orders, a new campaign would be commenedd by the 1st of October; this, of course, is not known in the Army and will be a great disappointment to all, as a respite and general recruiting is anticipated, and officers expect that a reasonable proportion of them will be allowed to go home.

Howard is also talking of breaking up one corps and dividing it out to the other two. He suggested the following to me last night: "That the 4th division, 16th corps be sent to the 17th corps and the 2dn dividion to the 15th, and you placed in command of the 17th corps. Blair to be sent to the Mississippi River and organize the 16th corps out of the troops there belonging to the Department." He also said that he would have to consult with Blair about this change, as he "would not have a difficulty with the Blair family for the world." You see, therefore, that in all probability Blair's and Logan's interests ill be looked out for pro-

bably at your expense.

Though the General expressed his determination to retain a corps in the field for you, yet the Lord only knows what he will do with Logan and Blair bucking at him. Between you and I, General, he has shown great weakness in this last wovement, and he will not do, he will soon become a tool to be lead and controlled by stronger men. I say this to you that you may be fully advised as to the situation and for yourslef decide what will be the result. Howard says he wants to increase the command 5 or 8000 and get a cavalry regiment for each corps. He proposes to go to Memphis and get such forces as he may want to fill up, and send them here before he leaves there. This is not decided, however.

The army of the Tennessee now numbers 22,000 aggregate, with 18,000 muskets. Canby has got his own commanders along the river, and they are instructed to pay no attention to Sherman's or Howard's orders. Morgan L. Smith and others went down the river have no show and are doing nothing. It looks as though the Department of the Tennessee had ceased to exist, and Sherman's control on the Miss-

isssippi been suspended.

Major Osborn Chief of Artillery, told me he wanted to send for Col. Lothrop, Chief of Artillery of the Corps to be at these Head Quarters in that capacity.

He has also directed that the artillery be changed, so as to

have 2/3 light 12's and 1/3 3 inch Rodmans, when a division has but two battereis, one to be rifled the other light 12's. this makes a change in the 4th division that is not satisfactory to the ba tteries.

-210-

The brigade at Rome is scattered, two regiments of it have gone to Pulaski. I am trying to get them here, but think I shall not succeed. The 27th Ohio will probably be returned to us soon. Capt. Kossak, Engineer, was ordered to report to blair, and has actually moved over there. I made a row about it last night, and Reese has promised to return him and give us a good engineer for each division. Tiedeman you know is a perfect stick, and his aids in the division are but little better. Van Esmo has been ordered by Sherman to report to his regiment. Col. Brover and Major Martin of the 2.7th New York were both mortally wounded in the fight on the 17th at Jonesboro. The regiment lost about 90 men killed and wounded. Major Hamill, 2nd Iowa, was badly wounded in the advance on Flint River on the 30th ult; his regiment and the 7th Iowa lost 20 men that day.

Lt. Col. Titus, 81st Ohio was wounded in the leg at Joresboro; he has been discharged. The Doctors are all leaving us. Gay is going to be ordered to Columbus, and some five or six others are

getting out of the service on certificate of disability.

Chamberlin is going to resign. Refeild and Parks have tendered their resignations, and any quantity of line officers are tendering their resignations. I think that Sherman's flattering assurance in his first congratulatory order- that after a month's rest- we should enter upon a "fine winter campaign" in view of the last four months' experience, the officers cannot see it in the same light with the enthusiastic Commanding General, and are therefore making an effort to get out. Barnes has applied for

a leave, but I think if we are to move soon, we cannot let him go.

The members of your staff are all well, and often speak of
you, and we all look anxiously for your return. During the movement on Jonesboro and to Lovejoy's and return, I was greatly indebted to the gentelemen composing your staff; they were energetic and always on hand, and though I worked themvery hard they offered no complaint, but chestfully complied with a l orders. Tiedeman used to get lost several times a day, but we got along and did not

miss him.

I learn of your gradual improvement with much satisfaction and only regret that it is not more rapid.

The nominee of the Chicago Convention and their platform, gives us courage in the army to believe that Mr. Lincoln will be reelected. We are now looking anxiously for the returns from the draft, which we expect will be promptly and rigidly enforced. If the administration does not enforce the draft with det rmination, they will lose great strength in my opinion. Mr. Lincoln must show back-bone now.

It is a question in my mind whether I am doing you mustice or great injustice in writing you these long letters. Probably by the time you have waded through this, you will be able to express yourself in the language of the prince,"No more at

present.

Sherman and Hood have agreed upon a truce the better to enable them to get the people out of Atlanta. The truce extends to 2 miles around Rough and Ready and on the roads leading from Atlanta to that part, and thence to Lovejoy's station. Sherman is making a clean sweep of the inhabitants of Atlanta.

You will appreciate the importance of your early tettnn to us from what I have said about the proposed reorganization. I shall watch your interests and that of the Corps constantly and do my best to keep all right, but you well know how much better you could do this yourself.

On September 16th, I received this letter from W. S. Peabody, an old school-mate of mine:

-, J.J. 1 -

## Hilton, Head, Sept. 16, 1864.

"Do you remember a long time ago when we started "up country" to go to school at ewbury, Vermont? I went to Dartmouth afterwards and you to Norwich, Vermont, where the military training you received added to your native ability and Yankee go-ahead-ativeness have gained for you a national reputation. It gives me pleasure to hear from time to time through the papers of the brav-

ery of another Mass. man and an old schoolmate.

I studied law with my Brother-in-law, Dean Peabody, Esq., in Lynn, Mass., practiced there until last winter, when I cam here to purchase a plantation and try my hand at cotton raising, but the land selling so high, I concluded it a more promising field to go into trade, and so did. Business is not very brisk now, owing to the large number of troops sent to General Grant from this depart-

ment. We expect more this winter.

I married Mary C. Hews, of Lynnfield, Centre, Mass., November 8th, 1862, and one small soldier aged 10 months is now growing finely and proving himself a wonderful child, of course, as usual. I saw your mother last year when visiting the East, and think she looks very much as she did when we were school boys.

My sister Matilda, your old school mamm, lives in Lynn. She married Dean Peabody you may remember. He practices law in Lynn and does an excellent business. My sister Melicent who married

Dean's brother Joseph lives in Lowell, Mass., where he continues is old business of teaching. She has three boys and one girl.

Perhaps it may interest you to hear something of military matters here. The Department of the South remains under command of General Foster, the defender of Washington, N. C., and he is conceded by all I think, to be a good soldier as well as a fine genteleman. The number of troops under his command does not warrant any every extensive offensive movements, and this place is so easily defended by gun-boats a handful of men can hold the Sea Islands, for if the rebs could get on them, the question of getting off would be quite another, as the navy can slip in behind them by the numerous creeks and shell every square mile on all these islands.

As it is publicly announced by officers both of the army and navy, I suppose it is not contraband to say that an attack may be expected at Charleston about the 25th of this month, and they say they are determined to capture it at all hazards.

Your glorious victories under General Sherman are the praise of every tongue, and now if General Grant can keep Lee where he is, wont the rebs be fast approaching that famous "last ditch,"

I also received at this time, notice of Captain Chamberlin's resignation. He had been on my staff.

From Davenport I went south to St. Louis and from there to St. Joseph and taking steamer there returned to Council Bluffs. On my way north, I had to stop at St. Louis and St. Joseph for a rest but the citizens of my town had prepared to give me a public receptionk although I had endeavored to avoid it. The contract to council passed the following resoluturions: ;

1864.

On September 17th, the citizens of Council Bluffs extended to General G. M. Dodge, a public welcome, on his arrival at his old home. The reception speech was made by Captain Crawford, to which General Dodge responded as follows:

"Ladies and Gentlemen: You cannot exepct me to reply suably to the eloquent welcome of my friend Crawford, nevertheless I You cannot exepct me to reply suitappreciate the motive that brings so many of my townsmen to greet me on my return home. There is nothing so cheering to a soldier as the knowledge that his conduct meets the approbation of his friends at his own home. It cheers him on, and sustains him amid dangers and hardships that otherwise would break him down.

One year ago, the army I am connected with marched from Memphis across the State of Mississippi, Alabama and Tennessee and is resting after penetrating the heart of the Southern confederacy. It has just finished a campaign unequaled in its severity and successes. Four months of fighting brought us to Atlanta, and one of those bold moves that that Great Captain Sherman is celebrated for, has safely and securely planted in the great strategic point of the south-west.

No efforts of the rebels can remove it or its war-worn flag

which floats to the breeze from the steeples of the Gate City.

Let uslook at the present state of our country and see what is the duty of every citizen. With Sherman's army in Atlanta, which virtually gives us all of Mississippi, Alabama and two-thirds of Georgia, with the choice where and when to strike. And wherever Sherman chooses to go, there must Hood follow he can no longer control our movements, for we are master of the situation. With Grant firmly planted before Richmond preparing for one of those daring and strategic movements that he is so celebrated for, and which, I firmly believe will defeat Lee's army and give us Richmond; with the enemy's ranks depleted and with no effort on their part to prepare for the future, all their energies being bended to take care of the present, and all their hopes for final success depending upon a divided north—it appears to me your duty is plain. Fill up our ranks, show a solid front, a united north--and our army will soon defeat and conquer theirs. Then, and not till then, can we have a peace that shall be lasting--one that you and I and eve yone can subscribe to, and one that will be no dishonor to the south.

Their last hope falls when they preceive our armies filling up--our victorious columns pressing forward and penetrating even the Carolinanas. I say to youto give them no comfort; let them know that traitors, no matter now much you desire peace, can have any aid or sympathyywhile our flag is not recognized on every foot of territory comprising the old United States.

Ladies and gentlemen, I heartily thank you for your generous welcome. I trust in a few days I can return to Sherman's army and take with me your hearty support and cordial aid."

 $\label{eq:while in Council Bluffs I wrote the following letter to General Sherman:$ 

September 19, 1864.

I arrived here last week and was in hopes I could return by this time, but my wound is giving me a good deal of trouble. The bone was injured and will work our, whichkeeps the wound open, though it now looks as though it would soon heal. Since I heard you were resting, I have been more contented and will get back before you move, sick or well.

The fall of Atlanta came in a very opportune moment and has put a different phase upon matters in the north, and it will aid greatly in enforcing the draft, as well as obtaining recruits. There will be no serious opposition to it. People are begining to appreciate the great event our army has accomplished, and I hope will show it by filling up our ranks.

On September 21st, General Ransom again wrote me in relation to conditions at the front:

East Point, Sept. 21, 1864.

Very much to my astonishment, I received a letter from you today postmarked Des Moines, Iowa. If it had been Denver City I should not have been more surprised and I think if the "hole in your head" doesn't get well too soon I may reasonably expect you next communication to hail from the Rocky Mountains.

communication to hail from the Rocky Mountains.

Well, I am delighted that youare able to travel, but, I most say you are imprudent to be running around so soon in a country where railroad communication is so limited.

As I predicted in a former letter, the breaking up of this corps is decided upon, and Corps goes to the 15th and the 4th division to the 17th corps. It is all fixed and I expect the order totomorrow. I believe it is General Howard's intention to offer you the 16th corps to be made up from troops on the Mississippi river, though I am not fully advised on this point.

I have heard but one opinion in the corps about this matter and that is one of great disgust and dissatisfaction. All regret the consolidation and particularly when they know that we are to lose you. However, I don't see any way to prevent it and can only add my own regrets to those of all the command.

I shall try and keep the Left Wing Head Quarters running until

I shall try and keep the Left Wing Head Quarters running until you arrive, so that you can make such dispositions as you see fit, and I hope that you will return at the earliest possible moment. Barnes, Parks, Chamberlin, Dr. Gay and Refeild have gone home; Gay and Barnes on leave and the others have resigned. Fullerton will resign in a few days and Burnham will wait until you return.

Blair has gone home, and Logan will leave in a few days. General Howard sent for Corps commanders yesterday and got up a joint recommendation of Blair and Logan and himself; of Ransom, M. L. Smith, Leggett, Giles A. Smith, Woods, Hazen and Corse to be made Major Generals. For Brigadier Generals, In which I joined, Colonels Potts, Swayne, Williamson, Jones, Mallory, Willfler and Wood, and Lt. Col. Phillips. I suppose they will all be promotedin a horn.

Hood has left the Macon road and swung around with his whole force on the West Point Road with Head quarters (yesterday) at Palmeth Stations 18 miles from here. He has with him a large pontoon train of 100 wagons: query- what the devil is he going to do? The exchanged prisoners- 2,000 are coming in. We get a few. They are all men that have been taken in this campaign. Let me hear from you."

On the same date, I received a telegram from Mr.  $^{\mathrm{T}}$ .  $\boldsymbol{\mathcal{C}}$ . Durant in which he asked me to come to New York as soon as I was able to travel.

On September 22nd, General Howard issued his order assigning the 6wo divisions of the 16th Army Corps to the 15th and 17th corps thus disposing of the Left Wing of the 16th Army Corps in the field.

On September 23rd, General Fuller wrote me the following letter:

East Point, Septe. 23, 1864.

I was gratified on yesterday by a perusal of your letter from Des Moines to General Ransom- but we all wondered where the d--l we should next hear of you, and felt inclined to believe that if you should get another severe wound, we shall hear of you on the Rocky Mountains. I sincerely hope, General, that you will take care of yourself and not meet with any drawbacks:

This morning we have the order breaking up our "Left Wing" and putting this division into the 17th corps. Many of us feel a regret at the sundering of old ties, and especially as this arrangement will be likely to separate us from you, under whom we have served so long, and with whom we gained so fair a name.

will you be assigned to the 16th corps on the river, or will you have an appropriate command here? In either case, I beg to be remembered.

We like General Ransom very much, and he enjoys also the confidence of all. I thinkwe like him better than almost anybody who might be put here, because we know him to be a firm friend to you.

~/T

I have some hope of getting a leave next month. If you are in Indiana at that time, I would cheerfully spend a day for the sake of seeing you, as I might go home via Indianapolis as well as via Cincinnati.

On the same date I received a letter from Col. W. T. Clark, the Assistant Adjutant General of the Army of the Tennessee in which he said:

In the new organization, the General intends to give you two divisions at least. Logan and Blair are on leave; Ransom commands the 17th Corps, Osterhaus the 15th. The "glory has departed from Israel." I wish I could write in a more cheerful vein; but I am not contented and never can be under the present regimen.however, I cannot consent to leave this Army. God knows how I have labored for its welfare, how I have worked for its friends, and see what reward I have reaped.

On September 27th, General Howard issued his order placing
Major General N. J. T. Dana, temporerily in command of the 16th
Army Corps including the combined districts of Memphis and Vicksburg. The portion of the 17th Corps on the Mississippi River
were put into the 16th Corps. I had no knowledge of this
order. It appears it was sent to me at Greenfield but I did not
receive it and only heard of it later on when I reached General
Grant's headquarters. This order was a great injustice to Major Gen.
A. J. Smith who commanded the Right Wing of the 16th Army Corps
and myself, who commanded the Left Wing, both in active service,
while Dana had never served in the Army of the Wenn, and had
never been in the field. Why General Sherman allowed it, knowing
Ceneral Grant's preferences, I do not know but when the order
reached General Grant, it was held up. He saw the injustice.

On September 28th, I received a letter from Col. Thomas
Benton who was a citizen of Council Bluffs and an old friend and
who took into the field from that point, the 29th Iowa:

We felt sad when we first heard of your wound, supposing it to be mortal, but are much rejoiced to learnthat you are recovering. From the papers, I infer that you are at Davenhort, and hence write you at that place, and as may letter is on business, I must say by way of apology do not trouble yourself about it unless you have so far recovered as to do so without any inconvenience.

I am very anxious to get my regiment transferred to your Corps. There are many reasons why this would be proper. It was recruited in the region of the State in which you live and rendezvoused at a camp which bears your name and is largely composed of your immediate acquaintances and friends. I have one of the finest regiments in the service- one of which you would have just cause to feel particularly proud. We have performed a great deal of hard service for which we get but little credit. Our situation has been an unfortunate one. Our lot was cast in a

\_ 77 #2\_

regular Lager Beer (Dutch) organization and we have had to submit to enough of their arrogance to sicken a dog. A Dutch Division Commander and a Dutch Commander for each brigade and then everything else you can name is Dutch-staff, batteries, escorts, orderlies, &c. Last spring we had for a short time a noble brigade commander, General Rice, since dead. We have raised a fund of \$2,000 to erect a monument to his memory. I once thought these German officers were just the thing, but I am now convinced that they are a great humbug and half of them cowards. They are great on style and arrogance in camp about permentn posts, but in the face of the enemy they keep a respectful distance. We can seldom transact business at Head Quarters without being insulted by some upstart.

We are tired of this kind of life and we want once more to get where we can associate with white folks. Our brigade is now commanded by a Colonel whose only recommendation is that he kept a beer saloon in St. Louis, and can drink 4 gallons of lager and a quart of rot-gut a day. You will ask why we do not prefer charges. What is the use of doing so with a division commander of the same stripe and court ditto. But enough of this.

Our officers and men are allownious to be with you and we wish you to use your influence to have us transferred. General Steele has always treated both myself and regiment with great courtesy and I would not wish in any way to implicate him. He appreciates our services and would regret to part with us and the Dutch would be unwilling to let us go because they want us to do their drudgery and fighting for them.

I think with the aid of Kasson and our delegation, backed by your own personal application, you can get the change made. I do not wish it to be known that it is in consequence of any complaint from us, but on the ground of our mutual acquaintance, friendship, &c.

Please let me hear from you when convenient. You are a good engineer, and if you can engineer this thing through, you will add to your reputation for scientific skill and place us under lasting obligations. It provokes me to think that Iowa is sending to the field her chosen bands of patriots to be domineered over by men just from Europe and unable to speak our language. When they give an order you cannot tell whether it is shoulder arms, or ground arms.

All is quiet here at present. I trust you will soon be able to resume your duties and that we may join you this fall. 2

I left Council Bluffs and reached New, York on October 5th.

I received permission from General Grant to visit his head-quarters under the following order:

Hd.Qrs.Armies of the U.S. City Point,
Virginia, October 7, 1864.
Special authority is hereby granted Major General G. M. Dodge,
16th Army Corps, now in New York, wounded, to visit these Head
Quarters in person. Military authorities will pass him accordingly.
By command of Lieut. Gen. Grant, T.S.Bowers, Asst. Adj. General."

I immediately went to City Point. On my arrival there, I was cordially greeted and every attention ossible was given me while I was there and I was given every opportunity to see the great Army of the Potomac. General Rawlins, the Chief of Staff, took me to visit all the Corps commanders and also General Meade. When I arrived at General Meade's headquarters, General Meade was in a great rage at his staff for something they had done or failed to do.

P. Parl

It is the first time I ever saw a commanding officer os abusive and I was rather astonished and said to Rawlins that I thought we hal better leave. He said, "No; don't mind this; it will be over in a few minutes." General Meade received me very cordially but I did not see any where in that Army, the friendship which existed between the different commanders or Corps and Divisions which existed in our Army in the West. There was a disposition to criticise what had been done or what they had failed to do. General Rufus Ingles, who was the Chief Quarter Master, took me It was a long building which had been up to see his sample room. erected to keep the samples of everything furnishesd the troops and it was complete. When I returned to head-quarters, General Grant said to me, "Dodge, if you had Rufus! sample room, it would be all you would need for your corps." I acquiesced in this, because the Army of the West had no such equipment as the Army of the Potomac had. They were always based on tide water and could ♥ Commissary received full supplies of quarter masters stores all the time, while we were always far from base and could only obtain those things when we reached a railroad communication where they could be brought to us, so that our armies always lacked camp delicacies equipage, clothing and everything of that kind.

Every evening there was a bon fire Built out in front of
the quarters and we used to sit around that fire and talk. General
Grant was very communicative to me about all his campaigns from
the time he personally joined the Army of the Potomac until then.
He told me of his successes and his failures. The failures generally
came from the failure of his orders being promptly carried out or
from some misunderstanding of orders and one evening I innocently
asked him who was to blame for these failures, saying that if it
had occured in the West, some of us would have lost our heads.
He locked at me, smiled and said, "That has not yet been determined."
The fact is, General Grant never criticised an officer to others.
While I was at City Point, there was an order issued to General
Butler to try to break through his line in Alchmond or to make a
demonstration of some kind and General Grant ment me up on his
boat with an aid to see this movement. We arrived there early in

9 moent (2) Pg. 28 4.

Extracts from letters of General John A. Rawlins to his wife; Speaks of this movement of

City Point, October 12th, 1864. General Dodge of the Western Army is here. It does one's heart good to meet one from the army that has made such a bright record for its country's honor and its own fame. I can shake the hands of these veterans and heroes with something of the thrill of joy and pride that prevades my being when I take hold of the hand of my own dear wife after months of absence.

General Quimby, formerly of the old Army, is also here.

He is, however, not in the service, having long since resigned.

Major General Doyle of the English service is here. He is the least English and most American of any Englishman I have ever met.

He sympathizes with us in our struggle to maintain our governmental authority, and furthermore he believes we will succeed.

City Point, October 17th, 1864. General Butler, although acting under positive orders not to attack the enemy in fortified positions, did so attack, and lost for us fully 1,000 men, killed, wounded and prisoners, without any corresponding damage, if damage at all, to the enemy. I am free to say I fear the continuance of General Butler in command will some day work disaster of a serious character to our arms. But General Grant has had to deal with such men from the beginning and has succeeded. I therefore have hopes he will succeed with this one.

the worning and went out to the front and saw the troops move out and attack the entrenchments while another force was to turn the flank. I watched the movements of these troops carefully. I was greatly astonished to see them get almost up to the entrenchments and there stand and fire without seeking shelter, taking the enemy's fire steadily, while with us, under such circumstances, our boys would immediately have covered themselves either by getting behind the trees or digging pits, but this line stood up until they were ordered to retreat. I saw that the movement was a failure and returned pretty early to dity Point. When I arrived there General Grant met me and asked me how matters progressed up there and I told him I thought the movement was a failure. He seemed greatly astonished at what I said and I said to myself probably he had had different information or later information and I had better keep quiet. He questioned me pretty closely and I told him what I had seen but I said I was not present to see what occurred on the extreme right. As we were sitting around the camp fire about 10 oclock, he commenced receiving dispatches that put a different face upon the attack from what his early dispatches had and he turned to me and said, "Dodge, you are right; it is a failure." I learned afterwards that the dispatched which were poured into him were of a tenor of great success. I saw Insert Rawlin's lefter @ that he was greatly disappointed. Thile I was there, there were a great many recruits coming to that army from the dr aft but General Ralinws told me that the desertions were about equal to the recruits and that there was a good deal of pessimistic feeling among the officers. They seemed to think that General Grant had reached the end of his success and there was a great many asking for leaves; it was even said that Hancock was disappointed and had asked to be relieved and I believe was and went to Pennsylvania or some place to raise a reserve corps. I saw and felt this feeling but General Grant's whole talk and everything you could gather from bim was very optimistic. He had no doubt of his ability to defeat and to destroy Ge ral Lee's army at the next. waiting for the time to move and making praparamove And

optomistic tions for it. I myself imbibjed his feeling and that of all his staff.

While I was here, I was told of the order of General Howard organizing the 16th Army Corps and General Grant talke to me about a movement upon Mobile from Vicksburg. While the had heard of the order of putting Dana at the head of the 16th Arm Corps, as I remember it, they whad not heard of my being assigned to that command. I saw from General Grant's talk to me in relation to it that he had in mind the sending of this corps from Vicksburg to the rear of Mobile, which I was to command and a movement by water from New Orleanse in connection with the navy.

When I was at City Point, there is no doubt that these were the darkest days of Grant's career in the East for the country had begun to talk of his campaign as not being successful, his great battles as butcheries and there was a great deal of criticism of them.

When I was starting back to my command, General Grant requested me to call on President Lincoln. He did not give me any reason why I should go, but, of course, a request from him was an order, and I went to Washington on his steamer. There was on board this steamer, General Rufus Ingles, the Quartermaster of his Army, and Major-General Doyle, Commander of hims British forces in Canada. Major-General Doyle was an old, gray-haired man. I was a young man and the one thing that troubled the General was that he could not understand why I, so young, could have the same rank as he did--an old man sixty years of age.

When I arrived at Washington and went to the White House, to call on President Lancoln, I flet Senator Harlan of the State in the ante-room and he took me in to see the President. It happened to be at the hour when the President was receiving the crowd in the ante-room next to his room. Senator Harlan took me up to him immediately and presented me to him. President Lincoln received me cordially and said he was very glad to see me. He asked me to sit down while he disposed of the crowd.

notin

\_995\_

I sat down and waited; I saw him take each person by the hand and in his kindly way dispose of them. To an outsider, it would seem that they all got what they wanted for they seemed to go away happy. I sat there for some time, and felt that I was overstaying my time with him, so stepped up and said that I had merely called to pay my respects and that I had no business, so would say goodbye. President Lincoln turned to me and said, "If you have time, I wish you woul d wait; I want to talk to you." I sat down again and waited quietly until he had disposed of the crowd. When he was through, he took me into the next room. He saw that I was ill-at-ease, so he took down from his desk a little book called "The Gospel of Peace." I think it was written by Artemus Ward and was very humprous. He opened the book, crossed his legs and began to read a portion of a chapter, which was so humerous that I began to laugh and it brought me to myself. When he saw that he had gotten me in his power, he laid the book down and began to talk to me about my visit to the Army of the Potomac and That I saw. He did not say a single word about my own command or about the West, showing his whole interest was in the Army of the Potomac. While we were sitting there talking, we were called to lunch. During the meal he talked about the Army of the Potomac and about Grant, and finally led up to the place where he asked me the question of what I thought about Grant, and what I thought about his next campaign. Just as he asked the question we got up from the table. I answered, "Mr. President, you know we western men have the greatest confidence in General Grant; I have no doubt, whatever, that in this next campaign he will defeat Lee-how, or when he is to do it, I cannot tell, but I am sure of it." He took my hand in both of his and very solemnly said, "You don't know how glad I am to hear you say that." I did not appreciate then what a great strain he was under--not until reading Welles' Celebrated Diary, showing that Lincoln had no person around him to advise him, that everything he did was from his own thoughts and initiation. It is a wonder to me that he

ever got through the War so successfully. I did not know then that Lincoln's table was piled with letters demanding the change of Crant, declaring that his campaign was a failure and wanting to have a different commander sent, etc. When I was ready to leave I thanked President Lincoln for what he had done for me and asked if there was anything I could do for him. He said, "If you don't care, I would like to have you take my respects to your Army."

After my visit with President Lincoln, I went immediately to New York where I again met the Union Pacific people and consulted with them in relation to their plans for the future and I had an understanding with them that as soon as I left the Army, I was to go back on the Union Pacific road. From New York I went for a visit to my old boy-hood home in Peabody, Danvers, Rowely, etc. I received a dispatch from Capt. J. M. Wing from Atlanta asking to be ordered to immediately report to me and telling me that on account of not being able to procure forage longer at Atlanta, he had sent to Capt. Bemjamin at Rome, Georgia, all my horses, office equipment, printing press, blanks and cook. Captain Benjamin agreed to furnish forage and to take care of them until my return.

On the evening of October 18th, I left New York on the evening for Boston boat. I met the Rev. Alfred A. Putnam who had been a school-boy chum and this is his account of our meeting and also of my reception at Fanuel Hall:

That was a most interesting episode and added very much to the interest of a great political meeting in Poston. It was just after he was wounded before Atlanta, the time when he was reported dead. Very grapic sketches had appeared in hhe press, but finally it was announced that he was living, was recovering, had finally it was announced that he was living, was recovering, had a furlough and was going on his way East. Well, I was on the boat a furlough and was going from New York to Boston. I noticed a military on the sound, going from New York to Boston. I noticed a military on the sound, going from New York to Boston. I noticed a military on the sound, going from New York to Boston. I noticed a military on the sound, going from New York to Boston. I noticed a military on the sound at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after these long years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after the years of separa I looked at him, and at length, after the year

Well, we both went next monring on our arrival in Boston to the Parker house and I studied how I should manage this. I got hold of a paper, a morning paper, and found a notice of the meeting signed by Hon. Josiah Cuincy as the Chairman of the Committee of arrangements. So I sent a messenger to him at once, early in the morning saying that "Major General Dodge of the West, has just arrived; and of course, as so many distinguished men, soldiers and ctilians are to be present, it would add greatly to the interest of the meeting to have him there; I believe that you will invite him." Well, the Chairman lost no time in inviting the General to be present at the meeting, seating myself where I could the the speaker. The evening papers had not come out, you see, and there was no chance for the public to know that Major Gen. Dodge was to be there.

When the meeting was assembled, early in the afternoon.

Quote two or three o'clock, the Mayor came up on the platform with a great retinue of very distinguished men; men in regimentals and badges of honou, and there was Major Gen. Dodge with his shoulder straps. He was assigned a very front seat on the platform. Chas. G. Loring, one of the most prominent men in Boston, presided. I do not know whether he knew Gen. Dodge was there or not. I suppose he did, but then he had his speech all written out and had no time to make any alterations; so he read his speech and referred to other great soldiers, Grant, Sherman, &c, but made no mention of Gen. Dodge. Probably, he did not know that Dodge was there; but if he did, which it seems must be the case, was not quickwitted enough, or first unate enough, to get it properly inserted into his introductory speech, as the presiding officer of the occasion. That left Edward Everett a capital opporunity to take all the glory to himself, you know, and make a great dash as an orator; and he didn't allow the epportunity to slip him. He was a man who could do it to the greatest possible advantage, and so he said:

"The honorable gentamen who presdies over the meeting has recalled a long list of great and glorious names of men who have served their country as soldiers, who have won great victories, who are deserving of their country's honor and praise; but there is one gallant chieftain whom he omitted to mention in the broad roll, and whom they were all so fortunate as to have present with them there, on that occaion. He referred, he said, to the noble, brave soldier from the West, Major Gen. Dodge, just from the meat of war, who has come from Washington bringing us the intelligence that all is well with the Army of the Potomac." By that time Everett had raised the addience to the greatest pitch of excitement. This man had been wounded, you know, before Atlanta and the country had thought him to be dead, and there he was on the platform. The audience called out from all parts of the Hall, "Dodge! Dodge! Dodge! and he had to come forward.

There he stod with the equaletts and right alongside him, the most splendid orator of the day. I always thought it was one of the happiest occasions, and grandest opportunit es, one of the most brilliant successes for the orator in the world, and Everett knew how to do it, you know. Just at the right point of time when the excitement was at white heat, with that quiver of his finger, you know, he stepped forward. "Yes, fellow citizens, yes! and bearing honorable scars on his brow." As he said this, he touched the General's brow with his finger. "Bearing honorable scars, won in deadly conflict." But it was an awful, awful scene of excitement and enthusiasm. Nothing could have been bebter than that or more affecting; you could not conceive of anything like it. But how they applauded the General!

When the Hon. Edward Everett brought me forth to the audience, they demanded a speech, but I was not used to public speaking so confined myself to telling of matters as I saw them at City

Point and referred briefly to our victories in the West, which was very enthiusiastically received. The audience in the Hall was a very impressive one to me. It was composed of old bald
gray kaired he aded men; the hall was crowded and people stood up all over the house and the occasion being in behlaf of the army in the field, aroused the enthusaism to the greatest pitch I ever saw and I was greatly impressed with it.

on Section 20th, I went to Peabody, Mass. and stopped with my Uncle, Alonso P. Phillips and remained with him during the 21st. On the evening of the 21st, a great receiption was given me at Peabody, which had been my home during a part of my boyhood days. They had a torch light procession that was over a mile in length and ended at the Peabody Institute where I was given the reception. Speeches were made by old residents, especifically one by the minister of the Universalist Church which my father attended when he lived there. Nothing could have been more cordialy than the reception I received in Peabody. All the people whom I knew came to see me personally and as I rode at the head of the procession in the evening, the side walks were wrowded and I was kept standing during the entire distance in response to calls and cheers for me.

On October 22nd, I went to North Danvers where I was born and was received there by citizens at the Town Hall and was driven all over that country and shown the different places of interest, especially Whittier's home. Whittier was a great friend of my father; I have often heard my father repeat his poems.

On October 25th, I went to Rowley and visited my Uncle, Benj. Dodge. There was no town here but the people from all over the country gathered at his home and I was given a reception there. This was where my father was born and where the Dodges had lived for generations and occupied the same farm and worked in the same mill and which is owned still by the Dodges.

-000m

From Rowley I went to Salem and visited Daniel Haskell, who was a very old friend of my father. In the evening there was a reception for me in Mechaniles Hall and I was received Boutwell and Moses Kimball. My reception there was also very enthusiastic, the hall was jammed full; xxx the compliment paid me by Boutwell and Kimball raised the house to a high pitch of excitement. When I stepped up to respond to the call of the audience, after Boutwell had concluded, a lady in the gallery threw h a bouquet at me. I did not see it and it struck me on the head. The blood spurted out of my wound and a horrow went out over the crowd which was hard to describe. It staggered me but did not take me from my feet. I stepped back a steppoor two and said that no harm had been done; that I was nothurt, which greatly relieved them, but I saw running through the hall all the time I was speaking, a terror 🗣 fear that I had been hurt. After this was over, my Doctor told me I would have to quit. I was not gaining in strength and what had occurred at Mechanics Hill frightened him a good deal more than it did me and from there I immediately avoided any further receptions. I went to Andover and visited Mr. E. Upton who had been my school teache and from there, on my return to Salem, I met Mr. Allen W. Dodge of Hamilton, the father of Mary Abby Dodge, known as Gaile Wamilton, who had often written me letters during the war.

On October 27th, I took the cars for the West. I arrived at Greenfield, Ind. at 6 A. M. on the 30th. On that day, I received a letter from Col. C. Cadle giving an account of the death of Col. T. E. G. Ransom, while at the head of the 17th Army Morps. It is as follows:

Rome, Ga., Sept. 30, 1864.

Before you receive this, you will have heard of the death of General Ransom.

Knowing you to be one of his most sincere friends I con sider it my duty to give you some information in relation to his death, more especially as he mentioned your name as he was dying, and wished to be remembered to you. The General died at 2;25 o'clock on yesterday afternoon about six miles from here, of dysentery.

He was taken first with it at East Point on the 1st inst. just as we were starting on our last campaign. He refused to stop but continued on in command of the Corps until the 18th when he was obliged to relinquish it. This was at Gaylesville, Ala. He remained there attended by Lt. Tridway and myself with a Surgeon until the 29th when the movements of the army made it necessary for us to go to Rome. We started with him on a litter, but on the second day when within six miles of Rome, he commenced to sink. We took him into a house and in about four hours he died.

His death was calm and peaceful. He said he was ready to due but would much rather have been killed in battle. He gave full directions in regard to everything and spoke of all his friends.

directions in regard to everything and spoke of all his friends.

His death was as his life, heroic. The country was lost one of her best officers and his friends have lost their best and noblest friend.

noblest friend.
Capt. Doane and Lt. Tridway went north with his remains.

Doane returned from home a few minutes before his death.

He is to be buried, by his own direction, in Chicago.
Major General Mower has been commanding the 17th A.C. since
General Ransom was taken sick, but General Blair is back and
General M. will take the 1st division (formerly 2nd division, 16th
A.C.).

We are about to let go of Hood's rear and go on a grant raid desitnation unknown."

On October 30th, I left Greenfield for Nashville and received there by the hands of Col. Morrill, the following letter from Col. Spencer:

Rome, Ga., November 1st, 1864.

Yours from New York is received. We are all buste and excitement here just now, being on the eve of another campaign.

We send your horses, books, papers, safe and money by Col.

Morrill, who is ordered to report to you. I would like to receive an order from you to join you. I tried to get a leave but could not on account of this march. I am ordered to report to General Howard and he gives me command of my reliment 5th Ohio and 9th Illinois, and is to try to get another regiment. I think I can make some reputation on this trip.

Generals Sherman, Howard and Corse have complimented me for the part I took in the late short campaign when Hood went North, and have all made some promises, but I attirubte it more to known friendship to you and a desire on their parts to conciliate you. I had a long talk with General Sherman about you yesterday. He denies any attempt on his part to in any measure, take a command from you, and says he would prefer you to either Blair or Logan, but three corps in the Army of the Tennessee was too small &c. Blair and Logan, he says, have a political power and that it is useless to fight, that Blair was soreheaded because he was not given the army, and that was the reason I accused him of injustice and underrating you: all of which he denied.

injustice and underrating you; all of which he denied.

I have found out the secret of managing him; it is to complain of bad treatment and injustice on his/part. He can stand anything but that, but I don't think he is governed by rules of justice, but by whims and he cannot stand a person that will stand up and insist upon his rights. Blair he pronounces an unmitigated nuisance. Logan is a bitter enemy of yours, why, I cannot imagine. If you were here now, you would have the 15th corps, as Logan is not here and unless he gets here in the next two days, he will not be here in time.

Poor Ransom! He died the 29th three miles from here in an ambulance. It is a great loss, as he was one of the best men I ever met and next to you had more friends than any one I have met in the army.

-227-

Morrill will tell you the plan of the campaign, I have told it to him and know what it is, as I have it from General Sherman's mouth.

I hope I shall get letters from you when I reach the destination I hope to make some reputation and obtain more influence than I now have with both Sherman and Howard, and you may rest assured that I shall not let an oppostunity pass to further your interests

in any and every particular.

Your old soldiers will never forget you, and will always curse the order breaking up the command. When they get paid, the money on the sword will be paid, and you will have the finest one

ever presented.

I regret I can't see you so as to tell you all that has happened. I have gotten along well with Corse, and he is a friend of yours, but he is intensely selfish, and is looking out for number one. He never refuses me anything, and consults me about everything. I don't think he favored the breaking up of the Corps and did all he could to prevent it."

At Nashville, on November 3rd, I received the following order from General Sherman:-

XII. Geh. G. M. Dodge, United States Volunteers, with the officers of his Staff, will proceed to Vicksburg, Miss. and report to Major General N. J. T. Dana, Commanding 16th Army Corps, for assignment to duty as Commander of the Left Wing, 16th Army Corps and District of Vicksburg. The Quartermaster Department will furnish transportation for the Officers' private Horses and public and private baggage."

On November 7th, the election came, giving an overwhelming majority for President Lincoln, Iowa giving 40,000 majority. carrying every county except two.

While at Nashville on November 8th, I received a letter from Mr. Peter A. Dey as follows:

Omaha, Nov. 8, 1864.

Yours was received some days ago. I am at a loss what to answer you as to trotting after Durant any farther, I will not. The road thus far owes more to me than any man connected with it-even the Denver people conceded a route necessary to success as far north as the Cache La Poudre--the surveys thus far, and we have an out line of them, all show that I have hit the locality every time. Our failing to connected the Platte and Republican Valleys is simple because the military were unable to furnish us an escortp The dea of sitting down deliberately and writing the Doctor day after day and week after week without answer or notice, and then all of a sudden to find a batch of telegrams hot and furious about matters that I had written and talked and preached time out of mind.

The truth is, Dr. Durant has too many other things to think of and pays very little attention to anything until he happens to

want it, when instead of walking into the other room where these things should be, he pitches off a lot of telegrams.

It is gratifying to me at least, to know that the surveys and examinations of Reed, Evans and Case strike the same route in almost every particular as I have indicated and they can find

nothing elsewhere that compares at all favorably.

Silas Seymour was out here with Mr. Williams, Government

Director; both had letters in their pockets from Durant to me asking
me to show them the Eastern end of the road, and advise with them freely about grades, bridging, location of stations, etc. A few hours after their arrival your telegram came, informing me that these things were none of their business, that nobody must look into the Platte Valley. I showed the message to Mr. Henry, who 4

thought you were putting on a great many airs. I then told him that the message was dictaged by Mr. Durant as you would never, of your own accord, send anything of the kind. Henry puzzled his brains for some hours and condluded that he had better go anyhow the chances being that there was not send enough in the whole party to get many ideas out of it. I could go to New York and manage matters to perfection.

If I could see Durant about once in two weeks, it would all be satisfactory, but as it is there is no use in trying. What does the Doctor want you to do? I can't for the life of me fathom his

This contract destroys the charm of the work, as it would have been creditable to have built a chear road-no man can call 50,000 per mile for a road up the Platte Valley anything else but a big

swindle--and thus it must stand forever

I cannot see who is the gainer as the road is depreciated so much in value as its cost is swelled, and constructor and the Road are swhndles by the same process--both rendered worthless.

Did the M. & M. represent only its actual cash cost today does any man believe that it would take long to raise the means to complete Hoping to hear from you soon.

On the same day, I received the following letter from General Howard:

Smyrna Camp Ground. November 6-1864.

I received your kind note. My confidence in you as an upright man and a godd soldier has never been impaired. I would have been very glad to have had you had the 16th corps and to have had it in the field, but for reasons which I will explain to you at length when I see you, I recommended General Dana. He appeared to be senior to you and General A. J. Smith; but I assure you I shall be glad to have you command a corps under me in the field when opportunity offers. At present General Osterhaus is commanding the 15th corps, and I am reluctant to have General Wood, who is commanding his division, again thrown back to a brigade, which he would be in case of General Logan's return or of another and outside assignment.

But between you and me, I much prefer yourself to General Osterhaus as a matter of personal preference; the 16th corps is

now broken up, and I don't know what you will have.

I left Nashville for St. Louis, preparatory to leaving for my command at Vicksburg and on November 11 received the following letter from General J. W. Sprague:

Marietta, Ga., Nov. 11, 1864.

Wour esteemed favor of the 3d instant was received late last night, and as our communications with the north are to be closed

for a time, I improve the last opportunity to write you.

There has been, and is now but one expression in your old command and that is, deep regret at losing you as a commander --this feeling I believe is common to all, and is often mentioned-for myself, I have had a faint hope that I might be ordered to report to you. If you should desire it at any time, and can

procure such an order, it would suit me exactly.

It was understood here that you would be assigned to the command of the 15th corps, and I think such was the intention; but I sspect, without knowing positively that General Logan did not feel entirely friendly to you, and that some of his officers were brought to partake of the same feelings. I may be wrong in the suspicion, but I think not. As opportunity offers I shall leanr more about these things, and shall not fail to advise you of all that will interest you.

General Blair has returned as you may know, and is in common of this corps. Major General Mower has been assigned to the command

of this division. You will believe that we regret and mourn the loss of General Ransom.

The Army has just paid and clothed, and is in good condition Where it is to go has not yet "Transpired". This Division is to destroy the road from Noonday Creek to half a mile south of Marietta, probably tomorrow.

We looked upon the command of the division of Vicksburg as an important one; and supposed it to be the very next thing to the command of a corps in the field.

We have had a good deal of rain. The roads are in a bad condition, but it is now clear and cold."

While in St. Louis, I received a dispatch from General Rawlins which indicated to me that General Grant was not satisfied with my assignment and on November 12th I received a dispatch from Col. W. T. Clark, Assistant Adjutant General of the Army saying: "DOn't go to Vicksburg. Meet me at Louisville on the 15th."

On the 15th I went to Louis villes and saw Col. Clark. He informed me that my orders to go to Vicksburg had been suspended by General Grant; that he was not satisfied with the assignment and that "General Howard was greatly worried over it and that by the order of General Grant, 19 had been ordered to St. Louis and he handed me the following order from General Howard: -

Louisville, Nov. 17, 1864.

IV. Major General G. M. Dodge and Staff will proceed to St. Louis, Missouri, and there establish his Head Quarters for the Louis, Missouri, and there establish his head quarters for the purpose of making out reports of the Campaign in Georgia and completing the records of the Left Wing, 16th Army Corps.

He will then await further orders from Head Quarters of the Department in the field.

Major Barnes, Asst. Adjt. General, will accompany General Dodge to St. Louis, Missouri or other points, for the purpose of accieting him in making his reports.

assisting him in making his reports.

The Quarter Master Department will furnish the transportation for servants, horses, public and private baggage."

The following letter from General Howard to General Grant shows that General Howard was not fully satisfied in his own mind with the orders he had issued in relation to the organization of the 16th A. C. The following detters in relation to this change of command were printed in the Armals of Iowa:

Atlanta, Nov. 8, 1864.

General Grant: -

Major General Dodge I learn visited you when away with his wound. I have heard he felt disappointed in not having the 16th corps, but I assure you he is a worthy officer, and one I am pleased to have command a dividion or corps under me, but Generals A. J. Smith, Dodge and Dana were on my hands, and I recommended the serior and helieved him better for the post to which he was assigned senior and believed him better for the post to which he was assigned, but there is no lakk of confidence in General Dodge."

The following letters bearing upon my assignment was published in the annals of Lowa. Mr. Dawson was Stenographer for Gent. Grant and he dictated to him the 2nd. Volume of his Memoirs. - 295

Chicago, October 19, 1993.

Non A

Hon. C. C. Carpenter,

Fort Dodge, Iowa.

Dear Governor: -

I have just read your interesting article in the Annals of Iowa for October. I happen to know that you do not over-state General Grant's high estimate of General Dodge's ability, and of the value of his services to his country. There is one fact in connection with his military career which greatly emphasizes that estimate, and it is a fact of which I have never seen mention in print--indeed, I do not know that there is any public record of it. The fact is that General Grant some time prior to General Sherman's march to the sea, had in contemplation the sending of a strong column from Sherman's army to the sea, and had actually gone so far as to select an officer for the command of the expedition and that officer was General Dddge. The only person whom he is known to have taken into his confidence in the matter was General Sheridan, and it was General Sheridan himself who gave me the particulars. Here may be found the explanation of General Grant's ordering General Dodge to the East, where he remained at headquarters for a week or two, being afterwards ordered to command West of the Mississippi. General Grant's purpose in bringing him to City Point at that time has always remained something of a mystery, but the probability is that he wanted to give General Dodge personal instructions for his guidance in conducting this contemplated expedition, developments in Sherman's field of operations probably causing a change in his purpose in the meantime.

I see your article is to be continued in the next number, and naturally in treating of the Atlanta campaign, in which General Dodge performed so magnificent a part, it has occurred to me that a fact of this nature would be regard by you as an interesting one to present.

I shall watch for your next article with a great deal of interest.

Very truly yours, N. E. Dawson.

Fort Dodge, Iowa, Oct. 27, 1893.

. N. E. Dawson, Esq.,

Chicago, Ill.

Dear Sir:-

I received your letter of recent date in which you write about my article--first part, in regard to General Dodge; and mention an incident which I will use in the January number. I thank you for taking the pains to write to mus.

I served on Gen. Bodge's staff for two years, and came to know him pretty thoroughly. He was one among the best officers in the service, and like Grant, his strong points were that he was thoroughly in earnest and was not afraid to fight when he had an even show.

C C. Carpenter.

Jag 1

Fort Dodge, Iowa, Oct. 26, 1893.

General G. M. Dodge,

No. 1 Broadway, New York.

Dear General: -

I enclose you a letter from N. E. Dawson. If he is right about this matter I should like to make use of it. I mistrust that he has somewhat confused the purpose which General Grant had in view. I have long been aware that he intended to place you in command of an army to move out from Vicksburg with the purpose of crossing the country and taking Mobile. And I suppose the fact that Hood marched around Sherman's flank and pushed his way into Tennesses changed this purpose of Grant's. As he foresaw that if Sherman made a campaign to the sea, leaving Thomas to take care of Hood, that all the forces along the Mississippi except barely enough to police the territory, would be needed by Thomas, so he gave up this scheme and asked for your assignment to command the Department of the Missouri. Please tell me if I am right in my diagnosis of the situation.

The public records, which I have been able to reach concerning your operations while in command of the Department of Missouri are very meager indeed. (They had not then been published. Ed) Up to the time you left the Army of the Tennessee at Atlanta, from the time you took command at Corinth, I was with you; and had personal knowledge of your movements. But after you left, I was assigned to the staff of General Logan, and, of course, had no personal knowledge of your subsequent career white in the army. Did you make a written report of your operations while in command of the Department of Missouri, and also of your campaign against the Indians in 1866? If so, I presume the compilers of the rebellion record have not reached these reports in the order of time. I wonder how I can work it to get copies of these reports?

I desire very much to attend the reunion of the Army of the Tennessee at its recent meeting in Chicago, but was unable to do so.

Very truly yours,

C. C. Carpenter."

The only explanation I can give of Mr. N. E. Dawson's statement is that General Grant must have referred to giving me command from Vicksburg to Mobile which he talked tome about when I was at City Point. General Sheridan never said anything to me in relation to this matter but Mr. Dawson, who compiled all my records and spent a year at it and whom I sent to General Grant when he requested me to recommend someone as his Secretary and stenographer, was with General Grant when he wrote his own Memoirs and it was to Mr. Dawson that he dictated his 2nd volume.

Mr. Dawson always said to me that it was some other command besides

Jan /

Insert (13) Page 297.

This letter received by me in 1886 is the first intimation I had of what Mr. Dawson states and which information he accorded in his letter to C. C. Carpenter. I think at the time that the conversation occurring between Sheridan and Grant was when Hood had gone to the rear of Sherman at Atlanta and it was supposed that Sherman would follow him which would have put a stop to the march to the sea and the theory of General Grant was that if Sherman followed Hood there would be very little opposition to the march either to Savannah or Mobile and that they might have thought of placing me in command of troops for that purpose. I know General Grant was very much disappointed that I did not go to Vicksburg and with the 16th Army Corps move on Mobile and when that was stopped he may have had an idea of giving me command of Atlanta either to move toward Mobile or toward Savannah but I had no direct information of this myself.

220 Md. Ave., U. S. Washington, May 17, 1886.

Dear General:

Are you aware that Gen. Grant at one time had it under consideration to send you in command of the "Manch to the sea" expedition?

Have you given up coming to Washington?
Yours Truly,
N. E. Dawson.

Gen. G. M. Dodge,
'New York.

the one to Mobile that General Sheridan referred to; however, what they had in their mind never came to pass. Unsert (13).

Mrs. Podge While at St. Louis, a received the following letter from Mary Abby Dodge, one who was well-known as Gale Hamilton and as the Biographer of the Life of James G. Blaine:

Hamilton, Mass., Nov. 16, 1864.

My dear Cousin: -

You may be a little surprised at this sudeen assumption of relationship, but if you had been brought up among as many Dodges as I have, you would understand how I have been forced to adopt something like Darwin's principle of selection -- so when I see a Dodge of distinction, I claim him at once, but when I am asked about a disagreeable on otherwise chiestic public one. I say again. about a disagreeable or otherwise objectionable one, I say carelessly, "Well, I suppose he came from the same stock, but we do not trace any relationship!"

You know, however, that selection implies the power of rejection so you can condemn me out of my own mouth if you choose.

My friend, Mr. Dodge--a Dodge whom I acknowledge--had the great good fortune to meet you on the way to Lawrence and he was so enthusiastic in his estimation that you might not take it amiss if I should send you "A New Atmosphere" of which I happen to have several copies in my possession. I assure you I should not have thought of such a thing myself for it is a violent and ferocious little book; and I know, because I have read it carefully from beginning to end. It seems a pity that people who are living in the ginning to end. It seems a pity that people who are living in the midst of war and rumors of wars all the time, should be thrust into a "Battle of the Books" when they sit down for a moment's peace. Still, perhaps, the General and yourself are so accumstomed to warfare that the hot shot which comes pelting down through this new atmostpher will seem to you only a summer sprinkling.

I wish periously that I could send you something worthy of you and of the noble man who has ennobled the name we bear. But that I cannot do. No words can express gratitude for deeds. When

that I cannot do. No words can express gratitude for deeds. When I sit at home here doing nothing except what is easy to do- and think of all the men who are dear and precious to somebody, and whose lives are as sweet to them and as full of promise and pleasure as mine to me, and who yet are in the front of every danger, braving not only death which is the least, but pain and imprisonment and isolation, every form of physical suffering, - Why what is the good of talking!

If my branch of the family had half as much courage as yours, I should have gone to see you in Danvers, but I am sure that no one who did go wanted to see you more, or had a greater respect and regard and gratitude than I who stayed away.

Most truly yours,

Mary Abby Dodge.

While at St. Louis, Major General N. J. T. Dana, commanding the 16th Army Corps, applied to the War Department for me to be assigned to him, to take command of the district of West Tennessee, and charge of the campaign that was then being made to break up the Mobile & Ohio railroad. General Canby also applied to the War Department to have me assigned to him to take part in the campaign against Mobile that was then being arranged but General Grant on November 25th, wrote General Halleck as follows: -

"While in Washington, I wrged the removal of Rosecrans and the substitution of Dodge for his plaxe. I would like you to urge this upon the President."

On December 2nd, 1864, the War Department issued General Order #294 as follows:

I. Major-General G. M. Dodge, U.S.V. is appointed by the President to the command of the Department of Missouri. II. Major-General Rosecrans, on being relieved will repair to Cincinnati, Ohio, and report by letter to the Adjutant General

Before issuing this order, the War Department wired to General Thomas asking him whether I was well enough and available for duty, showing that while they had been receiving dispatches all during bhe month of Novemver in relation to me, they did not know where I was.

On December 6th, 1864, I received a dispatch from the Assistant Adjutant Ceneral notifying me of the General Order of the Department and directing me to take the command immediately and to notify the War Department when I was in command. Upon recieving this dispatch, I had not yet seen the order assigning me to duty in the Department but I called on Jeneral Rosecrans and showed him the dispatch. He lad the order and I suggested to him that he issue the order placing me in command, when he turned on my very indignantly and said that he understood I had been in Washington seeking his command and declined to issue the order. I made no answer to him but got up and left. As I went out of the office, I saw Col. Dubois, whom I knew, Inspector General on General Rosecran's Staff and asked him to draw up the order and bring it to me and that I would be at the Lindell Hotel. About noon Dubois came over to the Lindell Hotel and said General Resecrans wanted to see me. I told Bubois that if General Rosecrans wanted to see

of the Army.

me, I would be at the Lindell Hotel. General Rosecrans came over apologized to the hotel and told me that when he made the statement he did, it came from information he found was not true and said he was willing to give me any information I desired in relation to the Department. I told General Rosecrans that the command came to me as a surprise; that while it was a promotion, it was a great disappointment and until I received the order I knew nothing about the change and did not know what had caused it and at that we parted and my order to assume command of the department was issued.

On December 3rd, I received a letter from Mr. B. B. Brayton, Division Engineer on the Union Pacific in which he said he desired to quit railroading and asked if I could not give him some place. speaking of the work he said:

I believe it is the intention that Durant will push the Union Pacific as rapidly as possible up the Platte Valley to the Mountains, as the Government aid outside of the lands will give a profit of 8 to 10,000 per mile. I think when they have reached the Mountains and have got all the bonds for the road built the company will throw up unless additional government aid sufficient to leave a margin over cost is granted through the mountain region.

This shows the view of one of the engineers of the east of building the Union Pacific. The fact is the subsidy to the mountains would not pay any where near the cost of the work, while the subsidy after they reached the mountains was so large that there was quite a profit in it.

> On December 5th, the Hon. John A. Kasson wrote me as follows: Washington, D.C.December 5, 1864.

You are to supercede Rosecrans in Missouri. I also understood the Sect. of War you were to have Arkansas; but I may have misunderstood him as to Arkansas. Some change is to be made there. A confidential friend of mine, who is near Grant, told me today that the reason you were not with Sherman was that it was feared your strength was not adequate to the proposed campaign. He assured me that was the only reason, not any interior schemeing whatever. Your position was strong every other way.

When General Rosecrans was relieved, Secretary of war Stanton asked General Grant where General Rosecrans should be assigned and General Grant made the following response:

City Point, Va. Dec. 2, 1864. 1 P. M.

Hon. E. M. Stanton, Sec. of War,
Washingt n, D. C.
Upon receipt of Thomas' dispatch, I sent him a dispatch which he no doubt you read as it passed through the office. Rosecrans will do less harm doing nothing than on duty. I know of no department which deserves having such a punishment inflicted upon them

His name can well go on the list I sent up a few days ago."

I quote this to show that General Grant had never changed his opinion of General Rosecrans since the battle of Corinth.

As soon as I assumed command and got into communication with the staff, I found there had been a great many dispatches sent to Rosecrans urging his sending troops to the aid of Thomas and that there was great dissatisfaction in the Department in the way he allowed Price to roam over Missouri, when he had troops enough in the command, if concentrated, to stop him before he reached the latitude of St. Louis,

On December 9th, General Grant sent the following dispatch to General Halleck:

City Point, Va., Dec. 9, 1864.

Please direct Gen. Dodge to send all the troops he can spare to Gen. Thomas. With such an order he can be relied on to send all that can properly go. They had probably better be sent to Louisville for I fear either Hood or Brickenridge will get to the Ohio river. I will submit whether it is not advisable to call on Ohio Indiana and Illinois for sixty thousand men for thir ty days. If Thomas has not sturck yet he ought to be ordered to hand over his command to Schofield. There is no better man to repel an attack than Thomas, but I fear he is tog cautious to even take the initiative."

General Halleck "to send all the troops I could spare to General Thomas by such route as I might deem best. General Grant said:

"With such an order you can be relied upon to send all that can properly go." I learned afterwards that President Lincoln was present when this order was given and that it was he who suggested to General Halleckthat that portion of Grant's dispatch should be added saying, "It might induce Dodge to make an extra effort to help Thomas out." Un looking over the command, I found there were no organized rebel forces in the State, nothing but guerrillas, and I therefore took every organized regiment in the command sent it to General Thomas.

There were two divisions of the 16th Army Corps under Maj. General A. J. Smith who had already started and T added to this some five regiments of infantry, a regiment of cavalry and several batteries.

Mrs. J. B. Ransom, the mother of Gen. T.E.G.Ransom, wrote me a letter in answer to one of mine in which she says:

New York, Dec. 9, 1864.

Your warm expressions of sympathy are very grateful to our sorrowing hearts; we know you were strongly attached to our dear, precious Greenfield, and will mourn sincerely our irreparable loss. What he was to us, no language can express. In him our earthly affections were too deeply centred; I had often feared. Every

NE

Page 301 ( Insert 14).

St. Louis, Dec. 11, 1864.

Dear Mother:

Before this you will have seen in the papers that I have been assigned to the command of the Department of Missouri, very unexpectedly to me and without any endeavoring on my part to obtain it. It is a very responsible and laborious command but I shall try to fill it. We think some of trying to hire a furnished house in the city. We will have a hard time to find one. When we get settled we would like to have Jule come and stay a few months with us this winter; she could return in the spring and I have no doubt it would be better for her health as well as keeping her more at home evenings as she would have plenty of Company. Hood is pressing Thomas back; he will however make nothing out of it. Thomas has got and is getting troops, plenty to take care of Hood and use him up.

Sherman is working his way through to the coast destroying everything as he goes; so far he has met no opposition and I guess he will have very little trouble; when he gets through he will rest a few days and no doubt operate with the fleet. Grant will soon burst out in a new place; he is now doing what he can to keep all of Lee's troops in his front. We want and must have more men; the draft was a failure, got us very few men. I believe a good system of volunteering, or if we draft, forcing every one to go or furnish a good substitute, giving no credits, is the only thing that will do and hold the principal of the substitute. I am very busy but

want to hear from home.

My visit East was a very pleasant one though it took all my time to respond to receptions. I had no idea I should be received so cordially. It was very gratifying to know that they had not forgotten me. Many kind things were said to me and I believe they all wish me well. I felt rather hard over the breaking up of the 16th A. C. Gen. Grant does not like it very well but it was all for the good of the service and it seems they did not forget me as they often do Generals as they gave me a much more important command than I expected.

How do matters get along out at the Horn since Nate married and settled down? I have very few letters from him. Sue, I suppose

is in clover, while Nate is up to his eyes in petticoats.

I hope Father is staying in the Bluffs this winter; it is too cold for him to stay at the Horn and you will need him in the Bluffs.

Annie and Ella are here; Lettie in Greenfield. Lettie had great times down east; she saw grandma Phillips and all others at Rowley; she was well posted, you had told her so much about them. Ella says she sends a kiss; she now has both hands and mouth full of pop-corn.

Truly, Gren.

thoughtful of our comfort and happiness, sparing no pains or expense in his efforts to make our daily life plesasant and independent—our hearts are indeed desolate. Oh, it is with unspeakable anguish we give him up. To realize that we shall see his face no more; that those love-bearing eyes are closed forever; that the places that once knew him shall know him no more. We lift our straining eyes to God and pray for resignation and submission to His blessed Will—we are assured that He does not "willingly afflict nore grieve the children of men", and I know He will never "leave us comfrotless."

I trust by this time your wound has ceased to pain you, and that your health continues to improve."

When at Norwich University, I boarded in the family of Mrs.

Ransom and there my acquaintance with all the children commenced and lasted as long as they lived. I was especially attached to General Ransom as we came west together.

I also received the following letter from General Quimby:

Rochester, New York, Dec. 10, 1864.

Before touching upon business, I must congratulate you on your promotion to your present important and responsible command. It would have saved the country serious loss, could you have been sent to it three months sooner. Having proved your abilities as a soldier you have now an opportunity to exhibit them in some extent in civil administration; for in your present position your functions must in some measure partake of a civil character, and I have not the least doubt that your career will fully indicate the widdom of Grant's selection for the command. Steele, I see, has been relieved of his command- This I expected from what Grant told me at City Point. Will Arkansa be also embraced in your Department? He was a classmate of Grant's, but mere personal consideration have but little weight with the latter."

On December 10th, only one day after I assumed command, I sent the following dispatch to General Halleck:

"I sent five regiments of infantry, all there are in the Department organized subject to be sent outside of the State. One regiment of cavalry well mounted and will send batteres; they go by rail."

These troops were detained by ice in the Missouri and one command that I had sent by boat around by the Ohio were frozen in before they reached Cairo and I had to take them off and send them by rail. One of the boats blew up, killing 20 men and wounding 30 others with a loss of all stock, arms and equipments belonging to the troops on the boat. The dispatches from General Thomas to me stated the necessity of getting troops to him rapidly made us make a great effort but the elements were against us. We succeeded, however, in getting them all there in time to take part in the great battle of Nashville.

\*\*Limit(14).\*\* Letter to mother.\*\*

On December 11th, I was appointed Major General of the Missouri State Militia under an arrangement made by the President of the United States and Governor Gamble, that the commanding officer of the Department of Missouri should also command this militia. There were some ten regiments of them that were organized by the State for the

purpose of service in the State. We could not take them out but they were under the direct orders of the commander of the Department.

On the 14th I received a letter from my old commander, S. R. Curtis, Commanding the Department of Kansas, congratulating me on my new command and offering me any aid he could give to help solve the problems in Missouri. He had had some experience that way himself. I was receiving a good deal of advise from over the State as to the course I should take and some very comforting information that the command was the grave of the reputation of every General who had held it.

On December 16th, Hon. J. A. Kasson wrote me from Washington as follows: -

"When I first saw Stanton about your case, he promptley met me with the reply, "Dodge is ordered to take the Department of Missouri in place of Rosecrans." I was astonished and gratified. It was about what I had proposed last session; but it came now, I think, from Grant. When I find the facts, I will let you know. I kept the secret of the proposed change until the Missourians here heard of it and came to me about it. They think, some of them, that I did it. Senator Brown came to me a few days since and wished me to write you and enclose the accompanying circular, copy of his negro suffrage letter; he is afraid parties will get your influence against the plan and against him. Blow told me he had written to his friends, meaning the radical interest, to pay you attentions and see you fell into the right hands &c. They don't understand you. I said to them you were sound enough on the radical question, that I did not believe you would touch the negro suffrage, it was a local question; I did not believe in it if Missouri did it was a let her do as she pleased. That your great merit was that the public knew what you were going to do when it was done; not before. Your work was for the country not for the newspapers; you would seek to pacify Missouri, suppress guerrillas, restore order, &c. &c. by careful and persistent work.

There is no doubt my dear friend, they have given you a difficult.

cult place, but one in which a permanent honor and fame may be won. I should like to give you my ideas, but cannot on paper. A day's talk would hardly cover the ground. Rosecrans split on an easily avoided rock - he was Je suitical, talking to different parties as their respective adherent. The true policy for the commander of Missouri is, to hear all parties without any talk on his own part except to question for information. except to question for information- to let his acts talk for him. Rosecrans loved pleasure and society more than he loved work, and

loved flattery more than either.//
There are two honest men in St. Louis - well informed and of

true patriotism, and without flattery and uncontrolled by any personal schemes. Their suggestions upon plans of civil action, and for the restoration of order, would generally be valuable, if from time to time you could invite them without attracting the attention of others. They are my brother in law, Rev. Dr. Eliott, a resident of St. Louis since 1836 - and James E. Yeatman, Pres. of Western

11.5 11

.-9777-

The former is perhaps the most thoughtful and prudent of the two, and knows how to keep counsel; but your own judgment is, after all lights are obtained, the safest standard. You will succeed if you adhere to your working style as heretofore. Unless they change your character there, you alone of all the commanders in Missouri will survive the trial. If I can ever come to see you I will. Pardon this long letter, because I have always been half inside in Missouri matters.

Write me as confidentially and freely as you please."

I immediately formed the acquaintance of Red. Dr. Elliott and James E. Yeatman.

The following is a dispatch sent by General Grant to the President:-

City Point, Va. December 7, 1864.

"The best interest of the service requires that the troops of the North-west, department of the north-west, Missouri and Kansas, should all be under one head. Properly they should all be in one department. Knowing, however, the difficulty in displacing department commanders, I have recommended these departments to be thrown together into a military division, and Gen. Pope put in command. This is advisable from the fact that as a rule only one point is threatened at a time, and if all that territory is commanded by one man, he can take troops from one point to satisfy the wants of another. With separate department commanders, they want to keep all they have and get all they can. This will not be the case with Dodge who has been appointed to command Missouri nor will it be with Pope."

There reported to me here one of my best scout whom I had not seen since. I sent him through the lines from Corinth and who had been arrested by Gen. Forest and tried as a spy. He had gotten word to me of his whereabouts. I enclosed this letter in a letter to General Dana asking him in his cavalry raid to try to relieve him and he answered me on December 20th that Brigadier General Grierson would leave the next day on a raid and that he had requested him to effect the relief of Hensen if possible and if any of the family came to him he would do all in his power to aid them.

On this same date I received another letter from Mary  $oldsymbol{ heta}$  bby Dodge in which she says:

"There isn't app good news flying about the country now-a-days is there? Thomas has not done anything to Hood - and Sherman is floundering about despairingly in Georgia mud - Did you ever hear anything more "aggravating" than his "agreeable march" through Georgia? If I am not grateful and thankful for all these good tidings of great joy, then I am nothing- there isn't any me at all."

The day I received this letter from Gale Hamilton, I also received the news of the great victory of General Thomas at Nash ville where the troops Sent from the Department of the Missouri, the 16th Army Corps under Major General A. J. Smith and the detached

\_\_\_\_\_\_\_\_

I sent regiments that served under him made the principal attack on General Thomas' right, turning Hood's left and carrying the intrenchments before them forcing Hood to make a precipitate retreat. Thomas spoke in the highest terms of the actions of these troops and General Smith always claims that if his victory had been followed up as he wished to have it, the captures would have been much larger than they were. In honor of the victory, a general salute was ordered throughout the command."

On the 21st, I wrote to General Halleck the conditions as I saw them in Missouri as follows:

"It is well known that when Price left the State, a large number of rebel sympathizers and guerrillas joined him, mostly men who have been noted for their open sympathy and acts in aid of the rebellion.

It is also well understood that this class of Missourians intend to return early in the spring to follow their old vocation of robbery, rapine and murder. The two only inducements for their return, are

lst, their families being located here; 2nd, their love of pleasure. Now I am convinced that if from the disloyal districts their families were, to a certain extent, sent to them while they are in the rebel lines, it would not only keep them there, but would deter many others from returning and at the same time have a very salutary effect upon the remaining disloyal citizens. I have always found that banishment, to a certain extent and judiciously and quietly made, is very beneficial in its effects, and I am convinced it would do great good in this State. I can already see the preparations for the strife, intended to be commenced as soon as the leaves come, and if we allow these citizen guerrillas, &c. to join Price when they choose, swell the columns of the enemy that comes into the state, and to return to their homes and the bush after having been defeated and driven out, allowing their families to remain and enjoy our protection while they feed and clothe them thom by plunder, and engage in active hostilities against us, without some retaliatory measures being adopted toward them, the guerrillas warfare and rebel strength will increase in the state instead of diminish. Before taking any positive action in this matter, I desire to have the approval of the administration, for, to banish rebels and then have the orderes thereto issued, countermanded, only weakens the influence and authority of the commander. It is now the boast of some rebels and bushwhckers that orders for their banishment &c. can, through the various influences that they can bring to bear- be generally revoked, and I do not desire to adopt measures and issue orders of this kind without first having the full concurrence of the government in the policy.

I write you on this subject knowing you are fully posted on Missouri affairs; and I do most earnestly request that you obtain and inform me of the views of the President and Secretary of War in the matter, as I desire thereby to shape my actions in the premises.

I am having listed throughout the disloyal districts persons as follows:

The families of noted bushwhackers.
The families of noted rebels who joined Price.
The avowedly disloyal families of persons in the rebel 2nd. 3rd.

Those citizens who were the active aiders and abettors of Price's army while recently in the state.

5th. Those persons who harbor bushwhackers. From this list I should select the most noted characters for banishment, taking them as near as possible from the different neighborhoods and sections for the benefit of effect on those permitted to remain."

General Halleck answered immediately approving the policy and which I put into effect immediately by an order to my district commanders embodying the principles set forth in the letter to Gen. Halleck. This order drew down upon my head a good many criticisms but it was the first move towards bringing peace to Missouri. There was sent me the Selma Dispatch by one of my spies which had an advertisement in it as follows:

MARCH. If the citizens of the Southern Confederacy will furnish me with the cash, or good securities for the sume of one million dollars, I will cause the lives of Abrham Lincoln, William H. Seward and Andrew Johnson to be taken by the first of March next. This will give peace, and satisfy the world that cruel tyrants cannot live in a "land of liberty." If this is not accomplished, nothing will be claimed beyond the sum of fifty thousand dollars, in advance, which is supposed to be necessary to reach and slaughter the three villians.

I will give myself one thousand dollars towards this patriotic purpose. Everyone wishing to contribute will address box X, Cabba, Alabama, . December 1st, 1864."

Through my secret service men and the Post-master, I was getting a good deal of information as to the combinations that were being made by telegraph, steamboats, muggling, killing Generals, etc. Whilewe were an the trail, we had not yet gotten to the place where we could make any arrests.

On December 26th, I received the following letter from General Oglesby who had been elected Governor of Missouri:

Decatur, Ill, Dec. 26, 1864.

"After receiving your long and interesting letter from Greenfield, Indiana, in October, I substantially lost the run of you until you assumed command of the Dept. of Missouri. I am truly glad you are so near me. I shall try to run Ill. if you will promise to keep Missouri straight and respectable. I fear you will find this a troublesome job unless you make up your mind to run right striaght ahead. I know that you are entirely competent to manage its military affairs, and equally so its political. If you adhere strictly to your own management, and pursue the conclusions of your own mind, Missouris seems to be purely loyal - to keep her so and keep in subjection the rebellious spirit of her temporary subjects, would seem to be the cardinal consideration by which the Government should be controlled.

Gen. Grant still hesitates before Lee and Richmond. We have great patience with him and his plan, and mean to give him sufficient time to work out hid and our salvation; but he must take Richmond and that before many months and I believe he will and that before many months. Sherman had a pleasant prominade through Georgia, and has sat down quietly before Savannah and will in a few days go in and take possession and then go up the River at his leisure. It does seem to me the situation, all things considered, is as favorable as we could reasonably desire. Thomas has done a good thing for Hood on a

small loss. I think it was a small fight- not so severe as some we have had. I go to Springfield to live about the middle of January; will be inaugerated on the 9th or 10th, and will be very much pleased to have you come up with Mrs. Dodge and visit us there when you can. Will always be glad to See you anywhere."

On December 27th, Mr. George R. Taylor, who was interested in the railroad system of Thus made an appeal to me to aid in the passage of a bill through Congress, introduced by Senator Henderson of Missouri, to provide against periodical Invasions into into Missouri, and to protect the interest of the Government on the Western Border, by building or aiding in building a railroad through Southwest Missouri; asking that it be done as a military necessity, it having been recommended by former commanders of the Department and supported by letter from General Hall, Sherman Seigel, Rosecrans and others. There had been a good deal of work done on this line and when I assumed command at Rolla at the beginning of the War, I had myself called the attention of the Government to the necessity of pushing this road to Springfield, which would have been an economy at that time, but I could not now see the great importance of it to the Government; it was now more of a matter of adding private enterprise and I would not feel like taking any part in it.

As soon as I took command of this department, there arose a question as to the refugees in the State. All those people who had left the State to enter the rebel army had left their families in the state and there had been a great many families from Arkansas and the south who had been driven out and come into this state. There had been a system of fedding them by the Government until it had become a very heavy burden and I issued orders that the refugees from the south would not be feed any longer by the Government and that here after this class of people will have to take care of themselves; that the Government had taken care of them through the winter but as the summer season approached, they were to find employment in the country. I arranged to send them out into the northern states t farmers and others who would take them, and up to this time had sent away over 200 families; this however was only a small number of those in the State. I established, by order #231, a refugee Bureau in each district which should be in charge of an officer and where possible, a chaplain, so that aid should only be given to those who were

worthy objects of charity. This decreased the expenses very materially but they were still quite a burden upon the Government.

On the 29th I received a communication from General Halleck whom I had made my action known to. I was authorized to raise \$10,000 for the purpose of carrying out an agreement I had made with the Sanitray Commission under Mr. Yeatman, to take care of these refugees, provided I turned over to him what was known as the Lawton Hospital. I arranged to do this and the \$10,000 was raised by an assessment upon known active rebels inside our lines or upon property of known rebels who had left the State or were in the Confederate army.

The order I had been issuing for the purpose of brining peace to Missouri did not seem to suit hardly anyone and I wrote the Hon. John A. Kasson, a letter explaining some of them and he took the letter to the President and had quite a long interview with him and wrote me that the President understood the matter and said he would not attempt to change the department commanders of Missouri again.

At this time. on Jan. 8th, I received a letter from the Hon. William A. Hall, member of congress as follows:

Washington, D.C. Dan. 8, 1864.

"So little attention was paid to my representationaby your predecessor, that I should not have troubled you with this letter, if I had not been encouraged to do so by your friend, Brig. Gen. Stevenson wow in command at Harpers Ferry. I stated to you while in St. Louis that my section of country was in the course of the last few months rapidly becoming depopulated, that before that period it was a prosperous section of country; I allude more particularly to Howard, Randolph and Chariton Counties. The causes I have been an eye-witness to.

There were in that section of country up to June last an inconsiderable number of bushwhackers. A man named Tumman was sent into Chariton County with some thirty soldiers, and murdered in cold bhood, seven citizens- who were so far as the community knew unoffending men. He was arrested it is true and after the lapse of several months, punished. The punishment was so long delayed that a very gneral impression prevailed that he was acquitted. The soldiers encouraged by this example, have ever since that time killed in cold blood without any provocation. They have been killed in cold blood without any provocation known to the community, in the three countries named, I believe nearly fifty citizens by not less than twenty- many of them costing several thousand dollars, in most cases belonging to persons against whom there is no known cause for dffence. The mmount of property taken from citizens of destruction of property and life by the soldiers on peaceable citizens has been ten-fold greater than by bushwhackers. The consequence is

that many men have been driven to the bush to save their lives, the number of bushwhachers has greatly increased by men being driven to desperation, and who have not the means of leaving the country. The men of property are generally leaving the country, many have left and others are preparing to leave, and will leave if they believe this state of things is to continue. The system of scattering the soldiers over the country in small bodies, it seems to me almost necessarially lead bo abuses. The number of officers who can or will restrain their men is very inconsiderable.

or will restrain their men is very inconsiderable.

The large number of recruits which Price is said to have gotten to these counties is owing to the attrocious practice of the soldiers.

in these counties is owing to the attrocious practice of the soldiers.

It is well known that notwithstanding that the year before there were the same rebel recruiting officers, that we hand last season,

they totally failed in getting recruits.

I am well aware that there are many southern sympathizers in the counties I have named, but they have resisted all temptations to take up arms, and I am satisfied are fully prepared to discharge all their duties. But the evils I have enumerated have not fallen upon them alone. Union men alike have been subject to them.

I am satisfied that we will have no security while the soldiers

I am satisfied that we will have no security while the soldiers are fostered among us. The people can in a great degree repress the bushwackers, and I believe will if left to take care of themselves.

I am very respectfully yours.

On the same day I issued General Orders # 7:

Hdars. Dept. of the Missouri, St. Louis, Mo. January 8, 1865. "It being the intention of the general commanding to employ every means in his power for the purpose of ridding the department of bushwhackers, guerrilla bands, and rebel emissaries, and of restoring and maintaining law and order, he deems it proper to make known, in orders, to the citizens of Missouri their duty in the premises and the requirements that will be exacted from them. The experience of the past three years has clearly demonstrated the fact that the bushwhackers and guerrilla bands operating in this State congregate, dwell, and obtain their support in disloyal counties and neighborhoods, where they are encouraged and protected, and the efforts of the military forces to hunt them down are often rendered ansuccessful by reason of the deceptive and non-committal course of the resident disloyal citizen. The general commanding desires all such citizens to distinctly understand that he intends, to the extent of his ability and power, to hold them to a strict accountability for their every act of direct or indirect hostility to the Government, or that tends in any manner to Henceforth, in order to merit and receive its aid aid these outlaws. and protection, citizens must by their actions show to the Government that they not only have no sympathy whatever with bukhwhackers and guerrilla bands, but that they are most ernestly opposed to them; and they must at the same time give these outlaws to know that they cannot dwell in their midst and roam over entire counties and abide in their neighborhood unmolested and not reported. Hereafter it will be required of citizens, in all cases, to report the passing by, bhe congregating or camping near or upon them, the feeding, whether through fear, or force, or otherwise, of bushwhackers, guerrillas, and any other knowledge they may have relative to the whereabouts doings, &c. of these outlaws. This report must be promptlymdde to the nearst military authorities. All citizens failing to report as above required wil have their property seized and themselves and familes sent beyond the limits of this department; and those who are found to have given direct and voluntary aid to bushwhackers and guerrillas, or rebels, will be arrested and banished, or tried by military courts for violation of the laws of war. Any person making any agreement with budhwhackers and guerrillas or pretended rebal bands, for his own personal security or that of his family or property and who does not immediately report to the federal authorities, the fact of such agreement, showing that it was made through force, need not expect any mercy at the hands of the Government. The disloyal residents of each county will be hald to a strict accountability for

\_0452

any injury inflicted upon loyal people thereof by bushwhackers and rebel marauders. It is time that people who have been allowed to live peaceably, enjoy protection, and grow rich under our Government while they have given aid and comfort to the enemy, either directly or indirectly, or by a non-committal course of conduct, should be made to show their hands and once for all to place themselves either in earnest, practical support of the Government or with its avowed enemies, so that we can deal with them understandingly. From this time henceforth district and sub-district commanders and provost marshals will report to these headquarters the names of all individuals and families who are found to be guilty of miding the rebellion or of aiding or encouraginb bushwhackers and partisan marauders by such acts of commission or omission as herein mentioned, in order that immediate action may be taken in their cases. Those citizens who consider themselves so bound to their guerrilla and rebel friends, that they cannot comply with the requirements of this order, and who therefore prefer to join their friends within the rebel lines, will, upon application in writing to these headquarters for that purpode, he given permission to pass beyond our lines, with the privilege of taking with them sufficient of their personal property, such as clothing, &c. to render them comfortable. The military forces throug out the department are commanded to respect the civil law, and when necessary to aid officers; to refrain from all unauthorized depredations, especially to commit no act through personal enmity, and to protect, aid, and encourage all those who by their act s uniformly show an honest and earnest desire to support the Government in putting down the rebellion and ridding the country of bushwhackers and guerrilla bands.

By command of Major-General Dodge:

J. W. Barnes, Assistant Adjutant-General.

On January 7th, I wrote the following letter to Governor Fletcher:

Hdgrs. Dept. of the Missouri, St. Louis, Mo. Jan 7, 1864.

His Excellency Thomas C. Fletcher,

Governor of Missouri:
Governor: I think we should, as early as possible, get an organization in all the disloyal counties, especially in those bordering on the Missouri river. If the legislature passes a bill with no exemption clause and classifies the enrollment, say we call out, arm and equip the first class, and put loomem on duty in each of the above mentioned counties under experienced, tried and undoubtedly loyal men; get the start of all guerrillas, &c. By this means, the running from one county to another by these bands will be prevented. The Government can, I understand, feed these men. Let the counties pay them. It is no more than right that the disloyal counties pay their own protection, and this would do away with all the complaints as to pay. The district commander could have bhese men under his command, and if necessary we could place sub-district commanders over them from some of our old regiments. As somn as you adopt the plan for a militia bill, I will put the district commanders twork to organize these companies and hold all loyal men in these counties. Above all things, get if possible, in the counties referred to, whose tanding there can be no doubt about, old soldiers for commanders—men who have been tried. It seems to me we ought to have 100 men on duty in each of the counties on the Missouri River within the next sixty days. There are a large number of officers returning from Sherman's army who could be used to good advantage in this work. Let me hear from you.

Very respectfully, sir, your obedient servant,

G. M. Dodge, Major-General.

General Reynolds arranged that the rebels going south under my order should be passed through his line at Gaines ville on the Mississippi River. A large number of the families of men in the confederate army took advantage of this order.

-944-

The Governor of the State who was following out my suggestion as to organizing militia in the State, requested my views in relation to the matter and I wrote him the following letter:

St. Louis, Jan. 14, 1865.

I submit as you requested, what I consider the important points in a militia organization, to make it effective.

First, make all persons, between certain ages, subject to

militia duty. No exemptions whatever.

Second, classify into divisions, 1st, 2d, 3d, the 3d class to include all persons who would be exempt from actual military service, on account of physical disability, yet who are able to shoulder a musket and do ordinary guard duty.
Third: The right to arrest and confine and to assess fines,

for non- attendance when called out, by competent authority.

Fourth: To be no election of commissioned officers; all
to be appointed by the Governor. Removals to be made by the Governor
as now made by the War Department, or President of the United States, or upon the recommendation of officers appointed to examine them, when reported by their proper superior officers as unfit and incompetent.

The right to tax counties for the support of the Fifth: militia when called out and assigned for their protection. This, however, only to be done in cases where the trouble is entirely local; as now when troubles arise out of the action of citizens of,

and in, the disloyal counties.

Sixth: The Legislature to provide for raising funds to arm, equip and support the forces called out for the general defense &c for the State. In cases of emergency, the Governor to have authority

to raise funds, &c.

Seventh: A clause to encourage the organization of independent companies and regiments, the officers and men to support and uniform themselves; the State to furnish arms and equipments. This can be done by exempting them from some duty or some particular tax. This clause would be applicable to times of peace when militia would not be needed, for actual service, and would tend to keep up an organization of efficient soldiers sufficient for all purposes, learned

in, and prepared for, military duty.

Experience tells us that even in time of peace we cannot learn too much of arms, and be too well prepared for war, and it only requires encouragement(especially now since the martial spirit is do fully aroused" to cause our young men, who take pride in military

display to organize into companies, batteries, regiments, &c.

The more simple in its plan and details, a militia is, and the more latitude and authority it allows the commander-in-chief in organizing &c, upon rules, regulations and orders to be prescribed

and issued by him, the more effective it will be.

To make militia effective these two things are absolute y recessary. First, its officers must be apppointed by the Governor, not upon elections, but with reference entirely to the peculiar fitness, from habit, education and experience of the person.

Second: In its organization, equipment, and placing it in the field, it should be left almost entirely to the direction and orders of the Commander-in-chief."

The Legislature anthorized the organization of these companies including the pricacipal points I had recommended. I also reestablished the block houses and stockades that had been destroyed by Price in his raid and added many others to important bridges and towns where small bodies of troops were to be stationed.

On January 15th, I received the following liver from

President Lincoln:

- C - C -

Executive Mansion, Washington, January 15, 1865.

Major General Dodge, Saint Louis, Mo:

It is represented to me that there is so much irregular violence in Northern Missouri as to be driving away the people and almost depopulating it. Please gather information, and consider whether an appeal to the people there to go to their homes and let one another alone, recognizing as a full right of protection for each that he lets others alone, and barring only him who refuses to let others alone, may not enable you'to withdraw the troops, their presence itself a cause of irritation and constant apprehension, and thus restore peace and quiet and returning prosperity. Please consider this, and telegraph or write me.

A. Lincoln.

I answered this letter on the 16th as follows:

Hdqrs. Dept. of the Missouri, St. Louis, Mo. Jan. 16, 1865.

Hon. Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, Washington, D.C. Dear Sir: - I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your telegram of the 15th instant. Since I assumed command here the troubles in North Missouri have increased, from the fact that the troops that were in those counties infested by guerrilla bands were nearly all withdrawn by me to send to General Thomas, but there is no doubt that this country is now more quiet than it has been gefore for three years. Where these troubles exist the people are to a great extent disloyal, and it is the protection, aid, and sympathy that they give to the enemy and to outlaws that causes these troubles. One class (the disloyal) desires all troops withdrawn, while the other (the loyal men) petition to have more sent. The fact is that unless troops are kept in the Missouri River counties, no loyal people can live I have consulted with Governor Fletcher in relation to this matter, and so far as possible we have endeavored to quiet these troubles. Three thousand men left these countied and joined Price last Many of them are now sneaking back and going into the bush to operate. The people who are leaving are mostly those whose friends are in the rebel army, or whose sympathies are with the rebels, and those who expect to be disfranchised, and who have but very little if any sympathy with our County and who have but very little, if any, sympathy with our Government. They do not leave of account of depredations committed upon them by the troops, but through fear of action of the State Convention. I believe most of the loyal men and those who have determined to become lovel. Convention. I believe most of the loyal men, and those who have determined to become loyal, are determined to stay. Those of them that do go, face from guerrillas, which no order or proclamation would reach. The bushwhackers can only be put down and kep down by holding the citizens who aid, feed and harbor them, responsible. Loyal local organizations I consider the best troops to been these outlaws under, and I had settled in my own mind upon to keep these outlaws under, and I had settled in my own mind upon the policy to pursue, viz. As soon as the State Legislature the policy to pursue, viz passes the new militia bill, to raise under it 100 men from eabh of these disloyal counties, place them under competent and reliable officers, citizens of the State who have been service. Let the Government arm, equip and feed them, and the counties pay them. Place one of these companies on duty in each of the disloyal counties where these troubles exists withdraw there ther ies where these troubles exist; withdraw therefrom the U.S. Volunteers, and call upon the citizens to support and aid these organizations. To a great extent they will cheerfully do it. who will not, and who persist in giving aid to bushwhackers, to be sent out of the department. I have issued stringent orders to all the troops in rega d to committing depredations and acts through the committy and good effects are thereby being produced. I personal enmity, and good effects are thereby being produced. I heaf of but veryfew depredations by troops recently, but in the winter it is to the interest of these outlaws and their friends to keep our troops away. As soon as spring comes they expect to obtain re-enforcements from the south, and even from the loyal states, here many have gone to winter, and who, when the leaves come, will all return. What troops I have are kept very active, and they are doing good work in the way of breaking up guerrillas and marauding bands. The troops in North Missouri are nearly all Missouri State Willitia whose town of services is fast expining Missouri State Militia, whose term of service is fast expiring.

New /

Their discipline has been very lax, and on account of the defective nature of that organization, they have not been efficient. I have taken measures to hold the officers responsible for the discipline and acts of these troops. I do believe that the system of organization that I intend to inaugurate will prove effective for the special reason that we will have the selection of the officers, and most of them will be old, tried, and experienced soldiers, fully imbued with the right sentiment, and feeling a personal interest in restoring law and order. // Allow me to assure you that the course you propose would be protested against the State authorities, the legilature, the convetion, and by nearly every loyal man in North Missouri, while it would receive the sanction of nearly every disloyal, sem 1-10 yal and non-committal person there. All such could, under that course, live and would want to stay, in that country, while every loyal man would have to leave those counties where the disloyal sentiment is in the ascendency. I take it that the only sure road to peace in whis State is through the aid and support of its undoubtedly loyal population, and with the organization I speak of I am satisfied I can restore and mantina quiet in North Missouri. It is my wish and earnest endeavor to have every personin the state, and elsewhere to come up firmly to the support of the Government, no motter what their antecedents are, and I have in my orders and instructions to my troops commanded them to give all encouragement, aid and protection in their power to and and every person who shows an honrest and earnest desire and intention to support the Government and assist in putting down guerrilla warfare. I herewith enclose my Order No. 7 which embodies some of the views of your dispatch, and which will receive the cordial indorsement and cheerful support of every person in the State who is not aiding and abetting bushwhatckers or who are so disloyal that they would not agree to or approve of anything issued by a federal officer.

Text. 100

I have the honor to be, sir, respectfully, your obedient servant,

G. M. Dodge, Major-General

I immediately communicated with the Governor of the State, setting forth President Lincoln's suggest and the Governor answered me as follows:-

Jefferson City, Jan. 16, 1865. 6.40 p.m

Maj. Gen. G. M. Dodge:

I have heard of some Union men being killed in North Missouri

and of some rebels moving away. No Union man wants the troops withdrawn from here. The Union men will return and be organized under new military law and can then defend themselves. I will consent to no bargains with rebels. All we want is discipline in the troops we have and those to be organized. I do not believe the policy mentioned by you would have any good effect, and think it has been suggested by the same men who have been compromising with the enemy since the war began. I had hoped the President would not listen to their counsels again.

Thos. C. Fletcher, Governor of Missouri.

Both the Governor and myself began to see the marked change in matters in the State caused by the different orders I had issued, the showing of better discipline among the troops and the efforts to put in every county possible, the Civil authorities in power relieving the military. My idea was that as far as it was possible, to quiytly put the county officers in authority and have the military

\_\_0.49

simply help the civil authorities to maintain law and order, instead of the military occupying the position of the Civil authorities. This was being done so quietly that very few knew of it, but the Governor and myself were acting in accord in the matter. To show the attitude of the very radical union people of Missouri and what they required of the Army, the following letter from Dr. M. Münson sets forth their side of the question:

Grape Grove, Jan.16,1865.

"I am a stranger to you, but the emergency of the subject I write on, seems to set aside all etiquette. I am an original loyal, Union man, "abinitio billi," and my loyalty in this part the country where I am known, is above suspicion. I am a son of N. E., by birth and education; but have been a citizen of this of N. E., by birth and education; but have been a citizen of this State twenty-six years of this county twenty years. I am a graduate of medicine by authority of Harvard University at Cambridge, Mass; but have been a farmer fifteen years. I am now nearly sixty years of age; this has kept me from taking part in the armie of the nation. I have tried to do my whole duty as a citizen to my Country's Government from the beginning of this unholy rebellion. I find myself forsaken by many who were once friends. This brings me to the subject I wish to speak to youon; viz: What are the loyal people of this county and adjoining counties to do are the loyal people of this county and adjoining counties to do the coming season? I have been solicited to write to you by many loayl people and familes on this matter, and what I say is said in their behalf, and by their authrotiy. The loyal families here have become much alarmed, and not without good reason. This will be plain to any one who looks one moment at the awful barbarities that were perpetrated on the loyal people last year in this State, generally. They look round to see if it is to be better this year, and they think the prospect is a bad one. They loyal innocent blood of one hundred persons was made to drench the ground in this county alone, last year. Have the lives of these martyrs to their countries cause been avenged? and the spilling of their innocent blood been required by retaliation on an equal number of the enemy? Everyone says no. You will say so too. Have any blows been struck on this State of a kind to make domestic traitors fear your power, or the power of Government? There is one of two ways only that traitors in arms or not can be made to respect Government. If they will not respect Government by the wisdom and justice of its policy, and the blessings it brings to their doors; then you can only make them respect it by making them beg for mercy. They must not only be whipped; but they must be made to know they are whipped. The refinements in barbarity in torturing woldon and I know not how many more, can be equalled only by such darkest ages of the world. If the loyal families of this country can be remain at their homes this summer, there is no prospect equal number of the enemy? Everyone says no. You will say so too. dare to remain at their homes this summer, there is no prospect for them to escape a repitition of the scenes of the last, but they will be much worse. This will be patent to your mind in a moment when you see the campaign of these bandits has already begun, south

Have not the loyal people of this State a right to full protection to their lives, liberty and property? I say they have. They only form the social system, Rebels are no part of the State. Allegiance, loyalty, taxation and protection are correlative. When Government fails of protection to its loyal citizens or subject

in all rights of person and property, then it has made a failure of carrying out the great object of its creation.

The people of country are paying to support four governments. They support by taxation, 1st A County Government, 2nd, A State Government, 3d. A National Government and now since this way they have to support a stupendous military government. The blessings to be given in return for all this should be great indeed. They, the loyal people demand of right, that the banditts, pirates &c be kep out of our borders. They have a right to demand it, and do expect it. Are they to abandon their farms and homes and seek new ones? To many families this would be ruinous, utterly so. What do we see? All the able bodied men of this part of the country making preparations to leave early in the spring. And the high military are giving the passes to go. This is passing strange indeed. So then the old and infoirm and families are anly left to tell the tale of woe. Our Militia system has been an utter failure, so far as it respects the extermination of banditts, and land pirates, high-waymen &c. It is money thrown away. All that Gov. Hall or any other official can say in "high -fa-luting messages" will never make it otherwise. We want regular veteran troops, no others are adequate to the emorgency.

By the national compact the loyal people of any state, have a right to full protection to life, liberty and property bythe power of nation as against internal violence. I am credably informed the Banditss are as thick as flies on a dead carcass in Jackson County, LaFayette, Spline, and other counties, now in the dead of winter. A man was attacked in Lexington by a band bf them a few days ago. Mr. Reynolds was murdered in Siline in open day, after he had given them their dinners. This subject is inexhaustible, but I fear I have tired your patience. It is a matter of life and death with the people and they want to know what to depend on. On your decision depends their action as to the way to save themselves.

Rebels have had a two-fold protection since this war commenced -by themselves. They have had the protection of Union Armies, and Rebel armies of course protect them. Loyal people have had little protection as against the enemies in the bosom of the Social System. I hope, Sir, you will let the people know by public proclamation, or otherwise, what they can rely on being done for their safety the coming summer."

On January 16th, the Missouri State Consittutional Convention adopted the following resolutions:

"Resolved, That we most heartily approve of Maj. Gen. Dodge's General Order No. 7, believing as we do that the only way to give the loyal people of Missouri that security and protection to which they are justly entitled, and which alone can secure the peace and prosperity of the State, is to hold rebels and their sympathizers at home to a rigid responsibility and accountability for the outrages committed by their friends the bushwhackers and rebel marauders. And on behalf of the Union loving people, we tender Gen. Dodge our bhanks for the decided steps he has inaugerated, and pledge him a cheerful and cordial co-operation in carrying his order into effect throughout the State.

A. Krekel, President Mo. State Convention.

Attest Amos P. Foster, Sec. Mo. State Convention.

Mr. Drake offered the following resolution which was adopted: Resolved - That the President of this convention appoint a committee of three to wait upon Gen. Dodge and present him with a copy of the resolution as offered by Mr. Holland and unanimously adopted this day.

The President appointed as such committee- Messrs. Drake, Holland and Davis of Nodaway. Attest Amos P. Foster, Secretary Mo. State To Maj. Gen. Dodge Commanding the Dept. of the Mo.

All this action of the State and City authorities showed the good effect of order #7 and that it was being pretty generally com-The Hon. William A. Hall, member of Congress wrote plied with. me the following letter:

Washington, Jan. 19, 1864.

"Complaints have been made by me as well as others of the manage-

ment of affairs in North Missouri.

In all that I have stated to the President, I have distinctly stated that the matters of which I complained did not grow out of your administration, and I have decidedly refused to take part in any movement which looked to a change in the command of the Department.

The character you bear satisfies me that you will seek the welfare of our State. The only fear I have is that you may not be correctly immormed of the true condition of things. My life has been sought because I complained of Truman; it is understood that those who make complaints expose themselves to great danger, and most persons are affected to a small the complaints. sons are afraid to complain.

Those who are culpable, will, of course, deny or palliate abuses; Of one fact there can be no question, that most of our best citizens have fled their homes, or are preparing to leave. This cannot be without cause. One of the chief causes, the outrages by soldiers, the shooting down of unarmed citizens without investigation, and the

burning of dwellings, I have called your attention to.

I am gratified at the tone of your letter. I hope you will not consider me officious, for I act only through a sense of duty to my

fellow citizens, and seek only the good of my country".

I also received a letter from Horace Everettof Council Bluffs, commanding the order:

Council Bluffs, Jan. 23, 1865.

"I cannot permit the satisfaction your General Order No. 7 and your letter to Mr. Switzler has given me, and your friends here, to pass unmentioned. Your deckarations carried out will certainly give peace to Missouri, and I cherish the expectation that it will be brought about under your administration.

My peculiar acquaintance with the most pro-slavery section of the state, has long convinced me that your order is the only one ever

made that will accomplish any practical results.

Will you allow me to suggest, that if you need any information in regard to the condition of affairs in Howard, Boone, Calloway, Chariton, Cooper or contiguous counties, Maj. R. Leonard, 9th, M.S.M. and a member of the State Convention, can be consulted with every confidence. dence. He was born and raised in Howard County, educated in Germany, and has the confidence of the radical portion of his constituents.

If you can favor him in a military way, I shall be under great obligations to you."

On January 23rd, I wrote the following letter to Governor Fletcher in relation to the organization of the State Militia, to take the place of the rederal troops:

St. Louis, Jan. 25, 1865.

"With this you will received my request for the organization of some thirty companies of volunteer militia to be stationed in the disloyal companies and infected districts.

Allow me to suggest that you make an effort to get into these companies all the M.S.M. whose term of service expires, and who will not go into the U.S. Vols, and all the discharged soldiers possible. I am fearful that if we do not retain these soldiers in the service, the bitterness of many of them, on account of past injuries and losses, will cause them form into bands, and seek their own revenge--in fact, mere bushwhackers. Their officers are continually representing to me their fears of this. Such a course would defeat

and ruin our efforts for peace; this you can clearly see, for if we

would enforce and maintain law and order in the state, the first principal of success is to live up to law and comply with orders ourselves and this alone will strike terror to rebels and outlaws; but if we allow maurauding and bushwhacking on our own side and by our own former soldiers, we license lawlessness and there will be no security for any one. I suggest these matters for your consider-

The sommer we get troops posted in North Missouri, the better it will be for us. We can maintain order and hold that portion of the State comparatively quiet against rebels and bushwhackers, but we do not want to be meet with civil strife caused by paying up old grudges; this would give us anarchy sure."

On the same date, I received the following letter from the Hon. Austin A. King, representative in Congress, giving an account of trouble caused by the lack of discipline in the Missouri State Militia:

."I am in receipt of letters constantly from my district (the

Washington, Jan. 23, 1865.

"I am in receipt of letters constantly from my district (the 6th Dist. of Mo.) giving a very distressing account of the state of affairs there. The President told me that he was advised of these things, and that he had written or telegraphed to you to see if a remedy could not be provided. I have seen your late order No. 7 and with its scope, object and interest, I am very well satisfied, but that order only strikes at about half the evils. I give you an extract from a letter just received from a gentlemen of high respectability, LaFayette, and whose loyalty has never been questioned; he says, "I am sorry to inform you that the condition of our wretched State is not improved, and that the strong probability is, that the almost entire population will leave here in the spring. There are still some roving bands of guerrillas in the spring. There are still some roving bands of guerrillas in the country, just enough to keep the soldiers among us, and to give them a pretext for robbin and murdering defenseless citizens. Only a few days since, Allen McReynolds, who lived near Grand Pass, an honest and loyal man, was taken out of his house and murder ed in cold blood in sight of his wife and children, by a squad of soldiers, and this is only one of hundreds of similar cases, which are occurring every day, and of which no notice or investigation is ever taken or made. It seems to me that these men who have been the warmest and truest friends of the Government, are the men who se the warmest and truest friends of the Government, are the men whose lives and property are least respected by the Government troops."

Thus writes this gentelman. I give you an extract from Liberty, Clay Co. It is from a loyal man. "I arrived home a few days since and truly the condition of this county and Platee, are intolerable. Horse-stealing, robbery, arson and assassination rules. Yesterday a young man as I am informed, who lives a few miles from this city was taken fr m his her-field and murdered. Today Madison Morris, an old citizen of this county, was shot by somination person as he walked the streets of this little city, and robbery is of nightly occurence. Prior to these late acts just enumerated, the people's minds were shrouded in gloom, but today, they mope around with dispair pictured in every face. Truly things look gloomy, are gloomy and hundreds are already preparing to look gloomy, are gloomy and hundreds are already preparing to emigrate." Another gentleman of great respectability, writes from emigrate." Another gentleman of great respectability, writes from Clay thus, "Times have been comparatively quiet in our county for some time, until day before yesterday, some men representing them-selves to be some of the 3d Mo. Regt. arrested John Eaton Jr. and took him about two miles from home, and shot him and then arrested his father John Eaton Sr., and I have not heard up to this time what they have done with him." These are extracts from business letters written to me, and I have from thirty to fifty substantially like them. They never expected me to use them in any way, but I have sent you these extracts that you may know what is going on. have sent you these extracts, that you may know what is going on. People are afaaid to emphasin to you of these things, for if found

out it would cost them their lives. And I ask General, for my own safety, that you do not send my letter to a military post for investigation. I do not know where the fault is, as to

4951-

particular individuals or commands, but I do know that very much of our trouble grow out of a losseness of discipline, which allows soldiers to go and do as they please without restraint, and I say further, that the fault begins with the commander of a district and descends down through all the grades. Such insecurity as the people now have, in my district, makes bushwhackers; they are not safe at home, and their natural impulse is to flee for cafety. The President te ls me, that you telegraphed him that things were more quiet, than for years before in Missouri. This may be so in some parts of the State, but if such information came to you from my district, they have misled you. I desire most sincerely that your administration of the Department of Missouri shall be successful. I consider the condition of affairs in my district and I think on the north side of the river in a worse fix than they have ever been. It is now war among citizens, wreaking their private vengeance and vindictive spite upon each other and designing men called soldiers to their aid. And I can tell you that if an end is not put to these things, or an effort made to restore confidence and security to the people, I fear your administration will be a failure and the people driven from the country as effectually as did that despicable Order No. II which depopulated Madison, Cass and part of Bates.

I hope General that you will excuse me for what I have said; it is because I have wished you success in Missouri that I thus write.

I know you are comparatively a stranger to our people, and you must get your information from some source, and I most sincerely want you to know the whole truth. General Rosecrans once said to me that he labeled man of brains to command in upper Missouri, and if you can find one who is self possessed enough to know what is right, then the nerve to do it, then proper disciplines will insure and the job of putting down bushwhackers, guerrillas, and their sympathizers, and friends will be an easy task. Confidence will be restored in the Government and Military, the great mass of the people earnestly desire that rebbel raids and bushwhacking shall be put down, and when they learn that the military are their friends, and will stand by them, they will give all their energies to put

My reply was as follows:-

St. Louis, Missouri ... Nasiville, Tennorsse, Jan. 27, 1865

I sm in receipt of your lefter and have noted its contents carefully. It will be my best endeavor to control the troops and allow them to commit no unauthorized depredations. It is hard to bring them under at once, but I have issued stringent orders and propose to enforce them. I have seen many, of all parties, from your section of the country and they all assure me the troops behave well, that the country is very quiet, more so than it has been for the last two years. The men you speak of, I know a) about. John Eaton Jr. once belonged bushwhackers was caught, endeavored to escape and was killed while harmed, but has been banished on his own admissions.

Mr. Morris was shot of Libert

Mr. Morris was shot at Liberty; he had trouble with some Kansas soldiers, killed one, as I think justly; and the commanding officer at Liberty thinks it was a Kansas man who shot him, as he was in town the day it was done, and has not been seen since. A thorough investigation was immediately made and these were the facts arrived at.

Made at the man he will be pundshed.

McReynolds was shot by soldiers of 7th M.S.M. by order of Capt. R. M. Box Co. "H". Quantrell was there a few weeks before McReynolds was killed; he (MeReynolds) confessed to have voluntarily fed and added in all he could, and the inhabitants of that county, of all parties justify his being killed. I may having an investigation in his case.

I hold that no man should be killed, except caught with arms in his hands, and propose to look carefully into the facts of the death of McReynolds.

I think the militia we are organizing to occupy these troubled counties will give them comparative quiet. I propose to put old

tried, obedient soldiers at the head of each company.

There is no man who is more opposed to lawless conduct of troops than I am, and I will punsih them to the extent of my power for every unauthorized act. You have certainly been misinformed as to the troubles and leaving of parties; many are leaving to be sure, but in most all cases, for fear of acts of the Convention and Legislature, not from fear of acts of soldiers. I am very much obliged for the maps.

On January 31st, I received the following letter from Governor Fletcher in response to my letter in relation to the raising of the troops:

Jefferson, Mo. Jan. 31, 1865.

"I have the honor herewith to enclose a proposition to Secy of War fr organizing a force of say 14000 men for service in Mo. for twelve months, in such proportions of infantry and cavalry as you may direct, to be credited to the State on quota under call of 19th Dec. '64.

You are aware of our condition and appreciate the hardships of a draft for 13984 out of a population worn down with militia duty as ours.

The injustice of requiring us to furnish men to U. S. Service while we are compelled to keep so large a number of our people constantly in service in militia, is so apparent that it needs only to be understood to be acknowledge. Your department has been well nigh-strip ped of efficient force. The new regiments raised for service in the State are all gone, the M.S.M. is rapidly being mustered out. It is necessary now to keep in active service a large number of men organized under Order 107, as well as M.S.M. for none of these do we get any credits. We will be compelled to keep say 14000 militia in active service, and ifwe furnish 15000 our quota under recent call, the effect is to make us furnish double the number we should be required to furnish, and the people of the state be prevented from cultivating their farms. I know that you fully understand the condition of the State, and the justice of what I have asked of the War Department Will you please endorse and forward accompanying letters? I have forwarded copy to delegation in Congress.

The following concurrent resolutions were adopted by the General Assembly of the State of Missouri on order #7:

Be it Resolved: By the house of Representatives, the Senate concurring therein: That we heartily endorse the general views and purposes of General Order No. 7, Current Series, issued from headquarters Department of Missouri, believing as we do, that the line of policy therein indicated, if steadily and vigorously pursued, will give peace prosperity and quiet to our State."

I wrote d the following letter from the Secretary of War in relation to the number of troops in the service and the number that could be put into the field:

₩DUU-

Hd. Qrs. Dept. of the Missouri, St. Louis, Mo. Jan. 31, 1865.

Hon. E. M. Staton, Sec. of War, Washington, D.C.

Dear Sir: I have 12,000 men for duty of all arms. This includes garrison at Alton, Ill., Veteran Reserve Corps at Draft Rendezzous, This includes the Enrolled Missouri Militia, &c., mostly Missouri State Militia, whose term of services expires this spring, which will leave the department almost entirely destitute of troops. I have already had to call upon the governor for troops to occupy the disloyal counities to take the place of those whose term of service is now expiring. I have ordered to describe and Carby all my regiments of volunteer infantry to Generals Thomas and Canby all my regiments of volunteer infantry whose terms of service do not expire within two months, except three, and the terms of service of portions of those I sent exprie in the and the terms of service of portions of those I sent exprise in the appring. I have in the department the following organizations of U.S. Volunteers: Seventeenth Illinois Cavalry Volunteers (Dismounted); Thirteenth Missouri Cavalry Volunteers ) one-half mounted); Seventh Kansas Cavalry Volunteers (mounted); Forty-first Missouri Infantry, one year's regiment (at St. Louis); Thirty-ninth Missouri Infantry, one year's regiment (at St. Louis) Fiftieth Missouri Infantry (six companies); term of service expires in February and March. Forty-third Missouri Infantry (term of service expires in August.) was third Missouri Infantry (term of service expires in August ) was captured by Price, paroled, and was placed on duty again by me; Forty-sixth Missouri Infantry in Southwest Missouri (garrisoning Springfield). The balance are Missouri State Militiai, whose time expires and who nearly all go out of the service by May. The rebels are making extensive preparations to commence their work so soon as are making extensive preparations to commence their work so soon as the leaves come. Price's men, many of them, are coming back for that purpose, and I am confident it will require from 12,00 to 15,000 troops to hold our border. At the present rate of expiration of service, I shall by the 1st of May have only between 3,000 and 4000 men. I desire further to call your attention to the fact that, unless we take measures to secure the re-enlistment of the Missouri State Militia and the discharged volunteers, there is great drager of them gring into the brush for the purpose of seeking revenue for past g ing into the brush for the purpose of seeking revenge for past injuries, &c. on their own account. Many are now moving their families out of the State in preparation for such a contingency. As to the draft we obtain very few troops from it. The menas of escape are to easy, and the sentiment of many of those drafted age so disloyal, renders it almost a nullity. Unless the Government intends to replace the Missouri State Militia and enrolled Missouri Militia with U. S. Volunteers, I consider Governor Fletcher's proposition the best method proposition to obtain troops to hold the state. The arm of service reeded most is cavalry.

I am, Very respectfully, your obedient servant, G. M. Dodge, Major-General

This letter was referred to General Grant which he endorsed by saying he thought it well to adopt the plan proposed by Governor Fletcher for the protection of Missouri the ensuing year; that is, to let the governor call out for one year the number of men General Dodge thinks will be necessary to protect the State. Men who have been in the service are worth much more than new volunteers, and infinitely more than those obtained by draft, where so many are disloyal.

I also received word from General Halleck that he had returned the 45th Missouri Infantry, which I had sent to help General Thomas at Nashville before I discovered that it had been fully organized and mustered in, and General Halleck was returning it to have it fully

j

#--- 15 PT ---

organized.

I received the following letter from General Alfred Pleasanton who was on leave of absence at Philadelphia, giving the runces in the East in relation to peace:

January 30, 1865.

"I beg leave to return you my sincere thanks for the spirit of fairness and impartiality with which you have received and acted upon my application. Believe me your action was thoroughly appreciated as well as the generous sense of justice and right by which it was distated.

Allow me respectfully to add the assurance that your high character and reputation as a military commander will not be in any degree lessened by the fact that you did not deem it necessary to deprive others of their civil rights, or to strike down the freedom of the press. Thanking you again for your prompt and impartial action in this matter, I remain."

The following order was issued from Washington on January 30th, merging the Department of Kansas into the Department of Missouri and relieving Major General Curtis and placing me in command:

IF- By direction of the Rresident the Department of Kansas is merged in the Department of Missouri, and Maj. Gen. Curtis is transferred to the Department of the Northwest. Headquarters of the Department of Missouri is transferred to Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

II.— Pajor General Pope is appointed to the command of the military division of the Missouri, including the Department of Missouri and the North-west, headquarters at St. Louis."

A short time before this order was issued, I received Ahe dispatch from General Grant asking if a campaign could be made against the Indians on the plains in the winter. I answered him "Yes" if the troops were properly equipped for it. General Grant knew that I had had a good deal of experience on the plains in the winter and he ha d been urging General Curtis to open the telegraph, stage and mail lines which had been closed more or less for three months. I have no doubt that this order came from my answer to his dispatch. I was greatly surprised at the order and saw that I had put my foot in it so far as having an easy winter was concerned.

On January 31st, General Halleck sent the following order to General Poppe:

Maj. General Pope,

Washington, Jan. 31, 1865.

Milwaukee.

Dear Sir: I send you general order #11 just issued. Please go at once to St. Louis and have General Dodge relieve General Curtis. The whole overland mail route requires sufficient protection from Indian hostilities."

The Legislature of Kansas had passed resolutions to have troops James sent to that state and the two Senators, John Pomeroy and Lane had both been demanding of the Government that action be taken to open

NET

Jak J

amd keep open the overland routes.

ers the ofollowing. message;

On February 6th, I left for St. Leavenworth by rail and on February 8th assumed command of the former Department of Kansas. From the officers at Ft. Leavenworth and the documents in the Departmen ther I ascertained that all the routes, the Sante Fe leading to New Mexico, the South Platte route leading from Leavenworth and Omaha by way of Denver to Salt Lake and the North Platte route which followed up the North Platte by way of Ft. Laramie and the South Pass, were all occupied by the Indians. The stage stations had been abandoned, the telegraph lines torn down and the troops, generally, on the lines, demoralized and all the Indians, had been concentrated for the purpose of mkaking war against the United States. Their excuse was the Chivington massacre made near the south bend of Sandy River on the 29th of November, 1864.

There were encamped here a large number of lodges of the Chevennes, Arapahoes, &c. which were under the protection of Ft. Lyon, Col. Chivington Surprised this camp and in his dispatch claimed t have killed 500 Indians, took 500 mules and ponies, marched 300 miles in ten days with the snow two feet deep and he lost 9 killed and 38 wounded. These Indians claimed to be friendly and were camped here for protection of Ft. Lyon. This action aroused all the Indians on the plains and the warriors assembled and there were bands from 1500 to 2500 and they took possession of all the over-land routes. They had defeated our troops in every fight, driven them from all the stage and telegraph stations, captured many prisoners and large number of cattle and stage stock, murdered, scalped and outraged many persons living on road and at Stage station. This winter was one of the hardest in our annals. For three weeks the thermometer stood, thirty degrees below zero with quite a fall of snow on the ground. This was the condition that I found when I arrived at Ft. Leavenworth. It was necessary to take very drastic measures to open these lines. The Department of Kansas was divided into districts; Col. Ford having the south or Arkansas River district; R. B. Mitchell the Nebraska District; Col. Livingstone the District from Ft. Kearn yt o Valley Junction: Col. Moonlight of the 12th Kansas the Colorado District and Col. Collins of the 11th Ohio the Ft. Laramie District. I sent to the end of the telegraph line and thence by messenger to each of the district command-

1 Car

"Send me by telegraph or messenger statement of the condition of affairs along the over-land mail and telegraph route. Do your stages run regularly? What measures are you taking to keep up the route and protect it? What Indians are engaged in these troubles? Where are their villages? Do their families travel with them? Have you spies in their camps? Give me all particulars?"

"Place every mounted man in your command on the South Plate

"Place every mounted man in your command on the South Plate Route; repair telegraphs; attack any body of Indians you meet, learge or small. Stay with them and fight them until they move north of the Platte or south of the Arkansas. I am going with two regiments of cavalry to the Platte line and will open and protect it and whip all the Indians in the way."

In answer to these dispatches, I did not receive any very encouraging news and they are shown in my official report, which will appear later on.

I immediately started two regiments for the plains; the 15th Kansas from Leavenworth and the 11th Kansas from Ft. Riley. of the 15th Kansas froze on the trip to Kearney and 9 companies of the 11th Kansas got throught without much difficulty. When the officers ordered the 11th Kansas to move, the commanding officer at Ft. Riley wired me that they refused to move. immediately answered to arrest every officer in the regiment; that I would assign other officers to the command. This brought them to their senses and they immediately wired that they had started. I called to Ft. Leavenworth, Mr. Edward Creighton in charged of the telegraph line and Mr. B. Hughes in charge of the stage line and the post-master at Leavenworth directing each one of them to make preparations to put on the stages, the telegraph and the mails. They seemed very much astonished and none of them believe I could open and maintain the lines during the winter. I immediately sent an order to the troops at every post to get into the field, to follow up the Indians no matter where they were and even if defeated not to retreat to the posts but to get to cover and go after the Indians again. The troops got into the field and from Col. Livingston I received the following dispatch:

"Lt. Col. Collins with 200 men 11th Ohio and Co D. 7th Iowa Cavalry fought the Indians from the 4th to the 9th inst. at Mud Springs. The Indians at one time charged our force in the face of artillery and were very nearly successful; 2000 warriors were

engaged in the fight. Our loss two killed and 21 wounded; it is supposed 40 Indians were killed. Baurs and Creighton were driven off. The Indians crossed at Bush Creek going north. The telegraph poles are all gone for 15 miles and one-third of the lines gone or are so tangled as to be useless. 700 logges of Indians crossed Pole Creek seven miles below Pole Creek Crossing."

087-

I did not like the tenor of this dispatch; so sew of our own men being killed and wounded and made that fact known immediately to the commanders, that they must fight these Indians and drive them off of the line. Immediately went onto the Plains and took command.

I found that the friendly Indians in the Indian territory had made bitter complaints against the citizens of Kansas and

had made bitter complaints against the citizens of Kansas and others for robbing them, stealing their cattle, etc, and I issued the following special order #44:

Hdqrs. Dept. of Mo. Fort Leavenworth, Feb. 13, 1865.

Paragraph 7. The military permits and approvals given to parties trading in stock, havign been abused or misused by parties receiving them, are hereby revoked.

All military commanders will arrest and hold in confinement any person who is hereafter guilty of robbing the friendly Indians of the cattle, or in any way swindling them.

of the cattle, or in any way swindling them.

No permits will be given to any person to pass through the lines of the department of Missouri, for the purpose of trade of any kind.

All cattle or stock of any kind brought out of the territory south of this department, for sale of speculation, will be seized, turned over to the proper staff department, who will hold the stock till the case can be fully investigated at these headquarters."

On February 8th, General Popk applied to the War Department to have Utah added to the Department of Kansas and that a new District to be organized for the plains to be commanded by General Connor. His reasons were that I was needed in the Department of Missouri but General Popk had no knowledge of why General Grant had sent me to the plains. As soon as this recommendation of Popk reached Washington, it was disapproved, General Grant saying he was perform certain I would be able to handle the Indians as well as my in duties in Missouri and no change was made excepting that Utah was added to my command, thus giving me the entire overland route.

I found that the band belonging to the parkent and several officers were out through the State of Kansas taking part in the politics of the State, virtually under the direction of Senator James Lane. I issued an order sending all these officers to their commands and for the band to return to Ft. Leavenworth. Senator

No. of the state o

Lane calledon me protesting against the order holding that it was -- the State influential necessary to utilise these officers as they were strong in business and the band was of great aid in the political meetings. I told him that I was sent there to put down the Indian troubles and I had nothing whatever to do with politics and if orders must come from higher authority, if such work was continued, I would see that they were insued. He hinted to me that no officer could long remain in command in Kansas if he did not use his influence and aid politically, and I answered that the Department had been assigned to me without any desire on my part and that I should not protest against its being taken away from me at any time and I saw he was greatly disgusted when he left me.

Knowing the importance of having Indian scouts and guides, I immediately applied to the War Department for authority to organize two companies of Pawness and also a company of Delawares. authority was given and the two companies of Pawness, sent immediately into the field under the command of Major North, whom I had known, and they performed excellent service. I found that the Government trains and the trains of private freighting companies were crossing the plains unarmed and unorganized, offering opportunity to small parties of Indians to capture their stock. I immediately issued the following order controlling the transportation over the plains:

> Hd.Qrs. Dept. of the Mo., Ft. Leavenworth, Feb. 10, 1865.

The commanding officers at Fort Riley and Fort Kearney will halt all trains going west at those points and organize the persons accompanying them into companies for the protection of the train. A competent person will be selected as captain and placed in charge of the train and organization.

VII. All persons accompanying the train must be armed, and as soon as teams enough are concentrated to organize a company of 100 or more armed men, they will be sent forward in charge of the captain appointed, who will be held responsible for holding the organization and train together for its security, &c. Under no circumstances will teams be allowed to straggle along the road, or go forward except under a thorough organization as above prescribed. The officer in charge ot eht rain will endeavor to camp as near military posts as possible, and any insubordination on the part of any person accompanying the train, refusal to obey orders, &c. will be reported at the first military post, the commanding officer of which will immediately cause the arrest and punishment of the parties.

VIII. All Government trains passing Forts Kearney and Riley will be strongly guarded, and citizen trains will be allowed to accompany them. In such cases the commanding officer of the scort will be placed in charge of the entire train. The commanding officer of the scort will be

placed in charge of the entire train. The commanding officer of all posts are commanded to give all aid in their power to trains crossing the Plains and to see that this order is complied with.



Government trains and troops will obtain forage from the depots to Forts Kearney and Riley from citizens on the route, in all cases giving the proper receipts to the citizens and making the proper returns to the depot quartermaster, that no delay or

trouble may ensue in issuing the proper vouchers.

X. At all times the overland mail will be so protected as to insure its safety, escorts running from one military post to another. Breaks in the telegraph line must be immediately reported and repaired. Sudden dashes of Indians is no cuase for stopping or tunring back of mails, as the moment the Indians are driven off they can be pu shed through. The mail stations through the country where Indian difficulties exist should be placed within protecting distance of military posts.

XI. Trains returning will be organized, as above prescribed, at some post near Denver to be selected by Colonel Moonlight, command-

ing District of Colorado.

By order of Major-General Dodge:

John Willans, Asst. Adjutant-General.

On February 11th, I sent the following dispatch to the Postoffice Agent, Chas. J. Leonard, Ft. Leavenworth: -

"All your mails will be guarded through. Not only Colorado mails but the entire overland mail will be protected through this Department. I am now ready to give the necessary protection from Kearney west. Any troubles, telegraph me immediately.

On the same date I sent a dispatch to the end of the telegraph and by messenger to Col. -Moonlight commanding the district of Colorado as follows:

The department of Kansas has been attached to my command. will immediately throw your available force on the road from Denver to Julesburg. If you have not men enough, take militia to hold the route until I can relieve them with troops on the way. Co-operate with Colonel Livingston. Repair telegraph: open communication and hold it open. Plenty of troops are on the road to chastise the Indians but Denver must hold its part of the line. Let me hear from you.

On the same date I sent the following dispatch to Beale M. Hughes:

"You can inform Mr. Holliday that I am prepared to protect his stages through my Department. Orders have been issued for necessary guards between Denver and Julesburg."

I also asked authority from the War Department to build a telegraph line from Ft. Leavenworth to Ft. Riley telling them that it took five days to communicate and get answer from them. Ft. Riley was the basis of all supplies for the Sante Fe Route and the headquarters of that district.

On February 13th, I sent the following dispatch to General Halleck:

"Openecommunication with Denver East. Military postssafe. damage West of Valley Station."

325.

On March 5th, I sent the following letter to General Pope:

St. Louis, Mo. March 5, 1864.

"I have the honor to inform the Major General commanding the military division of Missouri, that there are some two hundred and fifty men in confinement at Anthon, Illinois, known as the "Galvanized Yankees, i.e. men who were taken prisoners by the enemy during the last year, and who, to avoid starvation and death, enlisted in "Burks Battalion" of the Confederate Army, and who in the recent raid deserted on the approach of our forces, to us. These men have already applied to be sent back to their regiments, but it is not considered safe to send them where they will be in danger of capture by the enemy. There are also 1000 prisoners of war, and conscripts, who refused to be exchanged, claiming to be deserters, unwilling conscripts, &c. These men have applied to enlist in our army. scripts, &c.

I respectfully submit, if we had not better organize a regiment of these men, and put them on the plains, where they can be made of use to our Government, relieve our prisons, and, I have no doubt, in most cases make better men, and good soldiers of them.

They are now a burden and expense to us; we cannot exchange them, and, if I am authorized, I am confident I can form an effective reg-

iment from them by placing old reliable officers over them.

I have three thousand miles of overland mail and telegraph rouge to guard, and every regiment of infantry that I can put along it will relieve that number of cavalry to use in offensive operations against the Indians, whom, I am satisfied, are determined to make aggresive war upon all our overland routes this spring and summer.

Many of the "Galvanized Yankees" I know were captured in the battle of July 22d, before Atlanta, Georgia, and have been good, ear-

nest soldiers."

The prisoners of war and the military prisoners of the north, expecially Alton, Rock Island, etc. did not want to be exchanged and returned to their own commands but were willing to enter the United States service to fight the Indians. The Government took advantage of this and raised the 2nd and 3rd regiments of U.S. Volunreers known in the army as reconstructed rebs and we raised another regiment at Alton so that in the Department of the Northwest on the plains, commanded by General Sulley and under my command, we had five regiments. The officers were selected from the captains and sargeants. of our own troops so that they were find officered and were very effective troops and were of valuable aid to us during their term of one year's service.

The troops which I had started from Leavenworth and Riley were concentrated at Kearney and on February 14th, I sent the following dispatch to Gen. Mitchell:

"The troops are on the road; meet them at Kearney; as soon as the troops reach Kearney be ready to push right out against the Indians and follow them until they are entirely broken up and so chastised that they will not return. I don't want any such outrages as were committed by Chivington. I think if we could ge hold of a lot of Indians and hold them as hostages, it would be a good idea.